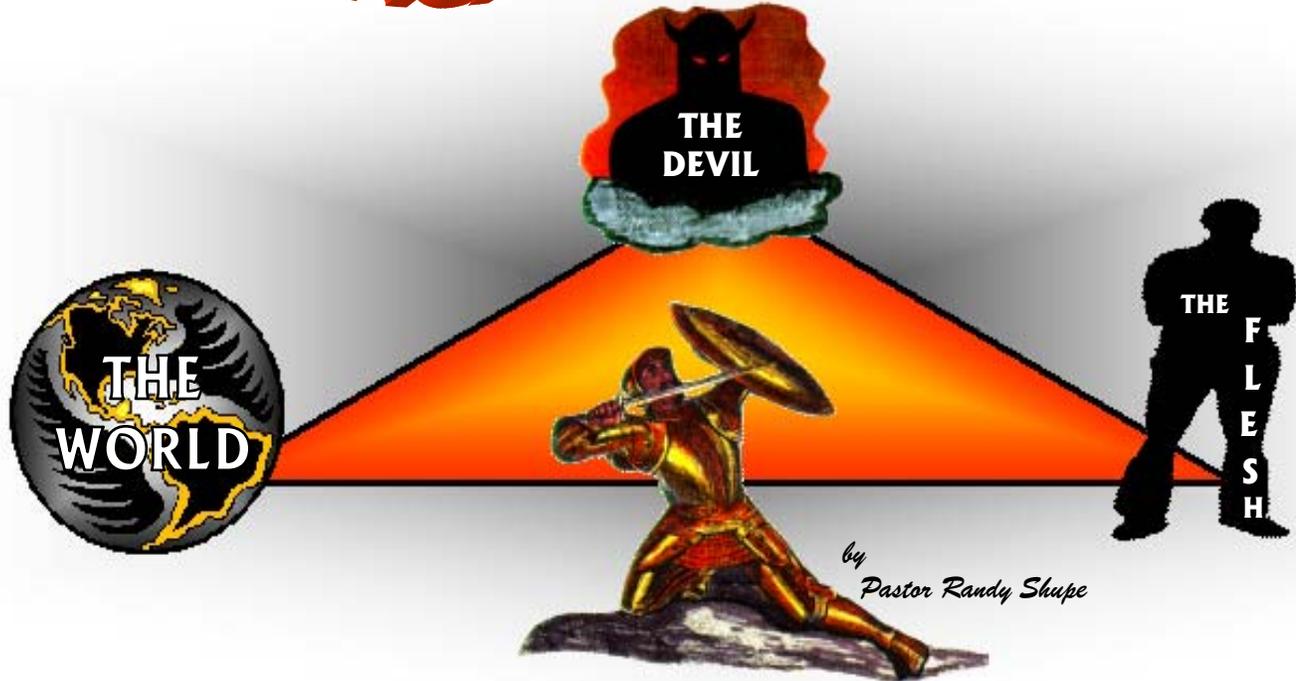


"WAR AGAINST THE SAINTS" Dan. 7:21



UNDERSTANDING THE DEFENSIVE NATURE OF SPIRITUAL WARFARE

FOREWORD

"...AND THE SAME HORN WAS MAKING WAR AGAINST THE SAINTS, AND PREVAILING AGAINST THEM, UNTIL THE ANCIENT OF DAYS CAME, AND A JUDGMENT WAS MADE IN FAVOR OF THE SAINTS... AND THE TIME CAME FOR THE SAINTS TO POSSESS THE KINGDOM."

Dan. 7:21-22



"THE DRAGON WAS ENRAGED WITH THE WOMAN AND HE WENT TO MAKE WAR WITH THE REST OF HER OFFSPRING, WHO KEEP THE COMMANDMENTS OF GOD AND HAVE THE TESTIMONY OF JESUS CHRIST."

Rev. 12:17

"THE CHRISTIAN LIFE IS A WARFARE FROM THE BEGINNING TO THE END..."

"Into Battle" by Arthur Wallis

At the writing of this book, thirty-eight years have elapsed in my life as a follower of Christ in which I can readily attest to the validity of Arthur Wallis' statement that Christianity is indeed a warfare from the beginning to the end. This book is dedicated to unfolding the nature of that spiritual warfare.

We all have been exposed to war in the natural realm. I was born during World War II. I was twelve years old when the Korean War began, seventeen years old when the war in Vietnam began, and fifty-three when America invaded Iraq, followed by a prolonged, seemingly endless war in Afghanistan. Although there have been five American wars in my lifetime, there were many years spent in times of great peace untainted by the tragedy and hardship of war.

However, when it comes to spiritual warfare, understand this: Satan never sleeps. In our warfare with Satan there are no long periods of sustained peace, no treaty or armistice to halt hostilities can ever be created with our enemy. There will be no letup in Satan's relentless pursuit of the Christian for he is fully bent on continually making war against the saints day and night:

"...FOR THE ACCUSER OF OUR BRETHREN, WHO ACCUSED THEM BEFORE OUR GOD DAY AND NIGHT..." Rev. 12:10

"BE SOBER, BE VIGILANT; BECAUSE YOUR ADVERSARY THE DEVIL WALKS ABOUT LIKE A ROARING LION, SEEKING WHOM HE MAY DEVOUR. RESIST HIM, STEADFAST IN THE FAITH, KNOWING THAT THE SAME SUFFERINGS ARE EXPERIENCED BY YOUR BROTHERHOOD IN THE WORLD." 1 Pet. 5:8-9



“YOU THEREFORE MUST ENDURE HARDSHIP AS A GOOD SOLDIER OF JESUS CHRIST. NO ONE ENGAGED IN WARFARE ENTANGLES HIMSELF WITH THE AFFAIRS OF THIS LIFE, THAT HE MAY PLEASE HIM WHO ENLISTED HIM AS A SOLDIER.” 2 Tim. 2:3-4

“...MY BRETHREN, BE STRONG IN THE LORD AND IN THE POWER OF HIS MIGHT. PUT ON THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD, THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO STAND AGAINST ALL THE WILES OF THE DEVIL...THEREFORE TAKE UP THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD, THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO WITHSTAND IN THE EVIL DAY, AND HAVING DONE ALL, TO STAND.” Eph. 6:10,11,13

“FOR THOUGH WE WALK IN THE FLESH, WE DO NOT WAR ACCORDING TO THE FLESH. FOR THE WEAPONS OF OUR WARFARE ARE NOT CARNAL BUT MIGHTY IN GOD FOR PULLING DOWN STRONGHOLDS, CASTING DOWN ARGUMENTS AND EVERY HIGH THING THAT EXALTS ITSELF AGAINST THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOD, BRINGING EVERY THOUGHT INTO CAPTIVITY TO THE OBEDIENCE OF CHRIST...” 2 Cor. 10:3-5

When Japan struck America at Pearl Harbor, a wave of patriotism swept over this country producing a massive, voluntary enlistment in the armed services of a multitude of citizens willing to fight in a battle of retaliation against the enemy. Notice how Paul states above a high calling of every Christian to be pleasing to God having been enlisted as a soldier of Jesus Christ. Notice too what that calling entails; (1) a call to endure the hardships of warfare, and (2) the call to disengage from entanglement in the affairs of this life. Obviously, in the sight of God, the calling of the Christian to become a soldier of Jesus Christ is no trivial matter.

In Paul's second passage above we find a further explanation of what it is going to take to become a good soldier of Jesus Christ. It is the same in natural warfare. Before you can fight effectively, you must first be sent to basic training, or what is commonly referred to as “boot camp.” It is here that a soldier learns the effective use of all his weapons of warfare.

Paul's third passage above sheds light upon how the armor of God becomes the weapons of our warfare that are mighty in God for the pulling down of the enemy's strongholds. Spiritual weapons for a spiritual warfare!



**“...MY BRETHREN, BE STRONG IN THE LORD AND IN THE POWER OF HIS MIGHT.
PUT ON THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD,
THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO STAND AGAINST ALL THE WILES OF THE DEVIL.
FOR WE DO NOT WRESTLE AGAINST FLESH AND BLOOD,
BUT AGAINST PRINCIPALITIES, AGAINST POWERS,
AGAINST THE RULERS OF THE DARKNESS OF THIS AGE,
AGAINST SPIRITUAL HOSTS OF WICKEDNESS IN THE HEAVENLY PLACES.
THEREFORE TAKE UP THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD,
THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO WITHSTAND IN THE EVIL DAY,
AND HAVING DONE ALL, TO STAND.**

**STAND THEREFORE, HAVING GIRDED YOUR WAIST WITH TRUTH, HAVING PUT ON
THE BREASTPLATE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, AND HAVING SHOD YOUR FEET WITH
THE PREPARATION OF THE GOSPEL OF PEACE; ABOVE ALL, TAKING THE SHIELD OF FAITH WITH
WHICH YOU WILL BE ABLE TO QUENCH ALL THE FIERY DARTS OF THE WICKED ONE.
AND TAKE THE HELMET OF SALVATION, AND THE SWORD OF THE SPIRIT WHICH IS
THE WORD OF GOD; PRAYING ALWAYS WITH ALL MANNER OF PRAYER AND SUPPLICATION
IN THE SPIRIT, BEING WATCHFUL TO THIS END WITH ALL PERSEVERANCE AND SUPPLICATION
FOR ALL THE SAINTS.” Eph. 6:10-18**

Paul defines for us specifically who our enemy is and what we will need to take up as defensive weapons against this host of spiritual wickedness that abides in heavenly places arrayed against every believer on earth.

Take a careful look above at the seven things I underlined that Paul enumerates as the armor of God. I need to stress that the putting on of the armor of God is not some mystical dress rehearsal in which the Christian goes through the motions of applying these seven things to their person by faith. Rather, these are seven practical areas that depict what should be readily evidenced as the normal Christian life. It is living a life of truth, a life of practicing righteousness, a life centered upon ministering the gospel of peace to those alienated from God by sin, a life lived by faith in God. It is a life evidencing the full plan of salvation God brings first to the spirit, then to the soul and finally, at the resurrection, to the body. It is a life guided by the contents of the Word of God, a life dominated by all manner of persevering prayer not just for self, but for all the saints in need. This is the armor of God, the weapons of our warfare that are mighty in God for the pulling down of strongholds in our lives. It is to this warfare that we are called.

"...HE WHO HAS BEEN BORN OF GOD KEEPS (GUARDS) HIMSELF AND THE WICKED ONE DOES NOT TOUCH HIM. WE KNOW THAT WE ARE OF GOD, AND THE WHOLE WORLD LIES UNDER THE SWAY OF THE WICKED ONE. AND WE KNOW THAT THE SON OF GOD HAS COME AND HAS GIVEN US AN UNDERSTANDING, THAT WE MAY KNOW HIM WHO IS TRUE; AND WE ARE IN HIM WHO IS TRUE, IN HIS SON JESUS CHRIST. THIS IS THE TRUE GOD AND ETERNAL LIFE."

1 Jn. 5:18-20



TRUTH
RIGHTEOUSNESS
PEACE
FAITH
SALVATION
THE WORD OF GOD
PRAYER



The above scenario depicts seven reasons why Satan is the adversary of the believer who has indeed taken up the whole armor of God. The power of God's might is firmly opposed to the plans and objectives of Satan, the god of this age, the wicked one. While the whole world lies under his deceptive sway, the Christian stands in his way manifesting a different persuasion, a different lifestyle, promoting a different kingdom on earth. Here are a people not fighting for the possession of the soil of men, but for the souls of men.

This book is dedicated to unfold a fuller panoramic perspective of God's plans for His people right now and for eternity as well. It is needful to see God's perspective that this present creation is not the final one, but the temporal one. God intends to make all things new (Rev. 21:5). This present, temporal creation is but the perfecting place in which God prepares His people for new heavens and a new earth in which true righteousness will dwell (2 Pet. 3:13).

CHAPTER ONE

"...AND THE SAME HORN WAS MAKING WAR AGAINST THE SAINTS, AND PREVAILING AGAINST THEM, UNTIL THE ANCIENT OF DAYS CAME, AND A JUDGMENT WAS MADE IN FAVOR OF THE SAINTS... AND THE TIME CAME FOR THE SAINTS TO POSSESS THE KINGDOM."
Dan. 7:21-22

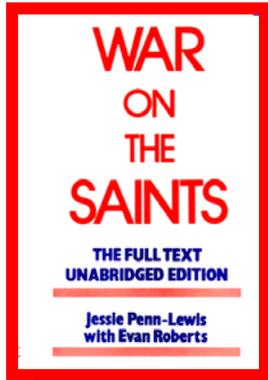
"THE DEFENSIVE NATURE OF OUR WARFARE"

"...PUT ON THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD, THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO STAND AGAINST ALL THE WILES OF THE DEVIL... THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO WITHSTAND IN THE EVIL DAY, AND HAVING DONE ALL, TO STAND."
Eph. 6:11,13

"THE DRAGON WAS ENRAGED WITH THE WOMAN AND HE WENT TO MAKE WAR WITH THE REST OF HER OFFSPRING, WHO KEEP THE COMMANDMENTS OF GOD AND HAVE THE TESTIMONY OF JESUS CHRIST."
Rev. 12:17

"BE SOBER, BE VIGILANT; BECAUSE YOUR ADVERSARY THE DEVIL WALKS ABOUT LIKE A ROARING LION, SEEKING WHOM HE MAY DEVOUR. RESIST HIM, STEADFAST IN THE FAITH..."
1 Pet. 5:8-9

"...HE WHO HAS BEEN BORN OF GOD KEEPS (GUARDS) HIMSELF AND THE WICKED ONE DOES NOT TOUCH HIM..."
1 Jn. 5:18



Born out of the Welsh Revival of 1904, Jessie Penn-Lewis and Evan Roberts wrote this classic work entitled, *"War on the Saints"*. If you are curious enough to read this old controversial classic, be sure you obtain the full text unabridged edition. The problem with the modern abridged version is that it removes all references to the potential of a born-again believer being possessed by a demon. It is my conviction that the believer is not immune to demon oppression. It is very much part of our warfare.

Recently, a well-known and respected teacher of God's Word made this statement about Jessie Penn-Lewis' premise on which this book was written:

"...THE VERY TITLE OF THE WELL-KNOWN BOOK BY JESSE PENN-LEWIS, *"WAR ON THE SAINTS"* ASSUMES THAT THE INITIATIVE OF WARFARE IS TAKEN BY OUR ENEMY. THIS IS AN ERROR. IT IS WE CHRISTIANS WHO SHOULD BE MAKING WAR ON OUR ENEMY. WE SHOULD NOT BE WAITING TO SEE WHAT THE ENEMY WILL DO TO US"

Although I highly regard the teacher who made this bold statement, I must say that it is rather his aggressive war-like position that is in error. As can be seen in all our previous scriptures found above, it is Satan who is the aggressor in warfare, not the believer. Our position is very much stated to be a defensive reaction to the aggression of Satan.

**THE SCRIPTURES DO NOT INSTRUCT THE CHRISTIAN
IN THE ART OF MAKING WAR,
BUT RATHER IN DEFENDING ONESELF AGAINST SATAN'S ATTACKS**



Ps. 31:2-3

**"DELIVER ME SPEEDILY;
BE MY ROCK OF REFUGE,
A FORTRESS OF DEFENSE
TO SAVE ME.
FOR YOU ARE
MY ROCK AND MY FORTRESS..."**

2 Thess. 3:3

**"BUT THE LORD IS FAITHFUL,
WHO WILL ESTABLISH YOU AND
GUARD YOU
FROM
THE EVIL ONE,"**

Eph. 6:16

**"ABOVE ALL, TAKING UP THE
SHIELD OF FAITH
WITH WHICH YOU WILL BE ABLE
TO QUENCH ALL THE
FIERY DARTS
OF THE WICKED ONE."**

Isa. 59:19

**"WHEN THE ENEMY
COMES IN LIKE A FLOOD,
THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD
WILL RAISE UP
A STANDARD AGAINST HIM."**

Jas. 4:7

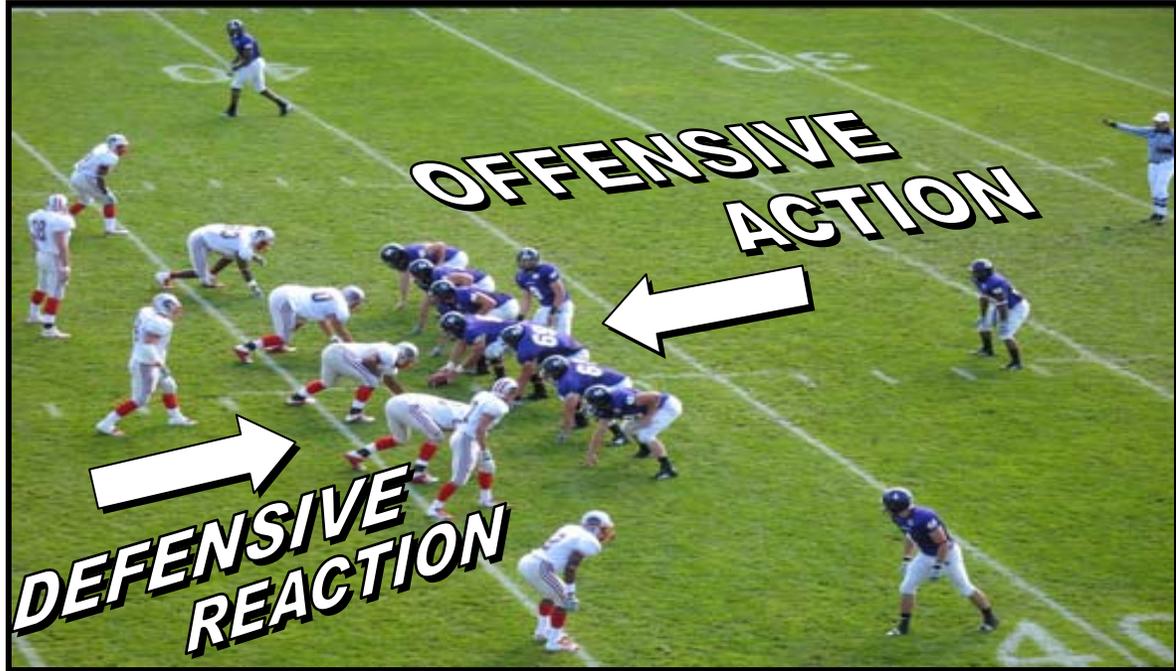
**"SUBMIT TO GOD,
RESIST
THE DEVIL
AND HE WILL FLEE FROM YOU."**

1 Pet. 5:8-9

**"YOUR ADVERSARY THE DEVIL...
SEEKING WHOM HE MAY DEVOUR.
RESIST HIM
STEADFAST IN THE FAITH..."**

The scriptures are consistently clear, God does not instruct us to make war on Satan, but rather to take up a defensive position against his attacks.

Perhaps a natural illustration will help to make this necessary distinction between **OFFENSIVE** and **DEFENSIVE** warfare. In a football game both teams have 11 men on the field. However, one team consists of offensive players while the other is strictly defensive. The offense takes the initial action to which the defense must form a reaction. The defense merely responds with counter measures to offset or nullify the action of the offense. So likewise it is with the Christian. His duty is to react to the action taken by Satan against him, not to be taking offensive action against the devil, but rather to put forth a defensive resistance to his acts of aggression.

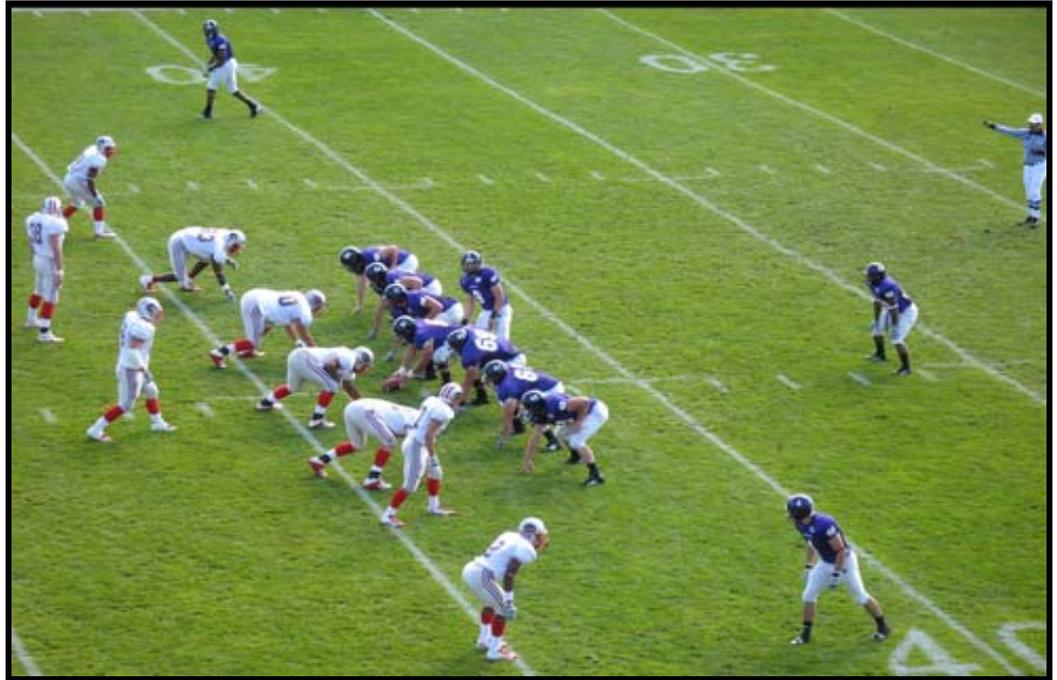


Please understand that my use of a game of football is for the point of illustration of two opposing forces at work. I am in no way implying that spiritual warfare is just a game we play with the enemy of our souls. This is serious business and potentially a deadly conflict in which we are engaged. Therefore it is vitally important that we understand that God has called us to a strictly defensive position against the actions of the forces of darkness. We must not make the fatal mistake of placing ourselves in a role reversal with Satan in which we presumptuously assume that we are called and equipped to take the fight to him.



Let Satan take the initiative and thereby reveal his hand. When the enemy comes in like a flood, the Spirit of the Lord will raise up a standard against him (Isa. 59:19). Allow Satan to shoot his offensive fiery darts at you and then respond properly by taking the shield of faith with which you will be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked one (Eph. 6:16). When Satan, as your adversary, walks about like a roaring lion seeking whom he may devour, resist him steadfast in the faith (1 Pet. 5:8-9). I think you can see the importance of reacting to the thrusts of the devil. As we study and experience his attacks, we become less and less ignorant of his devices (2 Cor. 2:11)

**“LEST SATAN
SHOULD
TAKE
ADVANTAGE
OF US,
...WE ARE
NOT
IGNORANT
OF
HIS DEVICES”
2 Cor. 2:11**





**“THERE WAS A MAN IN THE LAND OF UZ, WHOSE NAME WAS JOB;
AND THAT MAN WAS BLAMELESS AND UPRIGHT, AND ONE WHO FEARED GOD AND SHUNNED EVIL.”** Job. 1:1

I would like to use the story of Job to drive home the point about the importance of our warfare with Satan being a defensive position rather than that of an offensive one. First of all, notice God's initial testimony of Job as being blameless, upright, fearing God and shunning evil.

It was this righteous testimony that drew Satan's attention to Job:

“NOW THERE WAS A DAY WHEN THE SONS OF GOD CAME TO PRESENT THEMSELVES BEFORE THE LORD, AND SATAN ALSO CAME AMONG THEM. AND THE LORD SAID TO SATAN, ‘FROM WHERE DO YOU COME?’ SO SATAN ANSWERED THE LORD AND SAID, ‘FROM GOING TO AND FRO ON THE EARTH, AND FROM WALKING BACK AND FORTH ON IT.’ THEN THE LORD SAID TO SATAN, ‘HAVE YOU CONSIDERED MY SERVANT JOB, THAT THERE IS NONE LIKE HIM ON THE EARTH, A BLAMELESS AND UPRIGHT MAN...ONE WHO FEARS GOD AND SHUNS EVIL?’ Job 1:6-8

If we do not understand the story of Job, we will fail to understand why bad things happen to good people. This is an important illustration since Job is a prophetic picture of what the Christian is to be on the face of the earth. As Christians, we also are to bear the testimony of being blameless, upright, fearing God and shunning evil. As this testimony drew Satan to Job, it will draw Satan to the Christian as well. Sound fearful? Consider more:

**“SO SATAN ANSWERED THE LORD AND SAID,
‘DOES JOB FEAR GOD FOR NOTHING? HAVE YOU NOT MADE A HEDGE AROUND HIM,
AROUND HIS HOUSEHOLD, AND AROUND ALL THAT HE HAS ON EVERY SIDE?
YOU HAVE BLESSED THE WORK OF HIS HANDS, AND HIS POSSESSIONS HAVE INCREASED IN THE LAND.
BUT NOW, STRETCH OUT YOUR HAND AND TOUCH ALL THAT HE HAS,
AND HE WILL SURELY CURSE YOU TO YOUR FACE!’ AND THE LORD SAID TO SATAN,
‘BEHOLD, ALL THAT HE HAS IS IN YOUR POWER; ONLY DO NOT LAY A HAND ON HIS PERSON.’
SO SATAN WENT OUT FROM THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD.”**

Job 1:6-9-12

Study the above well Christian! Notice that in this warfare Satan is still subject to obeying God's commands. He has no authority or entrance into Job's life due to the protective hedge God has placed around him on every side. Please hear this: apart from God's protective hedge that exists around the believer, Satan would devour every Christian on the earth who bears the righteous testimony of Job.



**“THE ANGEL OF THE LORD
ENCAMPS ALL AROUND THOSE WHO
FEAR HIM, AND DELIVERS THEM.”**

Ps. 34:7



Our initial line of defense
is not based on our ability to warfare or resist the Devil.
It is based on the angelic protective hedge God placed not only around J
but around all who will live blamelessly, upright, fearing God
and shunning evil.

One of the greatest expressions of that angelic protective hedge is found in Psalm 91:

**“HE WHO DWELLS IN THE SECRET PLACE OF THE MOST HIGH SHALL ABIDE UNDER THE SHADOW OF THE ALMIGHTY.
I WILL SAY OF THE LORD, ‘HE IS MY REFUGE AND MY FORTRESS; MY GOD, IN HIM I WILL TRUST.’
SURELY HE SHALL DELIVER YOU FROM THE SNARE OF THE FOWLER AND FROM THE PERILOUS PESTILENCE. HE SHALL
COVER YOU WITH HIS FEATHERS, AND UNDER HIS WINGS YOU SHALL TAKE REFUGE; HIS TRUTH SHALL BE YOUR SHIELD
AND BUCKLER. YOU SHALL NOT BE AFRAID OF THE TERROR BY NIGHT, NOR OF THE ARROW THAT FLIES BY DAY,
NOR OF THE PESTILENCE THAT WALKS IN DARKNESS, NOR OF THE DESTRUCTION THAT LAYS WASTE AT NOONDAY.
A THOUSAND MAY FALL AT YOUR SIDE, AND TEN THOUSAND AT YOUR RIGHT HAND; BUT IT SHALL NOT COME NEAR YOU.
ONLY WITH YOUR EYES SHALL YOU LOOK, AND SEE THE REWARD OF THE WICKED. BECAUSE YOU HAVE MADE THE LORD,
WHO IS MY REFUGE, EVEN THE MOST HIGH, YOUR DWELLING PLACE, NO EVIL SHALL BEFALL YOU, NOR SHALL ANY
PLAGUE COME NEAR YOUR DWELLING; FOR HE SHALL GIVE HIS ANGELS CHARGE OVER YOU, TO KEEP YOU IN ALL YOUR
WAYS. IN THEIR HANDS THEY SHALL BEAR YOU UP, LEST YOU DASH YOUR FOOT AGAINST A STONE. YOU SHALL TREAD
UPON THE LION AND THE COBRA, THE YOUNG LION AND THE SERPENT YOU SHALL TRAMPLE UNDERFOOT.
‘BECAUSE HE HAS SET HIS LOVE UPON ME, THEREFORE I WILL DELIVER HIM; I WILL SET HIM ON HIGH,
BECAUSE HE HAS KNOWN MY NAME. HE SHALL CALL UPON ME, AND I WILL ANSWER HIM;
I WILL BE WITH HIM IN TROUBLE; I WILL DELIVER HIM AND HONOR HIM.
WITH LONG LIFE I WILL SATISFY HIM, AND SHOW HIM MY SALVATION.’ ”**

Ps. 91:1-16



“THEN THE LORD SAID TO SATAN, ‘HAVE YOU CONSIDERED MY SERVANT JOB, THAT THERE IS NONE LIKE HIM ON THE EARTH, A BLAMELESS AND UPRIGHT MAN, ONE WHO FEARS GOD AND SHUNS EVIL?’ SO SATAN ANSWERED THE LORD AND SAID, ‘DOES JOB FEAR GOD FOR NOTHING? HAVE YOU NOT MADE A HEDGE AROUND HIM, AROUND HIS HOUSEHOLD, AND AROUND ALL THAT HE HAS ON EVERY SIDE? YOU HAVE BLESSED THE WORK OF HIS HANDS, AND HIS POSSESSIONS HAVE INCREASED IN THE LAND.’”

Job 1:8,10



If all that Christians need
is the presence of an angelic protective hedge
as was placed around Job, then there would be no need for the scriptural
emphasis upon our defensive warfare, for there would be no warfare!
Neither would there be any further story about Job being assaulted by Satan.
The story continues because of Satan's accusation against Job's motive in serving God:

**“ ‘...BUT NOW, STRETCH OUT YOUR HAND AND TOUCH ALL THAT HE HAS,
AND HE WILL SURELY CURSE YOU TO YOUR FACE!’
AND THE LORD SAID TO SATAN,**

‘BEHOLD, ALL THAT HE HAS IS IN YOUR POWER; ONLY DO NOT LAY A HAND ON HIS PERSON...’ ” Job 1:11-12

Satan is challenging God to test Job's motive for serving God: touch all that he has and he will surely curse You to Your face. God's response is all important: Behold, all that he has is in your power; only do not lay a hand on his person. Remember, up to this point Satan had no power to touch Job's possessions for God maintained a protective hedge around him just as He does around the dedicated believer. Now, from behind-the-scenes, we see that God is going to allow Satan within that protective hedge to assault all that Job has. However, notice that God limits the scope of this trial with the restriction: only do not lay a hand on his person. The all-important truth is this: Satan cannot penetrate God's protective hedge around the believer without God's permission. Know that, when Satan is inside our protective hedge, due to no fault of our own, we can be assured that this is a trial permitted by God's Hand. The degree of that trial is sovereignly limited by God according to what God knows the believer can endure.



“THEN THE LORD SAID TO SATAN, ‘HAVE YOU CONSIDERED MY SERVANT JOB, THAT THERE IS NONE LIKE HIM ON THE EARTH, A BLAMELESS AND UPRIGHT MAN, ONE WHO FEARS GOD AND SHUNS EVIL?’ SO SATAN ANSWERED THE LORD AND SAID, ‘DOES JOB FEAR GOD FOR NOTHING? HAVE YOU NOT MADE A HEDGE AROUND HIM, AROUND HIS HOUSEHOLD, AND AROUND ALL THAT HE HAS ON EVERY SIDE? YOU HAVE BLESSED THE WORK OF HIS HANDS, AND HIS POSSESSIONS HAVE INCREASED IN THE LAND.”

Job 1:8,10

Obviously,

God felt that Job was able to endure a great level of suffering and hardship. After all, God boasted of him in saying, have you considered my servant Job, that there is none like him on the earth?

Nor did the trial end with the testing of all that Job possessed. After losing round one, Satan came back to God with a deeper challenge of Job's loyalty to God:

“‘SKIN FOR SKIN! YES, ALL THAT A MAN HAS HE WILL GIVE FOR HIS LIFE. BUT STRETCH OUT YOUR HAND NOW, AND TOUCH HIS BONE AND FLESH, AND HE WILL SURELY CURSE YOU TO YOUR FACE!’ SO THE LORD SAID TO SATAN, ‘BEHOLD, HE IS IN YOUR HAND, BUT SPARE HIS LIFE.’ SO SATAN WENT OUT FROM THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD, AND STRUCK JOB WITH PAINFUL BOILS FROM THE SOLE OF HIS FOOT TO THE CROWN OF HIS HEAD.”

Job 2:4-7

Physical infirmity-what a test! It is most interesting that when Job was personally singled out to endure physical infirmity, both Job's wife and his three friends sought to convince him that what he was physically experiencing was due to his own personal sin. His wife said, "Do you still hold to your integrity? Curse God and die!" (Job. 2:9). Who planted those words in her mouth but Satan? Certainly it is possible that physical infirmity can be the result of personal sin against one's own body by means of indulgence in destructive habits. However, we know this is not the case with Job. It is indeed his integrity that has brought on this severe trial. Consider Job's perspective:

“...SHALL WE INDEED ACCEPT GOOD FROM GOD, AND SHALL WE NOT ACCEPT ADVERSITY? IN ALL THIS JOB DID NOT SIN WITH HIS LIPS.” Job. 2:10



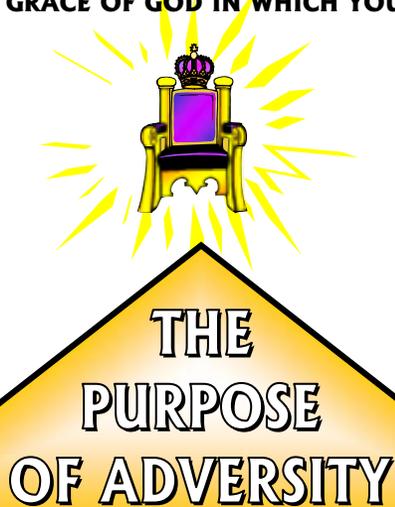
3

BUT MAY THE GOD OF ALL GRACE, WHO CALLED US TO HIS ETERNAL GLORY BY CHRIST JESUS, AFTER YOU HAVE SUFFERED A WHILE, PERFECT, ESTABLISH, STRENGTHEN, AND SETTLE YOU... THIS IS THE TRUE GRACE OF GOD IN WHICH YOU STAND.” 1 Pet. 5:10,12

1

“BE SOBER, BE VIGILANT; BECAUSE YOUR ADVERSARY THE DEVIL WALKS ABOUT LIKE A ROARING LION SEEKING WHOM HE MAY DEVOUR.

1 Pet. 5:8

**2**

RESIST HIM, STEADFAST IN THE FAITH, KNOWING THAT THE SAME SUFFERINGS ARE EXPERIENCED BY YOUR BROTHERHOOD IN THE WORLD.

1 Pet. 5:9



Apart from the behind-the-scenes description of Satan as Job’s adversary, it appears that Job was oblivious to the fact that it was Satan at work. As servants of God today, we cannot claim such ignorance of Satan as our adversary nor ignore the call to defensive warfare against our enemy. We live in the last days in which knowledge shall increase (Dan. 12:4). What is presented above is the complete picture in three verses. Why did God allow such suffering to his servant Job? For the very same reason that He will, at times, allow it to happen to us today. Remember, His goal is to perfect, establish, strengthen and settle the believer. How is it accomplished? By means of His thoroughly controlled trials, He allows Satan inside of our protective hedge.

3

BUT MAY THE GOD OF ALL GRACE, WHO CALLED US TO HIS ETERNAL GLORY BY CHRIST JESUS, AFTER YOU HAVE SUFFERED A WHILE, PERFECT, ESTABLISH, STRENGTHEN, AND SETTLE YOU... THIS IS THE TRUE GRACE OF GOD IN WHICH YOU STAND.” 1 Pet. 5:10,12

1

“BE SOBER, BE VIGILANT; BECAUSE YOUR ADVERSARY THE DEVIL WALKS ABOUT LIKE A ROARING LION SEEKING WHOM HE MAY DEVOUR.

1 Pet. 5:8



**THE
PURPOSE
OF ADVERSITY**

2

RESIST HIM, STEADFAST IN THE FAITH, KNOWING THAT THE SAME SUFFERINGS ARE EXPERIENCED BY YOUR BROTHERHOOD IN THE WORLD.

1 Pet. 5:9



The true grace of God in which we stand is not just that God has placed a protective hedge around His people that Satan cannot penetrate. In order to perfect, establish, strengthen and settle the believer God will allow Satan inside that protective hedge from time to time. What is to be our response when we see Satan where he ought not to be? We are to resist him steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same sufferings are experienced by our brotherhood in the world. God has not called us to declare war on Satan. We are not in an offensive war with him, but rather a defensive one. If we understand the defensive nature of our warfare, we know that when Satan is inside our protective hedge and God is in control of the severity of that trial, His purpose is to perfect, establish, strengthen and settle His people. James reminds us to submit unto God, resist the devil and he will flee from you (Jas. 4:7).

3

BUT MAY THE GOD OF ALL GRACE, WHO CALLED US TO HIS ETERNAL GLORY BY CHRIST JESUS, AFTER YOU HAVE SUFFERED A WHILE, PERFECT, ESTABLISH, STRENGTHEN, AND SETTLE YOU... THIS IS THE TRUE GRACE OF GOD IN WHICH YOU STAND.” 1 Pet. 5:10,12

1

**“BE SOBER,
BE VIGILANT;
BECAUSE
YOUR
ADVERSARY
THE DEVIL
WALKS ABOUT
LIKE A
ROARING
LION
SEEKING
WHOM HE
MAY DEVOUR.**

1 Pet. 5:8



THE PURPOSE OF ADVERSITY

2

**RESIST HIM,
STEADFAST IN
THE FAITH,
KNOWING
THAT THE
SAME
SUFFERINGS
ARE
EXPERIENCED BY
YOUR
BROTHERHOOD
IN THE WORLD.**

1 Pet. 5:9



There is even a higher revelation as to why God allows the above scenario to take place. Paul tells us about the high calling of the church to be demonstrating to principalities and powers God's wisdom in choosing the church to be His people:

**“...TO THE INTENT THAT NOW THE MANIFOLD WISDOM OF GOD
MIGHT BE MADE KNOWN BY THE CHURCH
TO THE PRINCIPALITIES AND POWERS IN THE HEAVENLY PLACES,
ACCORDING TO THE ETERNAL PURPOSE WHICH HE ACCOMPLISHED IN CHRIST JESUS OUR LORD.”**

Eph. 3:10-11



**"...TO THE INTENT THAT NOW THE MANIFOLD WISDOM OF GOD
MIGHT BE MADE KNOWN BY THE CHURCH
TO THE PRINCIPALITIES AND POWERS IN THE HEAVENLY PLACES,
ACCORDING TO THE ETERNAL PURPOSE WHICH HE ACCOMPLISHED
IN CHRIST JESUS OUR LORD."**

Eph. 3:10-11



**"OH, THE DEPTH OF THE RICHES
BOTH OF THE WISDOM AND KNOWLEDGE OF GOD!
HOW UNSEARCHABLE ARE HIS JUDGMENTS AND HIS WAYS PAST FINDING OUT!"**

Rom. 11:33

Not only is God using principalities, powers, the rulers of the darkness of this age, and spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places to bring about the perfecting, establishing, strengthening and settling of the saints by means of controlled warfare, but He is also using a battle-tryed church to be His instrument to manifest unto wicked principalities and powers His manifold wisdom! God did so through Job to Satan, and He does so through His faithful church today! Can't you hear God saying to Satan even now,

**HAVE YOU CONSIDERED MY SERVANTS (THE CHURCH) THAT THERE IS NONE LIKE THEM ON THE EARTH,
A BLAMELESS AND UPRIGHT PEOPLE WHO FEAR GOD AND SHUN EVIL?**

God intends to bring to shame not only principalities and powers for their rebellion against Him, but also to Satan himself, the prince of the power of the air (Eph. 2:2). The wisdom of God is to take a people who once walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit who now works in the sons of disobedience (Eph. 2:2), and use them against the very forces by which they were once controlled. By redeeming them off the trash heap of a sin-filled life, God will now use them to reprove the very principalities and powers they once willingly served.



**“...TO THE INTENT THAT NOW THE MANIFOLD WISDOM OF GOD
MIGHT BE MADE KNOWN BY THE CHURCH
TO THE PRINCIPALITIES AND POWERS IN THE HEAVENLY PLACES,
ACCORDING TO THE ETERNAL PURPOSE
WHICH HE ACCOMPLISHED
IN CHRIST JESUS OUR LORD.”**

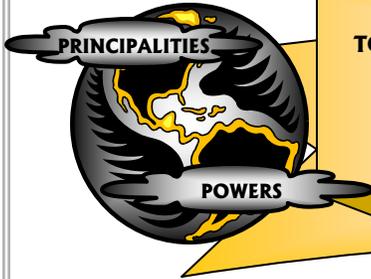
Eph. 3:10-11



God always has in mind His eternal purposes.
I fear that much of the American church holds too dear the lesser temporal purposes
centered upon this present existence on earth.
There has crept in subtle substitutes for Christian priorities such as
the pursuit of life, liberty, and happiness in an earthly kingdom.
Such temporal purposes have clouded over what scripture sets before God's people
as our creator's eternal purposes.
We shall discuss what they are in the next chapter.

CHAPTER TWO

"THE ETERNAL PURPOSES OF GOD"



"...TO THE INTENT THAT NOW THE MANIFOLD WISDOM OF GOD MIGHT BE MADE KNOWN BY THE CHURCH TO THE PRINCIPALITIES AND POWERS IN THE HEAVENLY PLACES, ACCORDING TO THE ETERNAL PURPOSE WHICH HE ACCOMPLISHED IN CHRIST JESUS OUR LORD."

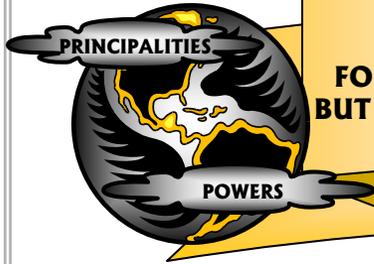
Eph. 3:10-11



"...MY BRETHREN, BE STRONG IN THE LORD AND IN THE POWER OF HIS MIGHT. PUT ON THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD, THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO STAND AGAINST ALL THE WILES OF THE DEVIL. FOR WE DO NOT WRESTLE AGAINST FLESH AND BLOOD, BUT AGAINST PRINCIPALITIES, AGAINST POWERS, AGAINST THE RULERS OF THE DARKNESS OF THIS AGE, AGAINST SPIRITUAL HOSTS OF WICKEDNESS IN THE HEAVENLY PLACES. THEREFORE TAKE UP THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD, THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO WITHSTAND IN THE EVIL DAY, AND HAVING DONE ALL, TO STAND."

Eph. 6:10-13

Do not be deceived: The wrestling of the church with principalities, powers, rulers of the darkness of this age, and spiritual hosts of wickedness in heavenly places is not a battle for wresting the domination of the earth or earthly kingdoms from the control of Satan. Rather, it is a defensive battle in which the Christian resists being conformed into the image of all that is under the domination of Satan's kingdom. The Christian is to know that all that we see now is temporal. Therefore he fights to hold dear to what is clearly set before him as God's eternal purposes.



**“WHILE WE DO NOT LOOK
AT THE THINGS WHICH ARE SEEN,
BUT AT THE THINGS WHICH ARE NOT SEEN.
FOR THE THINGS WHICH ARE SEEN ARE TEMPORARY,
BUT THE THINGS WHICH ARE NOT SEEN ARE ETERNAL.”**

2 Cor. 4:18



**“...DO NOT BE CONFORMED TO THIS WORLD,
BUT BE TRANSFORMED BY
THE RENEWING OF YOUR MIND...”**

Rom. 12:2

**“PURE AND UNDEFILED RELIGION
BEFORE GOD AND THE FATHER IS THIS:
TO VISIT ORPHANS AND WIDOWS
IN THEIR TROUBLE,
AND
TO KEEP ONESELF
UNSPOTTED FROM THE WORLD.”**

Jas. 1:27

**“...THAT YOU MAY BECOME
BLAMELESS AND HARMLESS,
CHILDREN OF GOD WITHOUT FAULT
IN THE MIDST OF A CROOKED AND
PERVERSE GENERATION,
AMONG WHOM YOU SHINE
AS LIGHTS IN THE WORLD,
HOLDING FAST THE WORD OF LIFE...”**

Phil. 2:15-16

**“FOR THE GRACE OF GOD THAT
BRINGS SALVATION HAS APPEARED
TO ALL MEN, TEACHING US THAT,
DENYING UNGODLINESS
AND WORLDLY LUSTS,
WE SHOULD LIVE SOBERLY,
RIGHTEOUSLY,
AND GODLY IN THE PRESENT AGE,
LOOKING FOR THE BLESSED HOPE
AND GLORIOUS APPEARING OF
OUR GREAT GOD AND SAVIOR
JESUS CHRIST...”**

Titus 2:11-12

What is depicted above is God’s specific instruction for the Christian to know how to interact with the world in which he lives. It is all about non-conformity to this present world. It is not about gaining domination or wrestling for the control of earthly kingdoms out of the power of Satan. You will not find support for restoring America as “One nation under God” for there is no such kingdom on the earth, nor will there be prior to the return of Jesus Christ to rule the nations with a rod of iron. Even that future event of the millennial reign of Christ is shown to be part of the temporal and not the eternal.



**“WHILE WE DO NOT LOOK
AT THE THINGS WHICH ARE SEEN,
BUT AT THE THINGS WHICH ARE NOT SEEN.
FOR THE THINGS WHICH ARE SEEN ARE TEMPORARY,
BUT THE THINGS WHICH ARE NOT SEEN ARE ETERNAL.”**

2 Cor. 4:18



I doubt there is to be found in scripture a greater visionary comparison between the temporal and the eternal than these passages from the apostle Peter:

**“BUT THE DAY OF THE LORD WILL COME AS A THIEF IN THE NIGHT,
IN WHICH THE HEAVENS WILL PASS AWAY WITH A GREAT NOISE,
AND THE ELEMENTS WILL MELT WITH FERVENT HEAT;
BOTH THE EARTH AND THE WORKS THAT ARE IN IT WILL BE BURNED UP.**

**THEREFORE, SINCE ALL THESE THINGS WILL BE DISSOLVED,
WHAT MANNER OF PERSONS OUGHT YOU TO BE IN HOLY CONDUCT AND GODLINESS,
LOOKING FOR AND HASTENING THE COMING OF THE DAY OF GOD,
BECAUSE OF WHICH THE HEAVENS WILL BE DISSOLVED, BEING ON FIRE,
AND THE ELEMENTS WILL MELT WITH FERVENT HEAT?**

**NEVERTHELESS WE, ACCORDING TO HIS PROMISE,
LOOK FOR NEW HEAVENS AND A NEW EARTH IN WHICH RIGHTEOUSNESS DWELLS.
THEREFORE, BELOVED, LOOKING FORWARD TO THESE THINGS,
BE DILIGENT TO BE FOUND BY HIM IN PEACE, WITHOUT SPOT AND BLAMELESS...”**

2 Peter 3:10-14

THE FIRST

THE ALPHA

THE FIRST

THE BEGINNING

C
R
E
A
T
I
O
N

(Gen. 1)

FIRST CREATION
CREATED TO BE
TEMPORAL

“...BOTH THE EARTH AND THE WORKS
THAT ARE IN IT WILL BE BURNED UP.”

2 Pet. 3:10

JESUS CHRIST

THE CREATOR OF ALL THINGS

“ALL THINGS
WERE MADE
THROUGH HIM,
AND WITHOUT HIM
NOTHING WAS MADE
THAT WAS MADE.”

John 1:3

“FOR BY HIM
ALL THINGS
WERE CREATED...
ALL THINGS
WERE CREATED
THROUGH HIM
AND FOR HIM.”

Col. 1:16



“BEHOLD,
I MAKE
ALL THINGS
NEW.

...THESE WORDS ARE
TRUE AND FAITHFUL.

...IT IS DONE!

I AM THE ALPHA
AND THE OMEGA,
THE BEGINNING
AND THE END...
HE WHO OVERCOMES
SHALL INHERIT

ALL THINGS...”

Rev. 21:5-7

THE LAST

THE OMEGA

THE LAST

THE END

C
R
E
A
T
I
O
N

(Rev. 21)

LAST CREATION
CREATED TO BE
ETERNAL

“...NEW HEAVENS AND A NEW EARTH
IN WHICH RIGHTEOUSNESS DWELLS.”

2 Pet. 3:13

Study this chart carefully.
It is vital in understanding the
ETERNAL PURPOSES
OF GOD.

I will attempt to explain
this chart on the opposite page.

First of all, notice the multiple titles of Jesus as Alpha and Omega, the First and the Last, the Beginning and the End (Rev. 1:8,11). To what do these titles apply since it is said of Jesus, as Melchizedek, that He had neither beginning of days nor end of life (Heb. 7:3). Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, today and forever (Heb. 13:8).

In what capacity is He Alpha and Omega, the First and the Last, the Beginning and the End? It is in His role as **CREATOR OF ALL THINGS**. As the First, He was the Creator described in the original (first) creation found in Genesis. However, as the Last, He will be the Creator of the new heavens and new earth described by Peter in 2 Pet. 3:13 and in Revelation 21:5-7. Even the prophet Isaiah prophesied about the coming of a new heavens and new earth:

**"FOR BEHOLD, I CREATE NEW HEAVENS AND A NEW EARTH;
AND THE FORMER SHALL NOT BE REMEMBERED OR COME TO MIND.
BUT BE GLAD AND REJOICE FOREVER IN WHAT I CREATE..."** Isa. 65:17-18

So then, we find in scripture two separate acts of creation by Jesus Christ. I would like to convince you that the first creation was made to be **TEMPORARY**, ("the earth and the works that are in it will be burned up"- 2 Pet. 3:10), but the second (last) creation is designed to be **ETERNAL** ("new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness dwells"- 2 Pet. 3:13).

The purposes of God for the temporal creation are not the same as His purposes for the eternal creation. Unless we make a clear distinction between the two, we shall fail to understand all the evil and injustice that God allows to take place during this temporal creation. Righteousness will not dominate this first creation. Rather, it is singled out as the distinct mark of the second creation to come (2 Pet.3:13) . By ignoring the revelation of the second creation to come, some have developed the warped view that God institutes a plan B when events don't go as first planned. Supposedly, God plants Adam and Eve in the Garden, but due to their sin, then plan B is birthed for Jesus to die for Adam's descendants since the sin nature is passed down to all mankind. However, scripture states the opposite:

**"...REDEEMED...WITH THE PRECIOUS BLOOD OF CHRIST, AS OF A LAMB WITHOUT BLEMISH AND WITHOUT SPOT,
HE INDEED WAS FOREORDAINED BEFORE THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD,
BUT WAS MANIFEST IN THESE LAST TIMES FOR YOU."** 1 Peter 1:18-21

If it is pre-planned, it cannot be plan B. Before the foundation of the world was created, Christ was ordained to die to rescue mankind from sin. God, who has foreknowledge, knew when He created Adam and Eve that they would bring sin to all of mankind, but He created them in spite of that painful and disturbing foreknowledge.

THE FIRST

THE ALPHA

THE FIRST

THE BEGINNING

**C
R
E
A
T
I
O
N**

(Gen.1)

SALVATION IS NOT "PLAN B"

"HE INDEED WAS FOREORDAINED BEFORE THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD,

BUT WAS MANIFEST IN THESE LAST TIMES FOR YOU..."
1 Pet. 1:20



"JUST AS HE CHOSE US IN HIM BEFORE THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD,

THAT WE SHOULD BE HOLY AND WITHOUT BLAME..."
Eph. 1:4

THE LAST

THE OMEGA

THE LAST

THE END

**C
R
E
A
T
I
O
N**

(Rev. 21)

FIRST CREATION CREATED TO BE TEMPORAL

"...BOTH THE EARTH AND THE WORKS THAT ARE IN IT WILL BE BURNED UP."
2 Pet. 3:10

"...THE LAMB SLAIN FROM THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD."

Rev 13:8

LAST CREATION CREATED TO BE ETERNAL

"...NEW HEAVENS AND A NEW EARTH IN WHICH RIGHTEOUSNESS DWELLS."
2 Pet. 3:13

The scriptures teach that one of God's divine attributes is His ability to possess foreknowledge:

**"...ELECT
ACCORDING TO
THE FOREKNOWLEDGE
OF GOD THE FATHER..."**

1 Pet. 1:2

**"...BEING DELIVERED BY
THE DETERMINED PURPOSE
AND FOREKNOWLEDGE OF GOD,
YOU HAVE TAKEN BY LAWLESS
HANDS, HAVE CRUCIFIED..."**

Acts 2:23-24

**"...THE CALLED
ACCORDING TO HIS PURPOSE.
FOR WHOM HE FOREKNEW,
HE ALSO PREDESTINED TO BE
CONFORMED TO THE IMAGE OF HIS SON."**

Rom. 8:29

When there is foreknowledge at play, there cannot be any such thing as plan B. Rather, what God allows is because of His foreknowledge. When God created Lucifer as the highest archangel among the angels, He did so with the foreknowledge that he would become lifted up with pride causing God to turn him into a horror. Likewise, God also foreknew that Satan would become the downfall of Adam and Eve:

**"YOU WERE THE SEAL OF PERFECTION, FULL OF WISDOM AND PERFECT IN BEAUTY.
YOU WERE IN EDEN, THE GARDEN OF GOD; EVERY PRECIOUS STONE WAS YOUR COVERING...
YOU WERE THE ANOINTED CHERUB WHO COVERS, I ESTABLISHED YOU, YOU WERE ON THE MOUNTAIN OF
GOD...YOU WERE PERFECT IN YOUR WAYS FROM THE DAY YOU WERE CREATED,
TILL INIQUITY WAS FOUND IN YOU...THEREFORE I CAST YOU AS AS PROFANE THING OUT
OF THE MOUNTAIN OF GOD... I DESTROYED YOU O COVERING CHERUB...YOUR HEART WAS LIFTED UP BECAUSE OF
YOUR BEAUTY...YOU HAVE BECOME A HORROR..."** excepts Ezk. 28:12-19

**"NOW THE SERPENT WAS MORE CUNNING THAN ANY BEAST OF THE FIELD WHICH THE LORD GOD HAD
MADE...AND THE WOMAN SAID, 'THE SERPENT DECEIVED ME, AND I ATE...' "** Gen. 3:1, 13

By means of foreknowledge, God knew these things would happen before creating Lucifer and before creating Adam and Eve. It was God who purposely planted Adam and Eve in the Garden where this fallen serpent already lived. God, in His foreknowledge, was already aware of the ramifications of the sin nature being passed from Adam down to all his descendants. This is why, in His foreknowledge, God can state that Jesus was foreordained before the foundation of the world to become the sacrificial Lamb of God pre-destined to take away the sins of the world (1 Pet.1:20). He knew where all this would lead and yet He went ahead with the creation of Lucifer as well as Adam and Eve. He knew they would fail, both angel and man. However, by means of divine foreknowledge, God ordained the first creation as a testing ground for angels and man. This is no plan B.

THE FIRST

JESUS CHRIST AS THE

THE LAST

THE ALPHA

THE FIRST

THE BEGINNING

**C
R
E
A
T
I
O
N**

RIGHTEOUS JUDGE

TO CREATE:
TESTING
PROVING
PURGING
OF
ANGELS
AND MAN



TO CREATE:
REWARDING
RULING
REIGNING
OF
MAN
AND ANGELS

THE OMEGA

THE LAST

THE END

**C
R
E
A
T
I
O
N**

**TEMPORAL
PURPOSES
OF GOD**

**ETERNAL
PURPOSES
OF GOD**

The first creation has but one main purpose-the **TESTING, PROVING** and **PURGING** of God's created beings, both angels and mankind. There is no other purpose for the first creation. When the Righteous Judge has accomplished these goals, the temporal creation will be replaced by the eternal one. For this present time, Jesus functions as The Righteous Judge testing the hearts of all creatures (men and angels) that He has created:

**“THE LORD IS IN HIS HOLY TEMPLE, THE LORD'S THRONE IS IN HEAVEN;
HIS EYES BEHOLD, HIS EYELIDS TEST THE SONS OF MEN. THE LORD TESTS THE RIGHTEOUS,
BUT THE WICKED AND THE ONE WHO LOVES VIOLENCE HIS SOUL HATES.
UPON THE WICKED HE WILL RAIN COALS; FIRE AND BRIMSTONE AND A BURNING WIND SHALL BE THE PORTION
OF THEIR CUP. FOR THE LORD IS RIGHTEOUS, HE LOVES RIGHTEOUSNESS...”** Ps. 11:4-7

**“THE REFINING POT IS FOR SILVER
AND THE FURNACE FOR GOLD,
BUT THE LORD
TESTS THE HEARTS.”**

Prov. 17:3

**“I, THE LORD,
SEARCH THE HEART, I TEST THE MIND,
EVEN TO GIVE EVERY MAN
ACCORDING TO HIS WAYS,
ACCORDING TO
THE FRUIT OF HIS DOINGS.”**

Je.r 17:10

**THE LORD
SHALL JUDGE THE PEOPLES...
FOR THE RIGHTEOUS GOD
TESTS THE HEARTS
AND MINDS...
GOD IS A JUST JUDGE...”**

Ps. 7:8-11

The second creation has a different purpose-the **REWARDING, RULING** and **REIGNING** of those of God's created beings who have passed the test, both the host of faithful angels that remained with God from the first creation and the redeemed of mankind who have chosen God over the evil principalities and powers serving Satan, the prince and power of the air.

Temporally, God is allowing evil to exist and even triumph in this first creation. This is not the appointed time for righteousness and justice to prevail. Only when we grasp this truth can we understand why God allows evil to continue to manifest in an increasing manner on earth. Consider even the time period of the millennial reign of Christ on earth. Wickedness is merely suppressed by Christ's rod of iron with which He rules. What happens at the end of that thousand year reign? Satan will be loosed for a little while in order to round up the rebellious who hate the reign of Christ. Fire will come from Heaven and consume them all, and then, we shall enter the second creation in which righteousness dwells (Rev. 20:7-11 21:1-7).

THE FIRST



THE
ALPHA



THE
FIRST



THE
BEGINNING

**C
R
E
A
T
I
O
N**

“NOW WHEN THE THOUSAND YEARS HAVE EXPIRED, SATAN WILL BE RELEASED FROM HIS PRISON AND WILL GO OUT TO DECEIVE THE NATIONS WHICH ARE IN THE FOUR CORNERS OF THE EARTH, GOG AND MAGOG, TO GATHER THEM TOGETHER TO BATTLE, WHOSE NUMBER IS AS THE SAND OF THE SEA. THEY WENT UP ON THE BREADTH OF THE EARTH AND SURROUNDED THE CAMP OF THE SAINTS AND THE BELOVED CITY. AND FIRE CAME DOWN FROM GOD OUT OF HEAVEN AND DEVoured THEM. THE DEVIL, WHO DECEIVED THEM, WAS CAST INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE AND BRIMSTONE WHERE THE BEAST AND THE FALSE PROPHET ARE. AND THEY WILL BE TORMENTED DAY AND NIGHT FOREVER AND EVER.” Rev. 20:7-10



**TEMPORAL
PURPOSES
OF GOD**

“NOW I SAW A NEW HEAVEN AND A NEW EARTH, FOR THE FIRST HEAVEN AND THE FIRST EARTH HAD PASSED AWAY... THEN I, JOHN, SAW THE HOLY CITY, NEW JERUSALEM, COMING DOWN OUT OF HEAVEN FROM GOD, PREPARED AS A BRIDE ADORNED FOR HER HUSBAND... ‘BEHOLD, THE TABERNACLE OF GOD IS WITH MEN, AND HE WILL DWELL WITH THEM, AND THEY SHALL BE HIS PEOPLE... THERE SHALL BE NO MORE DEATH, NOR SORROW, NOR CRYING. THERE SHALL BE NO MORE PAIN, FOR THE FORMER THINGS HAVE PASSED AWAY...’ THEN HE WHO SAT ON THE THRONE SAID, ‘BEHOLD, I MAKE ALL THINGS NEW... I AM THE ALPHA AND THE OMEGA, THE BEGINNING AND THE END HE WHO OVERCOMES SHALL INHERIT ALL THINGS...’ ” Rev. 21:1-7

THE LAST



THE
OMEGA

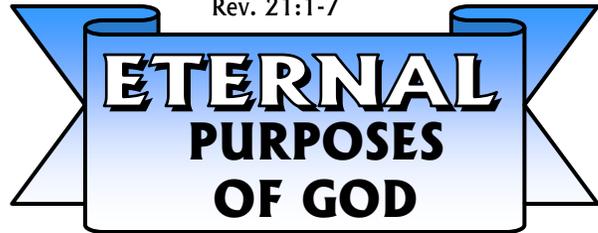


THE
LAST



THE
END

**C
R
E
A
T
I
O
N**



**ETERNAL
PURPOSES
OF GOD**

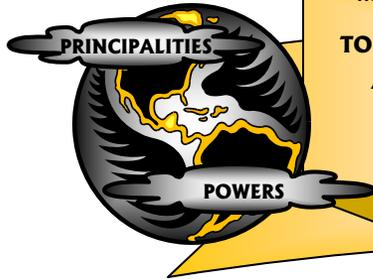
Take a careful look at the preceding page. It is the closing out of the final stage of the first creation and beginning of the eternal creation. The first creation began with the testing of Lucifer and the third of the angels that fell with him. The initial creation also marks the testing of man made in the image of God. The rest of the Bible records ages of mankind being tested by God. The first creation ends with the final judgment of Satan and all of mankind who have rejected God. Note well that it is God Himself who lets loose Satan from captivity having kept him locked up for the last 1,000 years. Why does God let him loose? So that He may test the hearts of all on the earth prior to proceeding with the creation of a new heavens and a new earth.

Now opens a whole new creation! Do you think that this eternal creation shall exceed the temporal creation in magnitude and beauty? God said of His first creation, "Then God saw everything that He had made, and indeed it was very good" (Gen.1:31). Consider the magnitude of what is yet to come:

**"EYE HAS NOT SEEN, NOR EAR HEARD, NOR HAVE ENTERED THE HEART OF MAN,
THE THINGS WHICH GOD HAS PREPARED FOR THOSE WHO LOVE HIM." 1 Cor. 2:9**

**"FOR BEHOLD, I CREATE NEW HEAVENS AND A NEW EARTH;
AND THE FORMER SHALL NOT BE REMEMBERED OR COME TO MIND.
BUT BE GLAD AND REJOICE FOREVER IN WHAT I CREATE..." Isa. 65:17-18**

We talk about a place called Heaven as if it is to be our home for eternity. However wonderful Heaven might be in its present manifestation, it is not our eternal place. It, too, is a temporal place that will be replaced by the second creation of a new heaven and a new earth in which righteousness is going to dwell. This is a place containing the things which God has prepared for those who love Him. It is a place eye has not seen, nor ear heard, nor have entered the heart of man. It is my great suspicion that the new earth of God's second creation will be the center of the new universe God is going to create. This new earth will be the eternal dwelling place of God's New Jerusalem and the habitation of the Bride of Christ, the Lamb's Wife (Rev. 21:9-10). This is God's ultimate reward for faithful service rendered in this present, nasty here and now. Thus the call to warfare is set before every believer. Christian: know that Satan is well aware of God's plan to produce a Bride for His Son (Matt. 22:2). Satan's ultimate goal is to hinder as many as he can from becoming part of that glorious Bride.



**"...TO THE INTENT THAT NOW THE MANIFOLD WISDOM OF GOD
MIGHT BE MADE KNOWN BY THE CHURCH
TO THE PRINCIPALITIES AND POWERS IN THE HEAVENLY PLACES,
ACCORDING TO THE ETERNAL PURPOSE
WHICH HE ACCOMPLISHED
IN CHRIST JESUS OUR LORD."**

Eph. 3:10-11



**"...MY BRETHREN, BE STRONG IN THE LORD
AND IN THE POWER OF HIS MIGHT.
PUT ON THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD,
THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO STAND
AGAINST ALL THE WILES OF THE DEVIL.
FOR WE DO NOT WRESTLE
AGAINST FLESH AND BLOOD,
BUT AGAINST PRINCIPALITIES, AGAINST POWERS,
AGAINST THE RULERS OF THE DARKNESS OF THIS AGE,
AGAINST SPIRITUAL HOSTS OF WICKEDNESS
IN THE HEAVENLY PLACES.
THEREFORE TAKE UP THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD,
THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE
TO WITHSTAND IN THE EVIL DAY,
AND HAVING DONE ALL, TO STAND."**

Eph. 6:10-13



CHAPTER THREE

“WARFARE ON THREE FRONTS”

The most challenging warfare America has ever faced was generated by World War II. It was a warfare on two major fronts against two very different enemies, the Germans and the Japanese. The Christian faces an even more complex and dangerous enemy, a simultaneous spiritual warfare, generated on three distinctly different fronts:



Our primary enemy is Satan. He is our adversary (1 Pet. 5:8). He is the tempter (1 Thess. 3:5). He is the deceiver (Rev. 12:9). He is the accuser of the brethren (Rev. 12:10). He is the prince of the power of the air (Eph.2:2). Arrayed under him is a whole host of fallen angels functioning as principalities, powers, rulers of the darkness (demons) of this age, comprising a great host of spiritual wickedness in heavenly (high) places (Eph. 6:12). Satan and his hordes make war against the saints by means of the influence of the corrupted world in which we live that is under his sway (1 Jn. 5:19), and by means of a fallen sin nature from Satan that lives within us called the flesh (Eph. 2:3).

**"...YOUR ADVERSARY
THE DEVIL...
SEEKS WHOM
HE MAY DEVOUR"**

**ENEMY
1**

1 Pet.5:8



W

**"...THE CORRUPTION
THAT IS IN
THE WORLD
THROUGH LUST"**

**ENEMY
2**

2 Pet.1:4



A

**"...ABSTAIN FROM
FLESHLY LUSTS
WHICH WAR
AGAINST THE SOUL"**

**ENEMY
3**

1 Pet.2:11



R

AGAINST



**THE
SAINTS**

It is one thing to realize the soberness of being at war with those whose hatred is bent on destroying us, but it is quite another thing to grasp that this warfare is taking place simultaneously on three different fronts. I cannot just focus my attention upon wrestling against Satan and his fallen angels (Eph. 6:11). I must be on guard every day from the danger of the enemy in which I live (the world) and the enemy that lives in me (the flesh).

Which of these two do you suppose is the greater enemy? I can come out of the influence of the world around me through times of isolation, but I can never isolate myself from the power of the flesh since it goes everywhere with me, even into isolated places away from the world. I am convinced that the greater of these two opposing forces is the sin nature that lives within me, for its potential always remains with me.

In the world in which we live it is what we see with our eyes that can become most dangerous as a great source of influence and temptation. However, the enemy that lives within us thrives on what I allow to enter my imagination (the eye of the mind). Within me, hidden from view, can function all the carnal impulses of envy, jealousy, strife, division, hatred, etc., the things that Paul lists as the various works of the flesh:

“NOW THE WORKS OF THE FLESH ARE EVIDENT, WHICH ARE: ADULTERY, FORNICATION, UNCLEANNESS, LEWDNESS, IDOLATRY, SORCERY, HATRED, CONTENTIONS, JEALOUSIES, OUTBURSTS OF WRATH, SELFISH AMBITIONS, DISSENSIONS, HERESIES, ENVY, MURDERS, DRUNKENNESS, REVELRIES, AND THE LIKE; OF WHICH I TELL YOU BEFOREHAND, JUST AS I ALSO TOLD YOU IN TIME PAST, THAT THOSE WHO PRACTICE SUCH THINGS WILL NOT INHERIT THE KINGDOM OF GOD.”

Gal. 5:19-21

God's Word has a detailed plan for the believer on how to resist both the world in which we live and the flesh that lives within us. We will devote a chapter to each one of these deadly enemies. However, we shall begin our study of warfare by examining the primary enemy that we face, Satan himself. In studying Satan we shall see that he is the originator of our other two enemies, the world and the flesh. It has been well said that to be forewarned is to be forearmed. We need to understand the underlying cause for the immense hatred Satan has for the believer. Know your enemy, and you will know how to conduct warfare against him:

**“LEST SATAN SHOULD TAKE ADVANTAGE OF US,
FOR WE ARE NOT IGNORANT OF HIS DEVICES”**

2 Cor. 2:11

OF **GOOD** ← THE ORIGIN → AND **EVIL**

**"YOU WERE THE SEAL OF PERFECTION...
...YOU WERE PERFECT IN YOUR WAYS FROM THE DAY YOU WERE CREATED"**
Ezk. 28:12,15

ARCHANGEL LUCIFER



THE DEVIL

"...THAT SERPENT OF OLD, CALLED THE DEVIL AND SATAN WHO DECEIVES THE WHOLE WORLD..."
Rev. 12:9

"...GOD CREATED ...THE EARTH... GOD CALLED THE DRY LAND EARTH... AND GOD SAW THAT IT WAS GOOD."
Gen. 1:1,10

EARTH



WHAT GOD CREATED FOR GOOD... SATAN HAS TURNED INTO EVIL...



THE WORLD

"...THE WHOLE WORLD LIES UNDER THE SWAY OF THE WICKED ONE..."
1 Jn. 5:19

"SO GOD CREATED MAN IN HIS OWN IMAGE; IN THE LIKENESS OF GOD HE CREATED HIM..."
Gen. 1:26-27

MAN



"...IN MY FLESH NOTHING GOOD DWELLS... SIN... DWELLS IN ME."
Rom. 7:18, 20

God certainly allows the existence of evil, but He does not initiate or create evil of His own will. All evil stems out of the contamination of something God first created for good. However, keep in mind that God's foreknowledge of good becoming evil does not prevent Him from permitting it to manifest. Remember, the first creation was brought forth to test both the angelic creation and the creation of mankind. God will allow it to play out with that needful divine purpose in mind. God has no plan B.

Through one man's sin the whole race of mankind was contaminated by the inheritance of Adam's sinful nature replacing the nature (image) of God (Rom. 5:17). Also by the initial sin of Lucifer, one-third of the myriad of God's angelic creation fell to sin by aligning themselves with Lucifer's rebellion against God. The scriptures even speak of a select group of angels that sought the corruption of the human race by having sexual relationships with the daughters of men and thereby producing supernatural offspring that may well have become the origin of demons on earth. Those super-natural evil offspring would have become disembodied spirits by means of the flood:

“THE SONS OF GOD SAW THE DAUGHTERS OF MEN, THAT THEY WERE BEAUTIFUL; AND THEY TOOK WIVES FOR THEMSELVES OF ALL WHOM THEY CHOSE...THERE WERE GIANTS ON THE EARTH IN THOSE DAYS, AND ALSO AFTERWARD, WHEN THE SONS OF GOD CAME IN TO THE DAUGHTERS OF MEN AND THEY BORE CHILDREN TO THEM. THOSE WERE THE MIGHTY MEN WHO WERE OF OLD, MEN OF RENOWN.” Gen. 6:2-4

For this unique action of angelic beings contaminating the human race, God has imprisoned them in a special place awaiting judgment to come:

“...GOD DID NOT SPARE THE ANGELS WHO SINNED, BUT CAST THEM DOWN INTO HELL (Tartarus) AND DELIVERED THEM INTO CHAINS OF DARKNESS, TO BE RESERVED FOR JUDGMENT.” 2 Pet. 2:4

Who was behind this act of rebellion by angelic beings? It was Satan, the same one who deceived Adam and Eve and thereby condemned the human race with the sin nature. Here, now, was a new, direct attempt to force God to destroy the human race on earth; but you know the story, “But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord...Noah was a just man, perfect in his generations, Noah walked with God” (Gen. 6:8-9). Keep in mind that none of this was a surprise to God. In His foreknowledge He already knew what would happen. What we have here is another example of God testing His angelic creation as well as mankind. The flood judged the wickedness of men on earth and the permissive wickedness of the daughters of men with angelic beings. Noah and his family were the only ones that were spared having passed the test.

LUCIFER



"THE SHINING ONE"

**"THE SEAL OF PERFECTION...
FULL OF WISDOM
AND PERFECT IN BEAUTY...
EVERY PRECIOUS STONE
WAS YOUR COVERING...
THE ANOINTED CHERUB
WHO COVERS..
YOU WERE ON THE
HOLY MOUNTAIN OF GOD...
YOU WERE IN THE MIDST OF
THE FIERY STONES...
YOU WERE PERFECT
IN YOUR WAYS
FROM THE DAY
YOU WERE CREATED..."**



FROM

GOOD

TO

EVIL



"PRINCE OF DARKNESS"

**"INIQUITY WAS
FOUND IN YOU...
BY THE ABUNDANCE OF
YOUR TRADING YOU
BECAME FILLED WITH
VIOLENCE WITHIN
AND YOU SINNED...
YOUR HEART WAS LIFTED
UP...YOU CORRUPTED YOUR
WISDOM...YOU DEFILED
YOUR SANCTUARIES BY
THE MULTITUDE OF
YOUR INIQUITIES...
YOU HAVE BECOME
A HORROR..."**

Excerpts Ezk. 28:11-19

THE FALL OF ARCHANGEL LUCIFER-THE CREATION OF SATAN

The origin of sin was not the work of Adam and Eve in the Garden, but by the acts of Lucifer, in his prior existence, in the Garden of God:

“YOU WERE THE SEAL OF PERFECTION, FULL OF WISDOM AND PERFECT IN BEAUTY. YOU WERE IN EDEN, THE GARDEN OF GOD; EVERY PRECIOUS STONE WAS YOUR COVERING... YOU WERE THE ANOINTED CHERUB WHO COVERS...YOU WERE PERFECT IN YOUR WAYS FROM THE DAY YOU WERE CREATED, TILL INIQUITY WAS FOUND IN YOU.” Ezk. 28:12-15

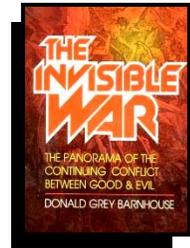
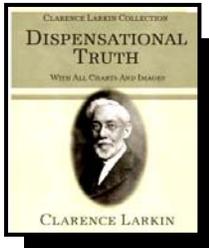
Genesis records for us a picture of the serpent of old, called the Devil, and Satan, in the Garden of God, **ALREADY** in a fallen state from that of the glorious Lucifer in the Garden pictured in Ezekiel 28. Therefore, Lucifer's fall was prior to that of Adam and Eve. Sin was introduced by Lucifer, in the Garden, prior to the sin of Adam and Eve in that same Garden. There is an interesting theory set forth by various theologians called, “the Gap Theory” in which the fall of Lucifer took place between Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2. Two such theologians I would suggest who expound this theory quite well are the late Clarence Larkin and the more recent Donald Grey Barnhouse.

Endorsement of the Gap Theory is not a vote for evolution over creation.

Theologians that are determined to fit all scriptural events into a limited 6,000 year creation theory has flaws as well, for then Lucifer, in a beautiful state as Ezekiel 28 describes, would have been placed in the Garden of God **AFTER** the Genesis creation story. Sorry, but that doesn't fit the Genesis account of Satan already fallen to the state of a serpent. Truth of the matter is that angelic beings were created **BEFORE** even the foundations of the earth were laid:

“WHERE WERE YOU WHEN I LAID THE FOUNDATIONS OF THE EARTH? ...WHO LAID ITS CORNERSTONE, WHEN THE MORNING STARS SANG TOGETHER, AND ALL THE SONS OF GOD SHOUTED FOR JOY?” Job 38:4-7

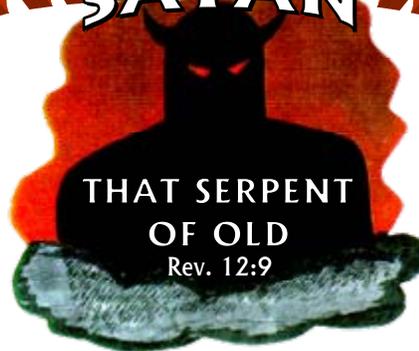
These original Sons of God were angelic beings. Genesis 6:1-4 clearly depicts fallen angels (these “Sons of God”) as having sexual relationships with the daughters of men. Sin was initially introduced into God's creation by archangel Lucifer in the Garden of God prior to Adam and Eve placed in the Garden. Remember, God is testing both angels and mankind in His first act of creation. Lucifer was the first to fall, not Adam and Eve.



ARCHANGEL LUCIFER



THE DEVIL SATAN



"HOW YOU ARE FALLEN FROM HEAVEN,
O LUCIFER, SON OF THE MORNING!
HOW YOU ARE CUT DOWN TO THE GROUND,
YOU WHO WEAKENED THE NATIONS!
FOR YOU HAVE SAID IN YOUR HEART:
'I WILL ASCEND INTO HEAVEN,
I WILL EXALT MY THRONE ABOVE THE STARS OF GOD;
I WILL ALSO SIT ON THE MOUNT OF THE CONGREGATION
ON THE FARTHEST SIDES OF THE NORTH;
I WILL ASCEND ABOVE THE HEIGHTS OF THE CLOUDS,
I WILL BE LIKE THE MOST HIGH.'

YET YOU SHALL BE BROUGHT DOWN TO SHEOL, TO THE LOWEST DEPTHS OF THE PIT."

Isa. 14:12-15

The second detailed account we have in scripture of the fall of glorious Lucifer and the subsequent creation of sinful Satan is found here in Isaiah 14:12-15. What is added by the prophet Isaiah not found in the words of the prophet Ezekiel are the five "I will's" Satan uses to express the depth of his planned rebellion against God. These are expressions of Satan's declaration of war against God Himself:

**"I WILL ASCEND INTO HEAVEN,
I WILL EXALT MY THRONE ABOVE THE STARS OF GOD;
I WILL ALSO SIT ON THE MOUNT OF THE CONGREGATION
ON THE FARTHEST SIDES OF THE NORTH;
I WILL ASCEND ABOVE THE HEIGHTS OF THE CLOUDS,
I WILL BE LIKE THE MOST HIGH."** Isaiah 14:12-15

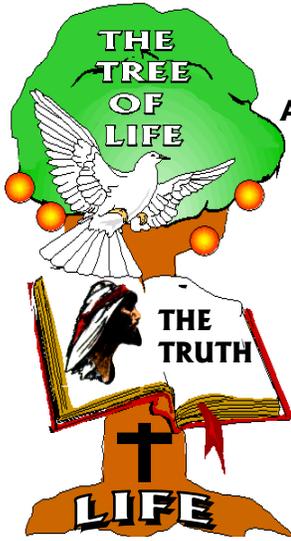
Taking into account this in-depth proclamation of Satan against the purposes of God, we can see that when God created Adam and Eve and placed them in authority over the Garden of God, Satan, who was once in control of the Garden himself, now waits for Adam and Eve with a vengeance and retaliation in his heart to subvert the plan of God now being set in place.

In Adam and Eve, we have God's replacements for all that once was the prideful possession of Lucifer. According to Ezekiel 28, He was created as God's right hand to rule over all God's creation. Now he is in the Garden, as a fallen creature, known as the serpent. His God-given wisdom has been reduced to demonic craftiness based on lies and deception:

**"NOW THE SERPENT WAS MORE CUNNING THAN ANY
BEAST OF THE FIELD WHICH THE LORD GOD HAD MADE."**

Gen. 3:1





**"THE LORD GOD
PLANTED A GARDEN EASTWARD IN EDEN,
AND THERE HE PUT THE MAN WHOM HE HAD FORMED.
AND OUT OF THE GROUND THE LORD GOD
MADE EVERY TREE GROW THAT IS PLEASANT
TO THE SIGHT AND GOOD FOR FOOD.**

**THE TREE OF LIFE
WAS ALSO IN THE MIDST OF THE GARDEN,**

AND

**THE TREE OF THE KNOWLEDGE
OF GOOD AND EVIL.**

**THEN THE LORD GOD TOOK THE MAN AND PUT HIM
IN THE GARDEN OF EDEN TO TEND AND KEEP IT.
AND THE LORD GOD COMMANDED THE MAN, SAYING,
'OF EVERY TREE OF THE GARDEN
YOU MAY FREELY EAT;**

**BUT OF THE TREE
OF THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL
YOU SHALL NOT EAT,
FOR IN THE DAY THAT YOU EAT OF IT
YOU SHALL SURELY DIE.'"**

excerpts Gen. 2:8-17



THE FALL OF ADAM AND EVE-THE CREATION OF THE FLESH NATURE

On the opposite page is the biggest, clear-cut trial God ever created to test mankind in paradise, the Garden of God. Rather than just being a place of paradise, it is also a place God ordained for the testing of mankind. First of all, note the two different trees God placed in the Garden. One was a permissible tree from which to eat, but the other tree contained forbidden fruit.

Furthermore, consider that God allowed fallen Lucifer (now being a serpent) to play the part of the tempter of mankind from his dwelling place in the Garden of God, abiding in the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. Think about it: God Himself has set the stage for the testing of Adam and Eve's obedience right from the beginning. Evil is allowed to exist in the Garden of God. The first creation is indeed a place of testing for angels and man. Just as God created Lucifer with full foreknowledge that he would fail, now God has created mankind. He places them in an arena of testing, knowing full well, by His foreknowledge, that Adam and Eve would also fail the test.

The consequences of that failure are great. Death is brought upon all mankind due to the sin of Adam. Sin has caused Adam to inherit a sin nature to be passed down to all mankind. Remember, Adam was created in the image of God, in the likeness of God, but consider what is recorded of Adam's descendants:

**"...IN THE DAY THAT GOD CREATED MAN, HE MADE HIM IN THE LIKENESS OF GOD...
AND ADAM...BEGOT A SON IN HIS OWN LIKENESS, AFTER HIS OWN IMAGE..."**

Gen. 5:1-3

By his sin, Adam has fallen from the likeness and image of God and thereby his children now bear Adam's image and likeness which is a sin nature received from Satan. The Bible calls it "the flesh" (Rom. 8:13) or "our old man" (Rom. 6:6). Jesus Christ has come to restore to fallen mankind the very image and likeness of God by means of the new birth. Paul prophetically proclaims:

**"...THROUGH ONE MAN'S OFFENSE JUDGMENT CAME TO ALL MEN,
RESULTING IN CONDEMNATION...FOR AS BY ONE MAN'S DISOBEDIENCE MANY WERE MADE SINNERS,
SO ALSO BY ONE MAN'S OBEDIENCE MANY WILL BE MADE RIGHTEOUS."**

Rom. 5:18-19

"NOW THE WORKS OF THE FLESH ARE EVIDENT, WHICH ARE: ADULTERY, FORNICATION, UNCLEANNESS, LICENTIOUSNESS, IDOLATRY, SORCERY, HATRED, CONTENTIONS, JEALOUSIES, OUTBURSTS OF WRATH, SELFISH AMBITIONS, DISSENSIONS, HERESIES, ENVY, MURDERS, DRUNKENNESS, REVELRIES, AND THE LIKE; OF WHICH I TELL YOU BEFOREHAND, JUST AS I TOLD YOU IN TIME PAST, THAT THOSE WHO PRACTICE SUCH THINGS WILL NOT INHERIT THE KINGDOM OF GOD... THOSE WHO ARE CHRIST'S HAVE CRUCIFIED THE FLESH WITH ITS PASSIONS AND DESIRES."

Gal. 5:19-24

"...BELOVED, LET US CLEANSE OURSELVES FROM ALL FILTHINESS OF THE FLESH... PERFECTING HOLINESS IN THE FEAR OF THE LORD."

2 Cor. 7:1

THE ENEMY WITHIN



"DO NOT BE DECEIVED, GOD IS NOT MOCKED; FOR WHATEVER A MAN SOWS, THAT HE WILL ALSO REAP.

FOR HE WHO SOWS TO HIS FLESH WILL OF THE FLESH REAP CORRUPTION..."

Gal. 6:7-8

"FOR THOSE WHO LIVE ACCORDING TO THE FLESH SET THEIR MINDS ON THE THINGS OF THE FLESH... FOR TO BE CARNALLY MINDED IS DEATH... BECAUSE THE CARNAL MIND IS ENMITY AGAINST GOD; FOR IT IS NOT SUBJECT TO THE LAW OF GOD, NOR INDEED CAN IT BE. SO THEN, THOSE WHO ARE IN THE FLESH CANNOT PLEASE GOD. THEREFORE, BRETHREN, WE ARE DEBTORS- NOT TO THE FLESH, TO LIVE ACCORDING TO THE FLESH. FOR IF YOU LIVE ACCORDING TO THE FLESH YOU WILL DIE; BUT IF BY THE SPIRIT YOU PUT TO DEATH THE DEEDS OF THE BODY, YOU WILL LIVE."

Rom. 8:5-13

"LET US WALK PROPERLY... NOT IN REVELRY AND DRUNKENNESS, NOT IN LICENTIOUSNESS AND LEWDNESS, NOT IN STRIFE AND ENVY. BUT PUT ON THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, AND MAKE NO PROVISION FOR THE FLESH, TO FULFILL ITS LUSTS."

Rom. 13:13-14

**“MOST ASSUREDLY, I SAY TO YOU, UNLESS ONE IS BORN AGAIN,
HE CANNOT SEE THE KINGDOM OF GOD...THAT WHICH IS BORN OF THE FLESH IS FLESH,
AND THAT WHICH IS BORN OF THE SPIRIT IS SPIRIT...YOU MUST BE BORN AGAIN.”** Jn. 3:3-7

What **THE FIRST ADAM** surrendered by his sin at the fall in Genesis, has been regained by means of the work of **THE LAST ADAM**, Jesus, who has become a life-giving spirit (1 Cor. 15:45). By becoming born again as Jesus depicts in Jn. 3:3-8, the believer in Christ receives a regenerated spirit such as Adam had prior to the fall. Thus the mandate: that which is born of the Spirit is spirit-you must be born again (Jn. 3:6-7).

However, the believer in Christ retains within himself the destructive potential of the fallen nature, the flesh, handed down to all descendants of Adam. The opposite page gives ample warning to the believer of the destructive power of this enemy called the flesh. The power to defeat the flesh is found in the power of the Spirit received from Christ:

**“I SAY THEN: WALK IN THE SPIRIT, AND YOU SHALL NOT FULFILL THE LUST OF THE FLESH.
FOR THE FLESH LUSTS AGAINST THE SPIRIT, AND THE SPIRIT AGAINST THE FLESH;
AND THESE ARE CONTRARY TO ONE ANOTHER, SO THAT YOU DO NOT DO THE THINGS YOU WISH.”**

Gal. 5:16-17

Just as Adam and Eve were presented with a choice between the Tree of Life and the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, so likewise is the born-again believer presented with a choice between the flesh nature born of Satan through Adam, and the Spirit nature which is born of God. I can't say this often enough: God is constantly testing angels and man in the first creation. We might prefer to only have the one new nature from God, but this is not the essence of a test. There must be an alternative choice. The new birth makes God the Father to be our Father in Heaven (Matt.6:9). However, prior to the new birth experience, as frightening as it sounds, we, like the Pharisees, had Satan as our father:

**“I SPEAK WHAT I HAVE SEEN WITH MY FATHER,
AND YOU DO WHAT YOU HAVE SEEN WITH YOUR FATHER...
YOU ARE OF YOUR FATHER THE DEVIL,
AND THE DESIRES OF YOUR FATHER YOU WANT TO DO...”** Jn. 8:38,44

As a born-again believer, walk after the spirit nature and you will prove God is your Father. Walk after the flesh and you demonstrate that Satan is still your father. It is everyone's individual choice which father we will obey.

THE ENEMY WE LIVE IN

"GHAY"

**"EARTH,
GLOBE,
LAND MASS,
GROUND, SOIL,"**



**"BEFORE
THE FALL
THERE WAS
AN EARTH,"**

**AFTER
THE FALL
THERE WAS
A WORLD"**

"KOSMOS"

**"WORLD,
ORDER, DESIGN,
ADORNMENT,
DECORATION"**



Watchman Nee



**GOD'S
PHYSICAL
CREATION**

**"IN THE BEGINNING,
GOD CREATED
THE HEAVENS
AND THE EARTH"**

Gen. 1:1

SATAN'S

"SPIRITUAL"

**RE-CREATION
"...THE WHOLE WORLD
LIES UNDER
THE SWAY OF
THE WICKED ONE."**

1 Jn. 5:19

The third enemy needful of introduction is the world. Our enemy is not **THE EARTH** but rather **THE WORLD**. Watchman Nee makes that pungent distinction on the opposite page. What God created was the earth and gave dominion of it to Adam:

**“...FILL THE EARTH AND SUBDUE IT. HAVE DOMINION...
OVER EVERY LIVING THING THAT MOVES ON THE EARTH.”** Gen. 1:28

Unfortunately, Adam, by means of his sin, surrendered the dominion of the earth to Satan. Due to the sin-nature of Satan he begins a transformation or re-creation of the earth (ghay) into what would become the world (kosmos), a world order, a design, an adornment, a decoration that reflects the desires and nature of its owner. Jesus gives insight as to what kind of world Satan would create by stating what is the character and nature of Satan:

**“...HE WAS A MURDERER FROM THE BEGINNING, AND DOES NOT STAND IN THE TRUTH,
BECAUSE THERE IS NO TRUTH IN HIM. WHEN HE SPEAKS A LIE, HE SPEAKS FROM HIS OWN RESOURCES,
FOR HE IS A LIAR AND THE FATHER OF IT.”** Jn. 8:44

Therefore, in telling us that the whole world lies under the sway of the wicked one (1 Jn. 5:19), we can only expect the world to reflect an image of not standing in the truth, but rather one that is rooted firmly in lies. That means that whatever the Word of God (the truth) condemns, the world (the lie) will embrace. One present proof of that is how the world is suddenly embracing homosexuality and gay marriages as acceptable normal behavior. This was a distinguishing mark of the days of Noah and Lot that brought on God's destructive judgment of the flood as well as fire and brimstone on Sodom and Gomorrah. What will mark the world prior to the return of Jesus Christ?

**“...AS IT WAS IN THE DAYS OF NOAH, SO IT WILL BE ALSO IN THE DAYS OF THE SON OF MAN: THEY ATE, THEY DRANK,
THEY MARRIED WIVES, THEY WERE GIVEN IN MARRIAGE, UNTIL THE DAY THAT NOAH ENTERED THE ARK, AND THE
FLOOD CAME AND DESTROYED THEM ALL. LIKEWISE AS IT WAS ALSO IN THE DAYS OF LOT: THEY ATE, THEY DRANK,
THEY BOUGHT, THEY SOLD, THEY PLANTED, THEY BUILT; BUT ON THE DAY THAT LOT WENT OUT OF SODOM
IT RAINED FIRE AND BRIMSTONE FROM HEAVEN AND DESTROYED THEM ALL.
EVEN SO WILL IT BE IN THE DAY WHEN THE SON OF MAN IS REVEALED.”** Luke 17:26-30

Among the things that happened in Lot's day was the brazen demand of the homosexuals to be given the two angels that were in Lot's house (Gen.19:4). It is imperative to see that God's people are not commissioned to halt gay marriages, but rather to become aware that this is one of the tell-tale marks that will herald in the coming of Jesus Christ prior to the start of the Tribulation, a judgment greater in destruction than the flood of Noah's day!

THE ENEMY WE LIVE IN

"DO NOT LOVE THE WORLD OR THE THINGS IN THE WORLD. IF ANYONE LOVES THE WORLD, THE LOVE OF THE FATHER IS NOT IN HIM.

FOR ALL THAT IS IN THE WORLD-THE LUST OF THE FLESH, THE LUST OF THE EYES, AND THE PRIDE OF LIFE-IS NOT OF THE FATHER BUT IS OF THE WORLD. AND THE WORLD IS PASSING AWAY, AND THE LUST OF IT; BUT HE WHO DOES THE WILL OF GOD ABIDES FOREVER." 1 Jn. 2:15-17

"ADULTERERS AND ADULTERESSES! DO YOU NOT KNOW THAT FRIENDSHIP WITH THE WORLD IS ENMITY WITH GOD? WHOEVER THEREFORE WANTS TO BE A FRIEND OF THE WORLD MAKES HIMSELF AN ENEMY OF GOD."

Jas. 4:4

"KOSMOS"

**"WORLD,
ORDER, DESIGN,
ADORNMENT,
DECORATION"**



"AND DO NOT BE CONFORMED TO THIS WORLD, BUT BE TRANSFORMED BY THE RENEWING OF YOUR MIND, THAT YOU MAY PROVE WHAT IS THAT GOOD AND ACCEPTABLE AND PERFECT WILL OF GOD."

Rom. 12:2

"I HAVE GIVEN THEM YOUR WORD; AND THE WORLD HAS HATED THEM BECAUSE THEY ARE NOT OF THE WORLD, JUST AS I AM NOT OF THE WORLD.

I DO NOT PRAY THAT YOU SHOULD TAKE THEM OUT OF THE WORLD, BUT THAT YOU SHOULD KEEP THEM FROM THE EVIL ONE. THEY ARE NOT OF THE WORLD, JUST AS I AM NOT OF THE WORLD.

SANCTIFY THEM BY YOUR TRUTH.

YOUR WORD IS TRUTH. AS YOU SENT ME INTO THE WORLD, I ALSO HAVE SENT THEM INTO THE WORLD."

Jn. 17:14-19

"BUT GOD FORBID THAT I SHOULD BOAST EXCEPT IN THE CROSS OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST, BY WHOM THE WORLD HAS BEEN CRUCIFIED TO ME, AND I TO THE WORLD."

Gal. 6:14-15

From the scriptures on the opposite page we can easily see how God feels about His people and their involvement with the world. God is not speaking of things of the earth created by God, but rather the things that comprise the world that exists on the earth. It is the present evil age, the world order, the design, the demonic adornment and sensual decoration that Satan is creating, which the believer is called to avoid.

Neither is the believer called to undo what Satan is creating. It is a world under his dominion until the end. Consider how James describes what is to be pure and undefiled religion:

**“PURE AND UNDEFILED RELIGION BEFORE GOD AND THE FATHER IS THIS:
TO VISIT ORPHANS AND WIDOWS IN THEIR TROUBLE, AND TO KEEP ONESELF UNSPOTTED FROM THE WORLD.”**

Jas. 1:27

Notice we are not in an offensive war with Satan to remove spots from his corrupt world, but rather that the believer would be on the defense to keep himself unspotted from that corrupt world. Consider the example of our Master Jesus:



**“I WILL NOT TALK WITH YOU MUCH MORE, FOR THE PRINCE
(“KOSMOKRATOR” EVIL GENIUS, RULER)
OF THE WORLD IS COMING.
AND HE HAS NO CLAIM ON ME.
HE HAS NOTHING IN COMMON WITH ME;
THERE IS NOTHING IN ME THAT BELONGS TO HIM,
AND HE HAS NO POWER OVER ME.”**

John 14:30 Amplified Bible

Notice how Jesus has kept Himself unspotted from the world. It is a pattern to be followed.

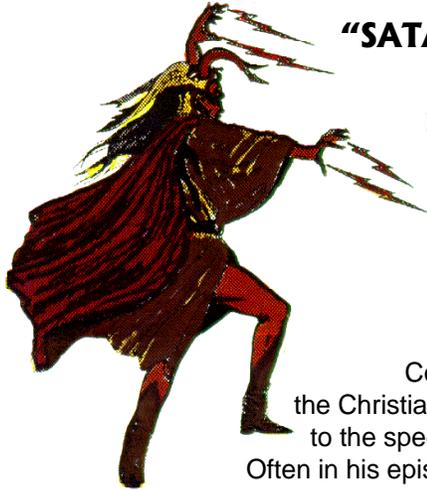
The Kosmos (the world) is under the direction of the Kosmokrator (prince-evil genius).

However, of all that Satan does, Jesus rejects in saying that Satan has no claim on Him, the evil one has nothing in common with Him; there is nothing in Jesus that belongs to Satan, therefore the devil has no power over Him. Jesus demonstrates the essence of defensive warfare that every Christian needs to embrace against this present world under the influence of the evil one.



CHAPTER FOUR

“SATAN’S WARFARE AGAINST THE SAINTS”



**“PUT ON GOD’S WHOLE ARMOR
[THE ARMOR OF A HEAVY-ARMED SOLDIER WHICH GOD SUPPLIES],
THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE SUCCESSFULLY
TO STAND UP AGAINST ALL
THE STRATEGIES AND THE DECEITS OF THE DEVIL.”**

Eph 6:11 Amplified Bible

**“LEST SATAN SHOULD TAKE ADVANTAGE OF US,
FOR WE ARE NOT IGNORANT OF HIS DEVICES.”**

2 Cor. 2:11

Contrary to the popular saying, “ignorance is bliss”, the Christian cannot afford to be in a state of ignorance when it comes to the specific tactics by which Satan makes war against the saints. Often in his epistles, the apostle Paul would address believers with the saying,

“I do not want you to be ignorant brethren.”

(Rom. 11:25, 1 Cor.12:1, 2 Cor.1:8, 1 Thess. 4:13)

Not being ignorant of the strategies and the deceptions of the devil is the core essence of a good defense against the enemy. American soldiers, facing the Germans on the European front in World War II, would have been ill-equipped if suddenly transported to the Pacific war with the entrenched Japanese in the dense jungles of Burma. The strategies and deceptions practiced by the devoutly fanatic Japanese troops were far different than those facing the sheer massive military might of the German war machine. The often out-numbered Japanese fought their jungle warfare with well-hidden snipers and clever booby-traps. Deception was a big part of their tactics of war.

The illustration is a simple one: to survive, a good soldier must know his enemy, how he thinks and how he is most likely to attack in any given situation. This is Paul’s warning to all believers. Don’t be spiritually ignorant of Satan’s devices, his strategies and deceptions, or he will definitely take advantage of you.



SATAN AS "THE TEMPTER"

"I SENT TO KNOW YOUR FAITH,
LEST BY SOME MEANS
THE TEMPTER HAD TEMPTED YOU,
AND OUR LABOR MIGHT BE IN VAIN."

1 Thess. 3:5



ENTICEMENT...
TEMPTATION...
ENTRAPMENT...
ENSNAREMENT...

OBJECTIVE:
THE TEMPTER
BEHIND YOU TO
DRAW YOU SPIRITUALLY

BACKWARD



SATAN AS "YOUR ADVERSARY"

"BE SOBER, BE VIGILANT;
BECAUSE YOUR ADVERSARY THE DEVIL
WALKS ABOUT LIKE ROARING LION,
SEEKING WHOM HE MAY DEVOUR."

1 Pet. 5:8

TRIBULATION...
PERSECUTION...
HINDRANCES...
OPPOSITION...



OBJECTIVE:
YOUR ADVERSARY
IN FRONT OF YOU TO HINDER
YOUR SPIRITUAL PROGRESS

FORWARD

We are going to examine Satan in the two primary roles in which he functions against the believer. He is both the tempter (1 Thess. 3:5) and our adversary (1 Pet. 5:8). Of his two modes of operation, that of the tempter and that of our adversary, the weight of scripture teaches us that Satan prefers his role as the tempter.

We can state that to be true based on the fact that it was in this chosen role that Satan sought to attack **BOTH** the “first man Adam” in the Garden as well as “the last Adam” in the wilderness, Jesus Christ (1 Cor. 15:45). Given his golden opportunity to bring down both “Adams”, Satan chose to use his role as the tempter.

We know well the story of the temptation of Adam and Eve in the Garden. Early on, in the introduction of this book, I stressed to you that it was God Himself who planted Adam and Eve in the midst of the Garden in which Satan, as the fallen serpent, was allowed to inhabit the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. It was from this tree of forbidden fruit that God allowed Adam and Eve to be tempted by the tempter. I also stressed to you that this was God, right from the beginning, testing the obedience of his creation, mankind. Satan, as the tempter, was the source of evil by which God tested the obedience of Adam and Eve.

Why is temptation so effective in the hands of Satan? Primarily because a large portion of God’s people have always shown a propensity for going spiritually backward rather than forward. Thus the old familiar saying, “the backslider at heart.” Consider this sad testimony God records of the backslidings of His people:

**“ OBEY MY VOICE, AND I WILL BE YOUR GOD, AND YOU SHALL BE MY PEOPLE.
AND WALK IN ALL THE WAYS THAT I HAVE COMMANDED YOU,
THAT IT MAY BE WELL WITH YOU.’ YET THEY DID NOT OBEY OR INCLINE THEIR EAR,
BUT FOLLOWED THE COUNSELS AND THE DICTATES OF THEIR EVIL HEARTS,
AND WENT BACKWARD AND NOT FORWARD.”**

Jer. 7:23-24

The primary cause of that trend to go backward spiritually is the function of Satan behind the scenes in his favorite role as the tempter. From this position, Satan uses a variety of forms of enticement, temptation, entrapment and ensnarement to capture the heart of the believer and draw him away from God. Thus the defeated believer becomes a P.O.W. who may indeed belong to God’s army of soldiers, but is held in captivity by the Devil and thereby rendered useless against the forces of darkness.

For the minority who, like Job, resist such obvious temptation and rather become known as those who shun evil (Job 1:8), Satan moves to yet another strategic position, that of his role as your adversary (1 Pet.5:8). From this forward position, Satan seeks to resist the dedicated believer's forward progress as a true follower of Christ by inducing waves of tribulation, persecution, hindrances and opposition to wear down the believer's desire to remain pleasing in God's sight through a life of dedicated service. Such was the testing of Job. Thus we find in scripture much needed words of encouragement such as Paul gives to the saints in his day:

**"THEREFORE, MY BELOVED BRETHREN,
BE STEADFAST, IMMOVABLE,
ALWAYS ABOUNDING IN THE WORK OF THE LORD,
KNOWING THAT YOUR LABOR IS
NOT IN VAIN IN THE LORD."**

1 Cor. 15:58

**"AND LET US NOT GROW WEARY
WHILE DOING GOOD,
FOR IN DUE SEASON WE SHALL REAP
IF WE DO NOT LOSE HEART."**

Gal. 6:9

**"BUT YOU , O MAN OF GOD...
PURSUE RIGHTEOUSNESS, GODLINESS,
FAITH, LOVE, PATIENCE, GENTLENESS.
FIGHT THE GOOD FIGHT OF FAITH..."**

1 Tim. 6:11-12

Let us now consider Satan in this dualistic role as the enemy of the Christian, and seek to grasp why God continues to allow him to function as the tempter and as our adversary.

First, let us consider

SATAN AS

"THE TEMPTER"

**"I SENT TO KNOW YOUR FAITH,
LEST BY SOME MEANS
THE TEMPTER HAD TEMPTED YOU,
AND OUR LABOR MIGHT BE IN VAIN."**

1 Thess. 3:5

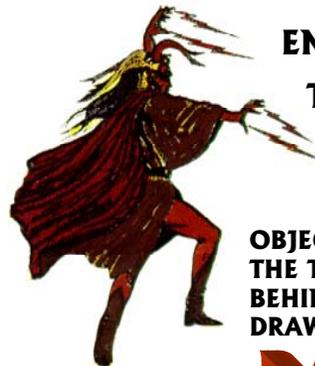
ENTICEMENT...

TEMPTATION...

ENTRAPMENT...

ENSNAREMENT...

**OBJECTIVE:
THE TEMPTER
BEHIND YOU TO
DRAW YOU SPIRITUALLY**



BACKWARD

THE PURPOSE OF TEMPTATION

“THEN JESUS WAS LED UP BY THE SPIRIT INTO THE WILDERNESS TO BE TEMPTED BY THE DEVIL... NOW WHEN THE TEMPTER CAME TO HIM, HE SAID...” Matt. 4:1-3

We have established that God ordained the testing of Adam and Eve by Satan in his role as the tempter.

THEY FAILED THE TEST.

Four thousand years later we have Jesus, as “the Last Adam” (1 Cor. 15:45), also being tested by God. Jesus was led up by the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted by the Devil.

JESUS PASSED THE TEST.

Now what of you and me? Are we, too, ordained by God to experience various tests by means of Satan as the tempter? Is God still testing the obedience of His people, or are we, as some suggest, just to hide behind the perfect obedience of Christ? Are there purposes of God yet to be achieved by the ongoing testing even of born-again believers in Christ? These are questions worthy of pondering. Consider this:

“BLESSED IS THE MAN WHO ENDURES TEMPTATION; FOR WHEN HE HAS BEEN PROVED, HE WILL RECEIVE THE CROWN OF LIFE WHICH THE LORD HAS PROMISED TO THOSE WHO LOVE HIM.”

Jas. 1:12

“BLESSED (HAPPY, TO BE ENVIED) IS THE MAN WHO IS PATIENT UNDER TRIAL AND STANDS UP UNDER TEMPTATION, FOR WHEN HE HAS STOOD THE TEST AND BEEN APPROVED, HE WILL RECEIVE [THE VICTOR'S] CROWN OF LIFE WHICH GOD HAS PROMISED TO THOSE WHO LOVE HIM.”

Jas. 1:12 Amplified Bible

We don't need to be a Sherlock Holmes to figure out what Satan's purpose is behind temptation. It is that we, like Adam and Eve, would fail the test from God. However, the passage above gives us God's purpose for temptation: It is that we would pass the test set before us. Notice clearly that temptation of the believer is stated to be **A TEST**. We should especially take note that this is a test of our love for God rather than God's love for us, and that passing that test of our love for God leads to a special reward, “the victor's crown of life.” Victory in what? Victory in this present warfare! Such specified rewards are set before the believer to create motivation to live for God in this present temporal creation. Keep in mind that such rewards will be given in the new creation to come.

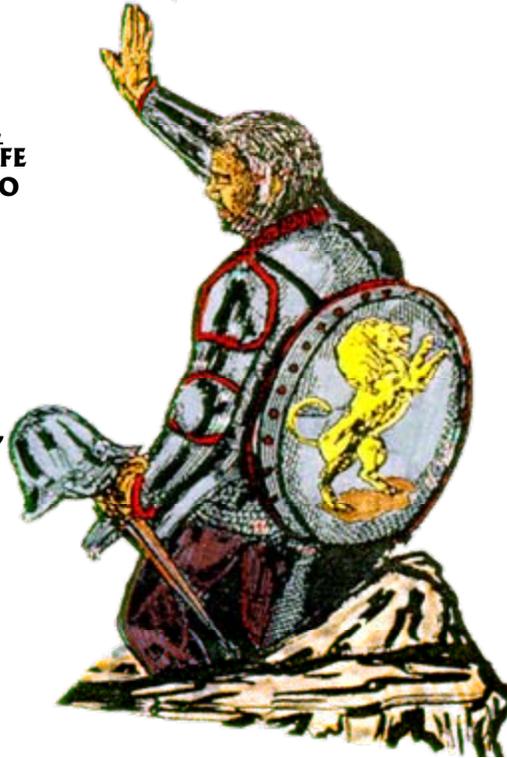
THE PURPOSE OF GOD IN TEMPTATION

**“BLESSED IS THE MAN WHO
ENDURES TEMPTATION;
FOR WHEN HE HAS BEEN PROVED,
HE WILL RECEIVE THE CROWN OF LIFE
WHICH THE LORD HAS PROMISED TO
THOSE WHO LOVE HIM.”**

Jas. 1:12

**“BLESSED (HAPPY, TO BE ENVIED)
IS THE MAN WHO IS
PATIENT UNDER TRIAL
AND STANDS UP UNDER TEMPTATION,
FOR WHEN HE HAS STOOD THE TEST
AND BEEN APPROVED,
HE WILL RECEIVE
[THE VICTOR'S] CROWN OF LIFE
WHICH GOD HAS PROMISED
TO THOSE WHO LOVE HIM.”**

Jas. 1:12 Amplified Bible



**“THEREFORE
LET HIM WHO
THINKS HE STANDS TAKE
HEED LEST HE FALL.**

**NO TEMPTATION
HAS OVERTAKEN YOU
EXCEPT SUCH AS IS
COMMON TO MAN;**

**BUT
GOD IS FAITHFUL,
WHO WILL NOT ALLOW YOU
TO BE TEMPTED BEYOND
WHAT YOU ARE ABLE,**

**BUT
WITH THE TEMPTATION
WILL ALSO MAKE
THE WAY OF ESCAPE,
THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE
TO BEAR IT.”**

1 Cor. 10:12-13

“...YOU MEANT EVIL AGAINST ME; BUT GOD MEANT IT FOR GOOD...” Gen. 50:20

This principle from Genesis gives understanding of the purpose of God in allowing the tempter into our lives.

Satan's purpose for temptation is the utter destruction of the believer. However, notice the limitation God has placed on temptation in 1 Cor. 10:12 in stating that God is faithful and will not allow you to be tempted beyond what you are able. The act of temptation is a tightly controlled test by God, not allowed to be as totally destructive as Satan might wish, but rather to be instructive for the one being tested. Thus the stated warning to all saints: Let him who thinks he stands take heed lest he fall. Presumption is also a deadly foe.

We must not underrate the power of temptation by being careless when confronted with it. Remember Adam and Eve.

The consequences of their failure were great even though God forgave them. God will limit the degree of temptation

Satan is allowed to use. Hear it well: temptation will not be greater than man is able to resist, but resist he must!

Notice the rest of the promise: but with the temptation (God) will also make the way of escape that you may be able to bear it. The way of escape is not God removing the temptation, but rather by enabling you to bear up under it.

It is not greater than you can bear. God's way of escape places a twofold responsibility on the believer:

**“THEREFORE (1) SUBMIT TO GOD. (2) RESIST THE DEVIL
AND HE WILL FLEE FROM YOU.”**

Jas. 4:7

First, we must submit to God. We see Jesus doing this very thing in the temptation in the Garden of Gethsemane:

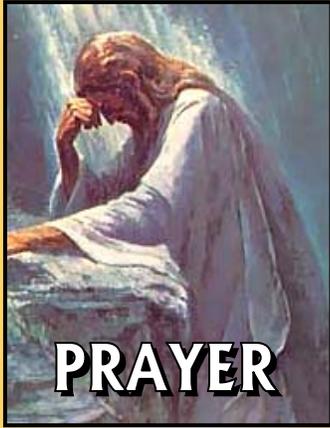
**“...HE KNELT DOWN AND PRAYED, SAYING, ‘FATHER, IF IT IS YOUR WILL,
TAKE THIS CUP AWAY FROM ME; NEVERTHELESS NOT MY WILL, BUT YOURS, BE DONE.’
THEN AN ANGEL APPEARED TO HIM FROM HEAVEN, STRENGTHENING HIM.”** Luke 22:41-43

What was the result of Jesus submitting to God's will instead of His own? God the Father sent an angel to Jesus to strengthen him! There is supernatural empowerment available to those who submit to God's will.

The second way of escape is to resist the devil and then he will flee from you. Take the time to read the temptation of Jesus in the wilderness (Matt. 4:1-11). In that account you will see Jesus resisted the devil by means of the Word of God. “It is written” is used by Jesus three times against Satan. What was the end result?

“THEN THE DEVIL LEFT HIM, AND BEHOLD, ANGELS CAME AND MINISTERED TO HIM.” Matt. 4:11

“SUBMIT TO GOD,



PRAYER

“...HE KNELT DOWN AND PRAYED, SAYING, ‘FATHER, IF IT IS YOUR WILL, TAKE THIS CUP AWAY FROM ME; NEVERTHELESS NOT MY WILL, BUT YOURS, BE DONE.’ THEN AN ANGEL APPEARED TO HIM FROM HEAVEN, STRENGTHENING HIM.”
Luke 22:41-43

THE
TWO FORMS
OF TEMPTATION
FOR THE BELIEVER ARE
THE SAME TWO
JESUS SUFFERED:



1. THE TEMPTATION
NOT TO
SUBMIT TO GOD...

(Luke 22:41-43)

2. THE TEMPTATION
NOT TO
RESIST THE DEVIL...

(Matt. 4:10-11)

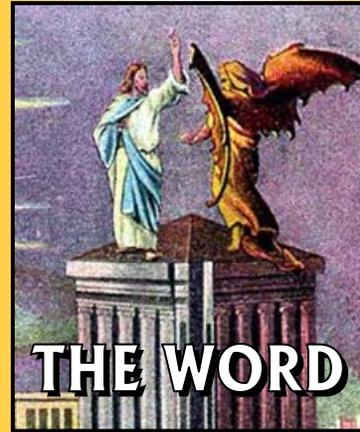
LIKE JESUS,
THE BELIEVER MUST
SUBMIT TO GOD
BY MEANS OF
PRAYER

(Eph. 6:18-armor of God)

THE BELIEVER MUST
RESIST THE DEVIL
BY MEANS OF
THE WORD

(Eph. 6:17-armor of God)

RESIST THE DEVIL...”



THE WORD

“THEN JESUS SAID TO HIM, ‘AWAY WITH YOU SATAN! FOR IT IS WRITTEN, ‘YOU SHALL WORSHIP THE LORD YOUR GOD, AND HIM ONLY SHALL YOU SERVE. THEN THE DEVIL LEFT HIM, AND BEHOLD, ANGELS CAME AND MINISTERED TO HIM.’”
Matt. 4:10-11

Spend sufficient time studying the opposite page. It is God's battle plan for the believer as it was for Jesus.

First of all, the act of submitting to God utilizes part of the armor of God, namely, prayer. The act of resisting the Devil also partakes of the same armor of God, the Word of God. These are part of the weapons of our warfare against temptation that are mighty in God for the pulling down of strongholds (2 Cor. 10:4).

Submitting to God means submitting to the will of God. It is imperative that we realize that Jesus was being tempted **NOT** to submit to God's expressed will for Him. Look at it carefully:

“...‘PRAY THAT YOU MAY NOT ENTER INTO TEMPTATION.’ HE KNELT DOWN AND PRAYED, SAYING, ‘FATHER, IF IT IS YOUR WILL, TAKE THIS CUP AWAY FROM ME; NEVERTHELESS NOT MY WILL, BUT YOURS, BE DONE.’ THEN AN ANGEL APPEARED TO HIM FROM HEAVEN, STRENGTHENING HIM. AND BEING IN AGONY, HE PRAYED MORE EARNESTLY. THEN HIS SWEAT BECAME LIKE GREAT DROPS OF BLOOD FALLING DOWN TO THE GROUND. WHEN HE ROSE UP FROM PRAYER, AND HAD COME TO HIS DISCIPLES...HE SAID TO THEM, ‘WHY DO YOU SLEEP? RISE AND PRAY, LEST YOU ENTER INTO TEMPTATION.’ ” Luke 22:39-47

We tend to dismiss any thought suggesting that Jesus was not in perfect harmony with the expressed will of God the Father. Yet, what else can be meant by this verse? Jesus is in great agony to the point of sweating great drops of blood as He struggles with submitting to God's will pertaining to the cross. Another passage along the same line:

“WHO, IN THE DAYS OF HIS FLESH, WHEN HE HAD OFFERED UP PRAYERS AND SUPPLICATIONS, WITH VEHEMENT CRIES AND TEARS TO HIM WHO WAS ABLE TO SAVE HIM FROM DEATH, AND WAS HEARD BECAUSE OF HIS GODLY FEAR, THOUGH HE WAS A SON, YET HE LEARNED OBEDIENCE BY THE THINGS WHICH HE SUFFERED. AND HAVING BEEN PERFECTED, HE BECAME THE AUTHOR OF ETERNAL SALVATION TO ALL WHO OBEY HIM.”

Heb. 5:7-9

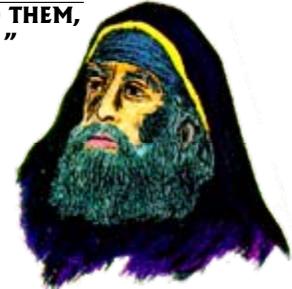
What is at stake for Jesus in this temptation? That of becoming the author of eternal salvation. How was Jesus perfected? The scripture is clear in saying that He learned obedience by the things which He suffered. He said no to His own will and yes to the will of the Father. In this act of submission, He became the author of eternal salvation. What was the cost? It was intense agony in prayer to the point of sweating great drops of blood.

**“...‘PRAY THAT YOU MAY NOT ENTER INTO TEMPTATION.’ HE KNELT DOWN AND PRAYED,
SAYING, ‘FATHER, IF IT IS YOUR WILL, TAKE THIS CUP AWAY FROM ME;
NEVERTHELESS NOT MY WILL, BUT YOURS, BE DONE.’**
**THEN AN ANGEL APPEARED TO HIM FROM HEAVEN, STRENGTHENING HIM.
AND BEING IN AGONY, HE PRAYED MORE EARNESTLY.
THEN HIS SWEAT BECAME LIKE GREAT DROPS OF BLOOD FALLING DOWN TO THE GROUND.
WHEN HE ROSE UP FROM PRAYER, AND HAD COME TO HIS DISCIPLES...HE SAID TO THEM,
‘WHY DO YOU SLEEP? RISE AND PRAY, LEST YOU ENTER INTO TEMPTATION.’ ”**

Luke 22:39-47

**“...LET US LAY ASIDE...THE SIN WHICH SO EASILY ENSNARES US...
LOOKING UNTO JESUS,
THE AUTHOR AND FINISHER OF OUR FAITH...
CONSIDER HIM WHO ENDURED...
LEST YOU BECOME WEARY AND DISCOURAGED IN YOUR SOULS,
FOR YOU HAVE NOT YET RESISTED TO BLOODSHED,
STRIVING AGAINST SIN.”**

Heb. 12:1-4



Paul the apostle is writing to believers in this passage from Hebrews. They are a people beset by their own sins which Paul categorizes as being the sin which so easily ensnares. There is little resistance taking place before falling into the temptation to sin. Paul makes a direct reference to the testimony of Jesus in His temptation as His sweat became like great drops of blood falling to the ground. Paul admonished these failing believers that they have not yet resisted to bloodshed striving against sin. Jesus becomes the example of how to resist temptation. Likewise the apostle Peter uses a similar example to believers:

**“...SINCE CHRIST SUFFERED FOR US IN THE FLESH,
ARM YOURSELVES ALSO WITH THE SAME MIND,
FOR HE WHO HAS SUFFERED IN THE FLESH HAS CEASED FROM SIN.
THAT HE NO LONGER SHOULD LIVE THE REST OF HIS TIME IN THE FLESH FOR THE LUSTS OF MEN,
BUT FOR THE WILL OF GOD. FOR WE HAVE SPENT ENOUGH OF OUR PAST LIFETIME
IN DOING THE WILL OF THE GENTILES...”**

1 Pet. 4:1-3



**“...LET US LAY ASIDE...
THE SIN WHICH
SO EASILY ENSNARES US...
LOOKING UNTO JESUS,
THE AUTHOR AND FINISHER
OF OUR FAITH...
 CONSIDER HIM WHO ENDURED...
 LEST YOU BECOME WEARY AND
 DISCOURAGED IN YOUR SOULS,
FOR YOU HAVE NOT YET
RESISTED TO BLOODSHED,
STRIVING AGAINST SIN.”
 Heb. 12:1-4**

**“...SINCE CHRIST SUFFERED
FOR US IN THE FLESH,
ARM YOURSELVES ALSO
WITH THE SAME MIND,
FOR HE WHO HAS SUFFERED
IN THE FLESH HAS CEASED FROM SIN.
 THAT HE NO LONGER SHOULD LIVE THE
 REST OF HIS TIME IN THE FLESH FOR THE
 LUSTS OF MEN, BUT FOR THE WILL OF
 GOD. FOR WE HAVE SPENT ENOUGH OF
 OUR PAST LIFETIME IN DOING THE WILL
 OF THE GENTILES...” 1 Pet. 4:1-3**



The two verses above from Paul and Peter are very important for us in our conquest of temptation. Both speak of the need to consider Jesus as the pattern for combating temptation.

Ceasing from sin requires suffering like our Master endured.

Remember, temptation is a test of the level of our love for God.

It was true of Jesus, and it is true of us as well:

**“FOR WHEN WE WERE STILL WITHOUT
 STRENGTH, IN DUE TIME CHRIST DIED
 FOR THE UNGODLY. FOR SCARCELY FOR
 A RIGHTEOUS MAN WILL ONE DIE;
 YET PERHAPS FOR A GOOD MAN
 SOMEONE WOULD EVEN DARE TO DIE.
 BUT GOD DEMONSTRATES
HIS OWN LOVE TOWARD US,
IN THAT WHILE WE WERE STILL SINNERS,
CHRIST DIED FOR US.”**

Rom. 5:6-8



**“BLESSED (HAPPY, TO BE ENVIED)
 IS THE MAN WHO IS
 PATIENT UNDER TRIAL AND
 STANDS UP UNDER TEMPTATION,
 FOR WHEN HE HAS STOOD THE TEST
 AND BEEN APPROVED,
 HE WILL RECEIVE
 [THE VICTOR'S] CROWN OF LIFE
 WHICH GOD HAS PROMISED
 TO THOSE WHO LOVE HIM.”**

Jas. 1:12 Amplified Bible

THE “HIGH” PURPOSE OF GOD FOR THE TEMPTATION OF JESUS

1

**“THEN JESUS WAS LED UP BY THE SPIRIT INTO THE WILDERNESS
TO BE TEMPTED BY THE DEVIL...
NOW WHEN THE TEMPTER CAME TO HIM, HE SAID...”**

Matt. 4:1-3

2

**“FOR WE DO NOT HAVE
A HIGH PRIEST WHO CANNOT
SYMPATHIZE WITH OUR
WEAKNESSES,
BUT WAS IN ALL POINTS
TEMPTED AS WE ARE,
YET WITHOUT SIN.”**

Heb. 4:15



3

**“...THAT HE MIGHT BE A
MERCIFUL AND FAITHFUL
HIGH PRIEST IN THINGS
PERTAINING TO GOD...
FOR IN THAT HE HIMSELF
HAS SUFFERED,
BEING TEMPTED,
HE IS ABLE TO AID THOSE
WHO ARE TEMPTED.”**

Heb. 2: 17-18

We have seen that Jesus was sent to earth by the Father to be the last Adam who would become the author of eternal salvation by means of passing the test of temptation in the Garden of Gethsemane. He embraces the agony of the cross, as the sin-bearer, for the sins of all under the curse of the failure of the first Adam. Where the first Adam failed, the last Adam would succeed:

“...‘THE FIRST MAN ADAM BECAME A LIVING BEING.’ THE LAST ADAM BECAME A LIFE-GIVING SPIRIT.” 1 Cor. 15:45

“FOR AS BY ONE MAN’S DISOBEDIENCE MANY WERE MADE SINNERS, SO ALSO BY ONE MAN’S OBEDIENCE MANY WILL BE MADE RIGHTEOUS...SO THAT AS SIN REIGNED IN DEATH, EVEN SO GRACE MIGHT REIGN THROUGH RIGHTEOUSNESS TO ETERNAL LIFE THROUGH JESUS CHRIST OUR LORD.” Rom. 5:19, 21

As man, Jesus became the perfect role model for defeating temptation: (1) through suffering in submitting to God’s will, and (2) effectively using the Word of God in resisting the devil’s temptation. However, there is a **HIGHER** purpose for the temptation of Jesus. He came as the Last Adam, but He rose from the dead as the believer’s High Priest. In the book of Hebrews Paul sets forth this truth about Jesus as the main point of his epistle:

**“NOW THIS IS THE MAIN POINT OF THE THINGS WE ARE SAYING:
WE HAVE SUCH A HIGH PRIEST,
WHO IS SEATED AT THE RIGHT HAND OF THE THRONE OF THE MAJESTY IN THE HEAVENS.
A MINISTER OF THE SANCTUARY AND OF THE TRUE TABERNACLE WHICH THE LORD ERECTED...
NOW HE HAS OBTAINED A MORE EXCELLENT MINISTRY, INASMUCH AS HE IS ALSO
MEDIATOR OF A BETTER COVENANT, WHICH IS ESTABLISHED ON BETTER PROMISES.”**

Heb. 8:1-2, 6

Not only were we given the pattern of Jesus as a role model against the temptation of Satan, but **PRESENTLY** Jesus functions in a new ministry, as our High Priest, in which He is able to aid those who are being tempted. How is He able to give aid to those being tempted? Because He was tempted in all points as we are, yet without sin. Don’t let this revelation escape you dear reader! God is not only setting before us Jesus as a pattern to follow against the temptation of Satan, but He is also functioning as minister of the sanctuary and mediator of a better covenant to give aid to those who are being tempted. What kind of aid does He give? The same kind He received Himself twice while being tempted. He was strengthened by angels sent from the Father (Luke 22:43 and Matt. 4:10-11)

“ARE THEY NOT ALL MINISTERING SPIRITS SENT FORTH TO MINISTER FOR THOSE WHO WILL INHERIT SALVATION?”

Heb. 1:14

“HE WHO DWELLS IN THE SECRET PLACE OF THE MOST HIGH SHALL ABIDE UNDER THE SHADOW OF THE ALMIGHTY. I WILL SAY OF THE LORD, ‘HE IS MY REFUGE AND MY FORTRESS; MY GOD, IN HIM I WILL TRUST.’ SURELY HE SHALL DELIVER YOU FROM THE SNARE OF THE FOWLER AND FROM THE PERILOUS PESTILENCE. HE SHALL COVER YOU WITH HIS FEATHERS, AND UNDER HIS WINGS YOU SHALL TAKE REFUGE; HIS TRUTH SHALL BE YOUR SHIELD AND BUCKLER. YOU SHALL NOT BE AFRAID OF THE TERROR BY NIGHT, NOR OF THE ARROW THAT FLIES BY DAY, NOR OF THE PESTILENCE THAT WALKS IN DARKNESS, NOR OF THE DESTRUCTION THAT LAYS WASTE AT NOONDAY. A THOUSAND MAY FALL AT YOUR SIDE, AND TEN THOUSAND AT YOUR RIGHT HAND; BUT IT SHALL NOT COME NEAR YOU.

GOD’S PROTECTIVE HEDGE AROUND THE BELIEVER



“THE ANGEL OF THE LORD ENCAMPS ALL AROUND THOSE WHO FEAR HIM, AND DELIVERS THEM.”

Ps. 34:7

ONLY WITH YOUR EYES SHALL YOU LOOK, AND SEE THE REWARD OF THE WICKED. BECAUSE YOU HAVE MADE THE LORD, WHO IS MY REFUGE, EVEN THE MOST HIGH, YOUR DWELLING PLACE, NO EVIL SHALL BEFALL YOU, NOR SHALL ANY PLAGUE COME NEAR YOUR DWELLING; FOR HE SHALL GIVE HIS ANGELS CHARGE OVER YOU, TO KEEP YOU IN ALL YOUR WAYS. IN THEIR HANDS THEY SHALL BEAR YOU UP, LEST YOU DASH YOUR FOOT AGAINST A STONE. YOU SHALL TREAD UPON THE LION AND THE COBRA, THE YOUNG LION AND THE SERPENT YOU SHALL TRAMPLE UNDERFOOT. ‘BECAUSE HE HAS SET HIS LOVE UPON ME, THEREFORE I WILL DELIVER HIM; I WILL SET HIM ON HIGH, BECAUSE HE HAS KNOWN MY NAME. HE SHALL CALL UPON ME, AND I WILL ANSWER HIM; I WILL BE WITH HIM IN TROUBLE; I WILL DELIVER HIM AND HONOR HIM. WITH LONG LIFE I WILL SATISFY HIM, AND SHOW HIM MY SALVATION.’ ”

Ps. 91:1-16

Generally, we tend to think very little about angelic beings. Perhaps it is that worldly philosophy of “out of sight, out of mind” at work. However, God’s people are to be mindful to walk by faith and not by sight (2 Cor. 5:7). Therefore God, very much, wants us to cultivate the reality of the present invisible realm of angels that surround God’s people. Remember, this is the protective hedge God places around His people:

“THE ANGEL OF THE LORD ENCAMPS ALL AROUND THOSE WHO FEAR HIM, AND DELIVERS THEM.”

Ps. 34:7

A vivid account of that act of encampment is found in this story of Elisha and his servant:

**“AND WHEN THE SERVANT OF THE MAN OF GOD AROSE EARLY AND WENT OUT,
THERE WAS AN ARMY, SURROUNDING THE CITY WITH HORSES AND CHARIOTS.
AND HIS SERVANT SAID TO HIM, ‘ALAS, MY MASTER! WHAT SHALL WE DO?’
SO HE ANSWERED, ‘DO NOT FEAR,
FOR THOSE WHO ARE WITH US ARE MORE THAN THOSE WHO ARE WITH THEM.’
AND ELISHA PRAYED, AND SAID, ‘LORD, I PRAY, OPEN HIS EYES THAT HE MAY SEE.’
THEN THE LORD OPENED THE EYES OF THE YOUNG MAN, AND HE SAW. AND BEHOLD,
THE MOUNTAIN WAS FULL OF HORSES AND CHARIOTS OF FIRE ALL AROUND ELISHA...”**

2 Kings 6:15-18

It is spiritually healthy for the believer to cultivate the truth that there are more faithful angels still under God’s control than the unfaithful one-third which rebelled with Satan. Such faithful angels have a present ministry on earth:

**“ARE THEY NOT ALL MINISTERING SPIRITS SENT FORTH
TO MINISTER FOR THOSE WHO WILL INHERIT SALVATION?”**

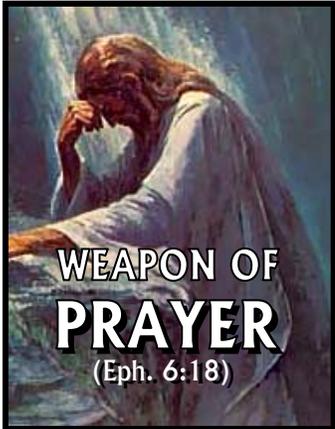
Heb. 1:14

Think of it: God presently commissions His angels to be ministering spirits sent forth to minister on behalf of those who will inherit salvation. In the late 70’s there was a silly, groundless, charismatic doctrine circulating among the Body of Christ encouraging saints, under the banner of faith, to command angels to do their bidding in any given situation. That is unsound doctrine. The believer has not been given charge of God’s angels. However, don’t be guilty of throwing the baby out along with the bath water. Although redeemed mankind does not have the power to command the disbursing of angels, God does!

**“ARE THEY NOT ALL MINISTERING SPIRITS SENT FORTH
TO MINISTER FOR THOSE WHO WILL INHERIT SALVATION?”**

Heb. 1:14

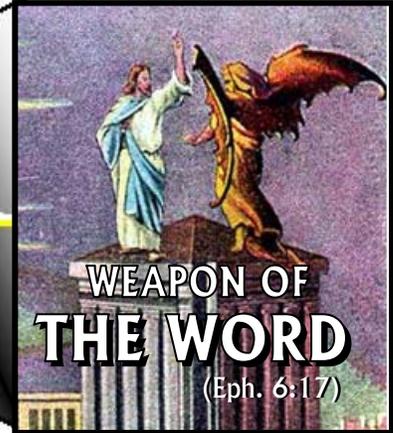
**“...THEN AN ANGEL
APPEARED TO HIM FROM
HEAVEN,
STRENGTHENING HIM.”**
Luke 22:43



**THE TEMPTATION
OF JESUS
IN THE GARDEN
OF GETHSEMANE**
(Luke 22:39-43)



**“...THEN THE DEVIL LEFT HIM,
AND BEHOLD,
ANGELS CAME AND
MINISTERED TO HIM.”**
Matt. 4:11



**THE TEMPTATION
OF JESUS
IN THE
WILDERNESS**
(Matt. 4:1-11)

**“...WHAT IS
THE EXCEEDING GREATNESS
OF HIS POWER
TOWARD US WHO BELIEVE,
ACCORDING TO THE WORKING
OF HIS MIGHTY POWER...”**
Eph. 1:19

When scripture speaks of Jesus being able to aid those who are tempted, it takes place literally by God sending forth His angels to strengthen the believer in the exact same manner that God did on behalf of Jesus in His times of suffering in resisting temptation. Angels were sent forth by God the Father to strengthen Him in His hour of trial. Therefore, Jesus admonished His disciples to pray that they may not enter into the stronghold of Satan's temptation (Luke 22:40). Prayer, listed among the armor of God, (Eph. 6:18), is a mighty weapon of our warfare simply because it leads to the supernatural strengthening of those being tempted by means of angels sent forth by God. Although this is not an instance of being under temptation, consider how Daniel was strengthened by the physical touch, and by the words spoken of an angelic being sent to him by God:

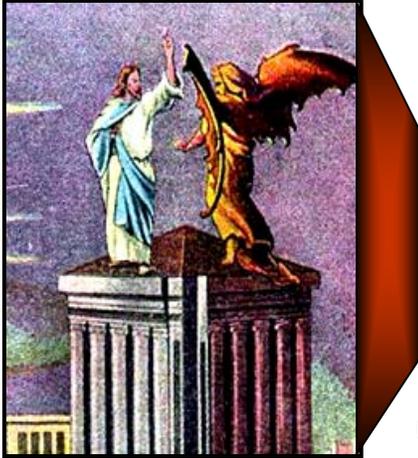
**“ ‘...BECAUSE OF THE VISION MY SORROWS HAVE OVERWHELMED ME, AND I HAVE RETAINED NO STRENGTH...
...NO STRENGTH REMAINS IN ME NOW...THEN AGAIN, THE ONE HAVING THE LIKENESS OF A MAN
TOUCHED ME AND STRENGTHENED ME.’
AND HE SAID, 'O MAN GREATLY BELOVED, FEAR NOT! PEACE BE TO YOU;
BE STRONG, YES, BE STRONG!' SO WHEN HE SPOKE TO ME I WAS STRENGTHENED,
AND SAID, 'LET MY LORD SPEAK,
FOR YOU HAVE STRENGTHENED ME.'”**

Dan. 10:16-19

Consider carefully what is depicted on the opposite page pertaining to the two recorded events of the temptation of Jesus (Luke 22:43 and Matt. 4:10-11). They are a foreshadowing of the two types of temptation that every believer faces. As stated earlier, those temptations are summarized under the banner of **SUBMIT TO GOD** and **RESIST THE DEVIL**. (Jas. 4:7). Jesus was tempted in the Garden of Gethsemane to not submit to God's will, and He was tempted in the wilderness to not resist the Devil. However, in a near state of hunger-unto-death, Jesus rose up against the Devil three times using the Word of God (the Sword of the Spirit) to cause the devil to flee from Him. This is important: In both temptations, God sent angels to strengthen Jesus.

Note carefully the weapons of warfare Jesus used in His two bouts with temptation to defeat the devil. They were the power derived from **PRAYER TO GOD** and the power of speaking **THE WORD OF GOD**. These are two of the seven pieces of the armor of God given to the believer to be able to stand against all the wiles of the devil (Eph. 6:11). They worked for Jesus, and will work for every follower of Christ if we too will warfare like the Master!

THE TEMPTATION OF JESUS IN THE WILDERNESS



THE THREE FORMS OF TEMPTATION COMMON TO MAN

“THEN JESUS WAS LED UP BY THE SPIRIT INTO THE WILDERNESS TO BE TEMPTED BY THE DEVIL. AND WHEN HE HAD FASTED FORTY DAYS AND FORTY NIGHTS, AFTERWARD HE WAS HUNGRY. NOW WHEN THE TEMPTER CAME TO HIM, HE SAID,

1 → ‘IF YOU ARE THE SON OF GOD,
COMMAND THAT THESE STONES BECOME BREAD.’
BUT HE ANSWERED AND SAID,

‘IT IS WRITTEN,
‘MAN SHALL NOT LIVE BY BREAD ALONE,
BUT BY EVERY WORD THAT PROCEEDS FROM THE MOUTH OF GOD. ’

THEN THE DEVIL TOOK HIM UP INTO THE HOLY CITY,
SET HIM ON THE PINNACLE OF THE TEMPLE, AND SAID TO HIM,

2 → ‘IF YOU ARE THE SON OF GOD,
THROW YOURSELF DOWN. FOR IT IS WRITTEN:
‘HE SHALL GIVE HIS ANGELS CHARGE OVER YOU,’
AND, ‘IN THEIR HANDS THEY SHALL BEAR YOU UP,
LEST YOU DASH YOUR FOOT AGAINST A STONE.’

JESUS SAID TO HIM, ‘IT IS WRITTEN AGAIN,
‘YOU SHALL NOT TEMPT THE LORD YOUR GOD. ’

3 → AGAIN,
THE DEVIL TOOK HIM UP ON AN EXCEEDINGLY HIGH MOUNTAIN, AND
SHOWED HIM ALL THE KINGDOMS OF THE WORLD AND THEIR GLORY.
AND HE SAID TO HIM, ‘ALL THESE THINGS I WILL GIVE YOU
IF YOU WILL FALL DOWN AND WORSHIP ME.’

THEN JESUS SAID TO HIM, ‘AWAY WITH YOU, SATAN!
FOR IT IS WRITTEN,
YOU SHALL WORSHIP THE LORD YOUR GOD,
AND HIM ONLY YOU SHALL SERVE. ’

THEN THE DEVIL LEFT HIM, AND BEHOLD,
ANGELS CAME AND MINISTERED TO HIM.”

Matt. 4:1-11

**“THAT WHICH HAS BEEN IS WHAT WILL BE, THAT WHICH IS DONE IS WHAT WILL BE DONE,
AND THERE IS NOTHING NEW UNDER THE SUN.
IS THERE ANYTHING OF WHICH IT MAY BE SAID, ‘SEE, THIS IS NEW’?
IT HAS ALREADY BEEN IN ANCIENT TIMES BEFORE US.”** Eccl. 1:9-10

What Solomon states above is a principle that very much describes the workings of Satan in temptation. He repeats the same pattern over and over. He used it against Adam and Eve in ancient times before us. He used it again on Jesus in the wilderness, and he is presently using it against believer and unbeliever alike. I am referring to what the apostle John lists as all that is in the world:

**“...ALL THAT IS IN THE WORLD -- THE LUST OF THE FLESH, THE LUST OF THE EYES, AND THE PRIDE OF LIFE --
IS NOT OF THE FATHER BUT IS OF THE WORLD...”**

1 John 2:15-16

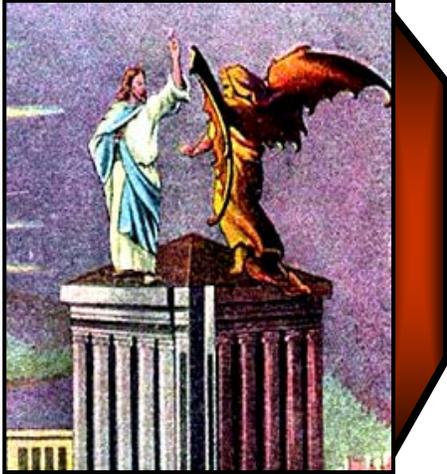
Read the Genesis account of Eve's fall to temptation. Her downfall came in three areas: (1) the tree was good for food (the lust of the flesh), (2) the tree was pleasant to the eyes (lust of the eyes), (3) the tree was desirable to make one wise (the pride of life).

Jesus was tempted in the same three areas: (1) after fasting 40 days He was hungry, so Satan tempted Him to turn stones into bread (lust of the flesh), (2) Satan baited Him to throw Himself down from the temple to prove He was the Son of God (the pride of life), (3) Satan showed Him all the kingdoms of the world and their glory which he would give to Jesus (the lust of the eyes).

Now, the apostle John speaks to all Christians pertaining to all that is in the world and states that the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life are things not stemming from God the Father, but rather are the things that comprise this present world of lusts destined to pass away. It is only the one who does the will of God who will abide forever (1 Jn. 2:17).

Now we can see why scripture teaches that no temptation has overtaken you except such as is common to man (1 Cor. 10:13). We can also see how Jesus was tempted in all points as we are (Heb. 4:15). This is the bait that Satan has always used, and continues to use in his role as the tempter. We shall speak more of these three when we reach the subject of “the enemy in which we live”, this present evil world guided by Satan.

**THE TEMPTATION
OF JESUS
IN THE WILDERNESS**



**THE WEAPON OF
THE WORD
IN RESISTING THE DEVIL**

“...IT IS WRITTEN.” Matt. 4:4

“...IT IS WRITTEN.” Matt. 4:6

“...IT IS WRITTEN.” Matt. 4:7

“...IT IS WRITTEN.” Matt. 4:10

**“AND
TAKE...
THE
SWORD
OF
THE SPIRIT
WHICH IS
THE WORD
OF GOD...”**
Eph. 6:17



Jesus told His disciples that all authority has been given to Him in heaven and on earth (Matt. 28:18). The greatest means by which He expressed that authority was through **THE WORD OF GOD**. In the Matthew 4 account of the temptation of Jesus, we find Him repeating to Satan time and again the words, **IT IS WRITTEN**. It worked so effectively against Satan that the devil tried it himself against Jesus (Matt. 4:6). Satan did not misquote the Word of God, but rather sought to misapply what it said under the authoritative banner of it is written. Jesus countered with a higher law saying that it is written again, you shall not tempt the Lord your God (Matt. 4:7). Let us be well aware that Satan knows how to utilize what is written in God's Word even against God's zealous people. Misapplication of the Word of God is a big part of his wiley deception. Remember Paul's warnings:

“NOW THE SPIRIT EXPRESSLY SAYS THAT IN LATTER TIMES SOME WILL DEPART FROM THE FAITH, GIVING HEED TO DECEIVING SPIRITS AND DOCTRINES OF DEMONS, SPEAKING LIES IN HYPOCRISY...” 1 Tim. 4:1-2

“PREACH THE WORD!...FOR THE TIME WILL COME WHEN THEY WILL NOT ENDURE SOUND DOCTRINE... THEY WILL HEAP UP FOR THEMSELVES TEACHERS, AND THEY WILL TURN THEIR EARS AWAY FROM THE TRUTH, AND BE TURNED ASIDE TO FABLES.” 2 Tim. 4:1-4

Satan loves to take sound doctrine and turn it into doctrine that sounds good. It is true that we are to resist the devil with truth as it is written in God's Word, but it must be a well-tested balanced truth as taught to us by the Spirit of God who authored the Word of God. Consider this admonition:

“NOW WE HAVE RECEIVED, NOT THE SPIRIT OF THE WORLD, BUT THE SPIRIT WHO IS FROM GOD, THAT WE MIGHT KNOW THE THINGS THAT HAVE BEEN FREELY GIVEN TO US BY GOD. THESE THINGS WE SPEAK, NOT IN WORDS WHICH MAN'S WISDOM TEACHES BUT WHICH THE HOLY SPIRIT TEACHES, COMPARING SPIRITUAL THINGS WITH SPIRITUAL.” 1 Cor. 2:12-13

Is that not what Jesus did Himself in countering Satan's use of it is written with a higher principle of it is written again? Is that not the essence of comparing spiritual things with spiritual? (1 Cor. 2:13). The armor of God needed to effectively resist the devil in a manner that will make him flee is indeed the sword of the Spirit-the Word of God. This was Jesus' chosen resistance to Satan: it is written. It was Paul's basis for exercising all authority as an apostle of Jesus Christ:

“FOR WHAT DOES THE SCRIPTURE SAY?” Rom. 4:3

Christian: It must become the primary source of our resistance of Satan as well.



“...YOU MEANT
EVIL AGAINST ME;”

REFERENCE GUIDE SUMMARIZING

“...BY SOME MEANS THE TEMPTER HAD TEMPTED YOU,”

1. TEMPTATION IS A TEST OF OUR LOVE FOR GOD:

“BLESSED (HAPPY, TO BE ENVIED) IS THE MAN WHO IS PATIENT UNDER TRIAL AND STANDS UP UNDER TEMPTATION, FOR WHEN HE HAS STOOD THE TEST AND BEEN APPROVED, HE WILL RECEIVE [THE VICTOR'S] CROWN OF LIFE WHICH GOD HAS PROMISED TO THOSE WHO LOVE HIM.”

Jas. 1:12 Amplified Bible

2. EVEN JESUS WAS SUBJECTED TO TEMPTATION:

“THEN JESUS WAS LED UP BY THE SPIRIT INTO THE WILDERNESS TO BE TEMPTED BY THE DEVIL... NOW WHEN THE TEMPTER CAME TO HIM...”

Matt. 4:1-3

“FOR WE DO NOT HAVE A HIGH PRIEST WHO CANNOT SYMPATHIZE WITH OUR WEAKNESSES, BUT WAS IN ALL POINTS TEMPTED AS WE ARE...”

Heb. 4:15

3. WHY JESUS WAS ALLOWED TO BE TEMPTED:

“...THAT HE MIGHT BE A MERCIFUL AND FAITHFUL HIGH PRIEST IN THINGS PERTAINING TO GOD... FOR IN THAT HE HIMSELF HAS SUFFERED, BEING TEMPTED, HE IS ABLE TO AID THOSE WHO ARE TEMPTED.”

Heb. 2: 17-18

4. HOW JESUS WAS AIDED IN TEMPTATION:

“...THEN AN ANGEL APPEARED TO HIM FROM HEAVEN, STRENGTHENING HIM.”

Luke 22:43

“...THEN THE DEVIL LEFT HIM, AND BEHOLD, ANGELS CAME AND MINISTERED TO HIM.”

Matt. 4:11

5. HOW THE BELIEVER IS STRENGTHENED BY ANGELS:

“ARE THEY NOT ALL MINISTERING SPIRITS SENT FORTH TO MINISTER FOR THOSE WHO WILL INHERIT SALVATION?”

Heb. 1:14

“AND I HAVE RETAINED NO STRENGTH...NO STRENGTH REMAINS IN ME NOW...THEN AGAIN, THE ONE HAVING THE LIKENESS OF A MAN TOUCHED ME AND STRENGTHENED ME. AND HE SAID, 'O MAN GREATLY BELOVED, FEAR NOT! PEACE BE TO YOU; BE STRONG, YES, BE STRONG!' SO WHEN HE SPOKE TO ME I WAS STRENGTHENED, AND SAID, 'LET MY LORD SPEAK, FOR YOU HAVE STRENGTHENED ME.'”

Dan. 10:16-19

6. PROTECTIVE ANGELIC HEDGE AROUND THE BELIEVER:

“THE ANGEL OF THE LORD ENCAMPS ALL AROUND THOSE WHO FEAR HIM, AND DELIVERS THEM.”

Ps 34:7

“FOR HE SHALL GIVE HIS ANGELS CHARGE OVER YOU, TO KEEP YOU IN ALL YOUR WAYS. IN THEIR HANDS THEY SHALL BEAR YOU UP, LEST YOU DASH YOUR FOOT AGAINST A STONE.”

Ps. 91:11-12

“...MY SERVANT JOB...A BLAMELESS AND UPRIGHT MAN, ONE WHO FEARS GOD AND SHUNS EVIL...SATAN ANSWERED... 'HAVE YOU NOT MADE A HEDGE AROUND HIM, AROUND HIS HOUSEHOLD, AND AROUND ALL THAT HE HAS ON EVERY SIDE? YOU HAVE BLESSED THE WORK OF HIS HANDS, AND HIS POSSESSIONS HAVE INCREASED IN THE LAND.' ”

Job 1:8-10

**BUT GOD MEANT
IT FOR GOOD..."**

Gen. 50:20



THE PURPOSES OF GOD IN TEMPTATION

AND OUR LABOR MIGHT BE IN VAIN" 1 Thess. 3:5

7. TWO TYPES OF TEMPTATION RECORDED OF JESUS:

1) TO NOT SUBMIT TO GOD'S WILL:

"...HE KNELT DOWN AND PRAYED, SAYING, 'FATHER, IF IT IS YOUR WILL, TAKE THIS CUP AWAY FROM ME; NEVERTHELESS, NOT MY WILL, BUT YOURS, BE DONE.' THEN AN ANGEL APPEARED TO HIM FROM HEAVEN, STRENGTHENING HIM. AND BEING IN AGONY, HE PRAYED MORE EARNESTLY. THEN HIS SWEAT BECAME LIKE GREAT DROPS OF BLOOD... AND HAD COME TO HIS DISCIPLES...HE SAID TO THEM...

RISE AND PRAY, LEST YOU ENTER INTO TEMPTATION.' " Luke 22:39-47

2) TO NOT RESIST THE WILL OF THE DEVIL:

"...AND HE SAID TO HIM, 'ALL THESE THINGS I WILL GIVE YOU IF YOU WILL FALL DOWN AND WORSHIP ME.' THEN JESUS SAID TO HIM, 'AWAY WITH YOU, SATAN! FOR IT IS WRITTEN, 'YOU SHALL WORSHIP THE LORD YOUR GOD,

AND HIM ONLY YOU SHALL SERVE.'" THEN THE DEVIL LEFT HIM, AND BEHOLD, ANGELS CAME AND MINISTERED TO HIM." Matt. 4:1-11

8. SAME TWO AREAS OF TEMPTATION FOR THE BELIEVER:

" (1) SUBMIT TO GOD and (2) RESIST THE DEVIL, AND HE WILL FLEE FROM YOU." Jas. 4:7

9. SAME TWO PIECES OF THE ARMOR OF GOD NEEDED:

"PUT ON THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD, THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO STAND AGAINST ALL THE WILES OF THE DEVIL...TAKE...

(1) THE SWORD OF THE SPIRIT WHICH IS THE WORD OF GOD;

(2) PRAYING ALWAYS WITH ALL MANNER OF PRAYER IN THE SPIRIT..."

Eph. 6:10-11,17-18

10. SATAN USED THE SAME THREE TYPES OF TEMPTATION AGAINST ADAM AND EVE, AGAINST JESUS, AND IS PRESENTLY USING THEM AGAINST THE BELIEVER IN CHRIST:

EVE'S TEMPTATION CAME IN SAME THREE AREAS; "...THE TREE WAS GOOD FOR FOOD," (LUST OF THE FLESH), IT WAS "...PLEASANT TO THE EYES," (LUST OF THE EYES), AND "...DESIRABLE TO MAKE ONE WISE," (PRIDE OF LIFE). (see Gen. 3:6)

JESUS WAS TEMPTED IN THE SAME AREAS; "...HE FASTED FORTY DAYS...AFTERWARD HE WAS HUNGRY...THE TEMPTER CAME TO HIM...

'IF YOU ARE THE SON OF GOD, COMMAND THAT THESE STONES BECOME BREAD' (LUST OF THE FLESH). ...

THEN THE DEVIL TOOK HIM UP...ON THE TEMPLE, AND SAID TO HIM, 'IF YOU ARE THE SON OF GOD, THROW YOURSELF DOWN.

FOR IT IS WRITTEN: "HE SHALL GIVE HIS ANGELS CHARGE OVER YOU..." ' (PRIDE OF LIFE).' AGAIN THE DEVIL TOOK HIM UP...

AND SHOWED HIM ALL THE KINGDOMS OF THE WORLD AND THEIR GLORY" (LUST OF THE EYES). (see Matt. 4:1-11).

"DO NOT LOVE THE WORLD OR THE THINGS IN THE WORLD...

FOR ALL THAT IS IN THE WORLD --

THE LUST OF THE FLESH, THE LUST OF THE EYES,

AND THE PRIDE OF LIFE -- IS NOT OF THE FATHER BUT IS OF THE WORLD. AND THE WORLD IS PASSING AWAY, AND THE LUST OF IT; BUT HE WHO DOES THE WILL OF GOD ABIDES FOREVER."

1 John 2:15-17

SATAN AS "THE TEMPTER"

"I SENT TO KNOW YOUR FAITH,
LEST BY SOME MEANS
THE TEMPTER HAD TEMPTED YOU,
AND OUR LABOR MIGHT BE IN VAIN."
1 Thess. 3:5



ENTICEMENT...
TEMPTATION...
ENTRAPMENT...
ENSNAREMENT...

OBJECTIVE:
THE TEMPTER
BEHIND YOU TO
DRAW YOU SPIRITUALLY

BACKWARD

SATAN'S
TWO
PRIMARY
ROLES



SATAN AS "YOUR ADVERSARY"

"BE SOBER, BE VIGILANT;
BECAUSE YOUR ADVERSARY THE DEVIL
WALKS ABOUT LIKE A ROARING LION,
SEEKING WHOM HE MAY DEVOUR."
1 Pet. 5:8

TRIBULATION...
PERSECUTION...
HINDRANCES...
OPPOSITION...



OBJECTIVE:
YOUR ADVERSARY
IN FRONT OF YOU TO HINDER
YOUR SPIRITUAL PROGRESS

FORWARD



Now we come to the second manner in which Satan targets the believer. Not as the tempter behind you to lure you away with subtle substitutes for the things of God, but rather as an in-your-face frontal approach as your adversary. As such he has one primary goal in mind: to halt your forward progress as a dedicated follower of Christ.



ADVERSARY: (Greek: “antikeimai”) **“TO HINDER, TO LIE OPPOSITE TO, TO BE SET OVER AGAINST... IN ADDITION TO ITS LEGAL SENSE, TO WITHSTAND; HE THAT OPPOSES... THE OPPONENT AND SELF-EXALTER AGAINST... CONTRARY TO.... FIRMLY SET AGAINST.”**

(FROM VINE'S EXPOSITORY DICTIONARY OF BIBLICAL WORDS, THOMAS NELSON PUBLISHERS)



Consider how Paul spoke of Satan always being a hindrance in his way:

**“THEREFORE WE WANTED TO COME TO YOU --
EVEN I, PAUL, TIME AND AGAIN --
BUT SATAN HINDERED US...”**

1 Thess. 2:18

**“NOW I DO NOT WANT YOU TO BE UNAWARE, BRETHREN,
THAT I OFTEN PLANNED TO COME TO YOU
(BUT WAS HINDERED UNTIL NOW)...”**

Rom. 1:13

“FOR THIS REASON I ALSO HAVE BEEN MUCH HINDERED FROM COMING TO YOU...”

Rom. 15:22-23

Paul lists for us elsewhere to what degree he suffered satanic-induced hindrances:

“...IN STRIPES ABOVE MEASURE, IN PRISONS MORE FREQUENTLY, IN DEATHS OFTEN. FROM THE JEWS FIVE TIMES I RECEIVED FORTY STRIPES MINUS ONE. THREE TIMES I WAS BEATEN WITH RODS; ONCE I WAS STONED; THREE TIMES I WAS SHIPWRECKED; A NIGHT AND A DAY I HAVE BEEN IN THE DEEP; IN JOURNEYS OFTEN, IN PERILS OF WATERS, IN PERILS OF ROBBERS, IN PERILS OF MY OWN COUNTRYMEN, IN PERILS OF THE GENTILES, IN PERILS IN THE CITY, IN PERILS IN THE WILDERNESS, IN PERILS IN THE SEA, IN PERILS AMONG FALSE BRETHREN; IN WEARINESS AND TOIL, IN SLEEPLESSNESS OFTEN, IN HUNGER AND THIRST...IN COLD AND NAKEDNESS...” 2 Cor. 11:23-27

“...WE WERE BURDENED BEYOND MEASURE, ABOVE STRENGTH, SO THAT WE DESPAIRED EVEN OF LIFE... (2 Cor.1:8)

“...WE ARE HARD PRESSED ON EVERY SIDE, YET NOT CRUSHED; WE ARE PERPLEXED, BUT NOT IN DESPAIR; PERSECUTED, BUT NOT FORSAKEN; STRUCK DOWN, BUT NOT DESTROYED...” (2 Cor.4:8-9)



ADVERSARY:

**“TO HINDER,
TO LIE OPPOSITE TO,
TO BE SET OVER AGAINST...
IN ADDITION TO
ITS LEGAL SENSE,
TO WITHSTAND;
HE THAT OPPOSES...
THE OPPONENT
AND SELF-EXALTER
AGAINST.... CONTRARY
TO.... FIRMLY SET AGAINST.
...AN EVEN MORE VIOLENT
FORM OF OPPOSITION
IS SUGGESTED...”**

**“IF YOU FAINT
IN THE DAY OF ADVERSITY,
YOUR STRENGTH IS SMALL.”**

Prov. 24:10

**““ SHALL WE INDEED ACCEPT GOOD
FROM GOD, AND SHALL WE NOT
ACCEPT ADVERSITY?” IN ALL THIS
JOB DID NOT SIN WITH HIS LIPS.”**

Job 2:10

**“IN THE DAY OF PROSPERITY
BE JOYFUL,
BUT IN THE DAY OF ADVERSITY
CONSIDER: SURELY GOD HAS
APPOINTED THE ONE
AS WELL AS THE OTHER.”**

Eccl. 7:14

**“FOR I HAVE LEARNED IN WHATEVER
STATE I AM, TO BE CONTENT:
I KNOW HOW TO BE ABASED,
AND I KNOW HOW TO ABOUND.
EVERYWHERE AND IN ALL THINGS
I HAVE LEARNED BOTH TO BE FULL
AND TO BE HUNGRY,
BOTH TO ABOUND
AND TO SUFFER NEED.
I CAN DO ALL THINGS THROUGH CHRIST
WHO STRENGTHENS ME.”**

Phil. 4:11-13



ADVERSITY:

**“TO SUFFER
THROUGH
APPOINTED TIMES
OF
TROUBLE,
AFFLICTION,
ANGUISH,
DISTRESS,
TRIBULATION,
DIFFICULTY,
HARDSHIP, TRIAL,
CALAMITY,
MISERY, SORROW,
GRIEF...”**

Do you believe what is depicted on the opposite page? Is the goal of Christianity to have great faith so that you only experience days of prosperity as a follower of Christ, or does your theology make room for God to appoint in your life also days of adversity such as Job, Solomon, and even the apostle Paul, describe as the norm?

Consider carefully the meanings of adversary and adversity. The scriptures teach that the aggressor in warfare is Satan. He is stated to be our **ADVERSARY**. The recipient of that **ADVERSITY** is the dedicated believer living a life like Job. The story of Job centers upon Satan, in his role as the adversary, bringing adversity to God's faithful servant. It is interesting and perhaps puzzling, but we do not find an account of Job encountering Satan as the tempter, as did the first and last Adam, but rather Job only experiences an unseen Satan as his adversary. Job is willing to attribute all his woes as from the hand of God. Satan remains an unseen adversary to Job.

Notice that Job instructs his wife that the believer is not only appointed to receiving days of prosperity from God, but we are called to embrace days of adversity as well. In an attempt to dismiss the adversity that Job experienced, some faith teachers state that what happened to Job was due to his fear and lack of faith. His words, "For the thing I greatly feared has come upon me, and what I dreaded has happened to me" (Job 3:25), are singled out as the reason behind Job's adversity. However, Job refutes such nonsense by stating "shall we indeed accept good from God, and shall we not accept adversity? in all this Job did not sin with his lips" (Job 2:10). We find Solomon bearing witness to this balanced perspective of truth as well in stating in the day of prosperity be joyful, but in the day of adversity consider: surely God has appointed the one as well as the other (Eccl 7:14). What marks the days of prosperity? Solomon states it is a call to be joyful. There is no hardship in being joyful. However, Solomon also reminds us that in the days of adversity that God has surely appointed the one as well as the other.

The normal Christian life that God says is a surety is comprised of days of prosperity and days of adversity. However, let us understand that all spiritual growth comes through adversity, not prosperity. In fact, Proverbs 24:10 reminds us that If you faint in the day of adversity then your strength is small. It is only through adversity that the level of our spiritual strength can be measured. We all love those days of prosperity, but they do little for causing progression in our spiritual growth. It is by means of adversity that the Christian is enabled to grow stronger. Ponder the apostle Paul's balanced perspective presented on the opposite page. He, too, embraced the call to adversity as a means of being strengthened by Christ.

GOD'S PURPOSE FOR ALLOWING SATAN TO BE YOUR ADVERSARY:

3

GOD'S PART:

**"BUT MAY THE GOD OF ALL GRACE,
WHO CALLED US TO HIS ETERNAL GLORY BY CHRIST JESUS,
AFTER YOU HAVE SUFFERED A WHILE,
PERFECT, ESTABLISH, STRENGTHEN, AND SETTLE YOU...
THIS IS THE TRUE GRACE OF GOD IN WHICH YOU STAND."**

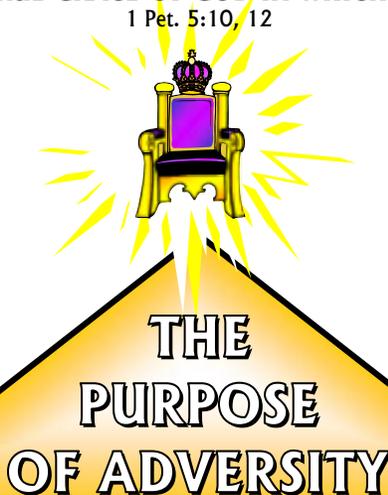
1 Pet. 5:10, 12

1

SATAN'S PART:

**"BE SOBER,
BE VIGILANT;
BECAUSE
YOUR
ADVERSARY
THE DEVIL
WALKS ABOUT
LIKE A
ROARING
LION
SEEKING
WHOM HE
MAY DEVOUR."**

1 Pet. 5:8



2

BELIEVER'S PART:

**"RESIST HIM,
STEADFAST IN
THE FAITH,
KNOWING
THAT THE
SAME
SUFFERINGS
ARE
EXPERIENCED BY
YOUR
BROTHERHOOD
IN THE WORLD."**

1 Pet. 5:9



**“FOR WE DO NOT WANT YOU TO BE IGNORANT, BRETHREN,
OF OUR TROUBLE (TRIBULATION) WHICH CAME TO US IN ASIA:
THAT WE WERE BURDENED BEYOND MEASURE, ABOVE STRENGTH, SO THAT WE DESPAIRED EVEN OF LIFE.
YES, WE HAD THE SENTENCE OF DEATH IN OURSELVES, THAT WE SHOULD NOT TRUST IN OURSELVES,
BUT IN GOD WHO RAISES THE DEAD, WHO DELIVERED US FROM SO GREAT A DEATH, AND DOES DELIVER US;
IN WHOM WE TRUST THAT HE WILL STILL DELIVER US...”** 2 Cor. 1:8-10

**“...WE ARE HARD PRESSED ON EVERY SIDE, YET NOT CRUSHED; WE ARE PERPLEXED, BUT NOT IN DESPAIR;
PERSECUTED, BUT NOT FORSAKEN; STRUCK DOWN, BUT NOT DESTROYED...”** 2 Cor. 4:8-9

Reading these descriptions of Paul's sufferings, at the hand of the evil one, reveals that Satan is not completely in control of what Paul experienced any more than the devil was in total control of Job's trials. If he were in absolute control, both Job and Paul would have been quickly slain by Satan.

There is more at work than just Satan and the believer. Instead, what we find is that God limited Paul's trial just as He did for Job. From the recorded testimonies of these two men we can readily see the hand of God Almighty in the midst of such afflictions keeping Satan from inflicting total destruction upon Paul just as He did for Job, yet at the same time, doing a work of perfection in His servants.

← In this triangle diagram consisting of three consecutive verses (1 Peter 5:8-10), we can see the two opposing forces, Satan and the believer set against each other; but we also are given the depiction of the overall controlling force of God Almighty ruling over the conflict. The end purpose in mind is to perfect, establish, strengthen and settle the believer, but only after having suffered a while in resisting the devil's onslaught. Consider what principle we must keep in mind that is at work at all times:

“...YOU (Satan) MEANT EVIL AGAINST ME; BUT GOD MEANT IT FOR GOOD...” Gen. 50:20

Paul reminds us of this underlying principle which is always at work:

**“AND WE KNOW THAT ALL THINGS WORK TOGETHER FOR GOOD TO THOSE WHO LOVE GOD,
TO THOSE WHO ARE THE CALLED ACCORDING TO HIS PURPOSE...
TO BE CONFORMED TO THE IMAGE OF HIS SON,
THAT HE MIGHT BE THE FIRSTBORN AMONG MANY BRETHREN.”** Rom. 8:28-29

**“PUT ON THE WHOLE
ARMOR OF GOD,
THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE
TO STAND AGAINST
THE WILES
OF THE DEVIL..”**



“FIERY DARTS”

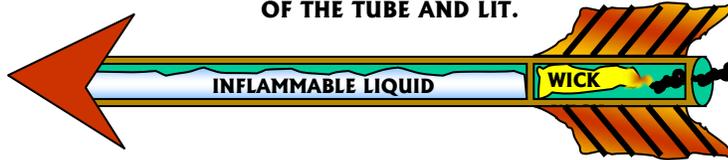
**“YOUR
ADVERSARY
THE DEVIL”**



**...ABOVE ALL,
TAKING THE SHIELD OF FAITH
WITH WHICH YOU WILL BE ABLE
TO QUENCH ALL
THE FIERY DARTS OF THE WICKED ONE.”**

Eph. 6:11,16

**“FIERY DARTS
WERE MADE FROM A HOLLOW REED LIKE BAMBOO.
THE REED WAS FILLED WITH A FLAMMABLE LIQUID.
A WICK WAS SLIPPED INTO THE OTHER END
OF THE TUBE AND LIT.**



**IT WAS THEN SHOT LIKE AN ARROW
AT THE SOLDIER HIMSELF.
SINCE THE MISSILE HAD IT'S OWN FUEL SOURCE
AND THE WICK WAS PROTECTED BY THE TUBE,
THE MISSILE KEPT BURNING UNTIL IT HIT SOMETHING.
WHEN IT HIT A SOLDIER, THE WICK POPPED OUT,
THE LIQUID SPILLED OVER THE SOLDIER,
IGNITING IN A SUDDEN BURST OF
FIERY, ALL-ENGULFING FLAME”**

Wikipedia Encyclopedia

The above description of what a fiery dart consisted of, in Paul's day, sheds illumination upon Paul's illustration of the severity of the attacks of Satan against the believer. Fiery darts were fearsome weapons of warfare bringing sudden havoc and destruction seemingly out of nowhere. The believer's defense against the fiery darts of Satan, our adversary, is found listed among the seven pieces of the armor of God as of supreme importance: above all, taking the shield of faith with which you will be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked one (Eph. 6:16).

When we studied Satan as the tempter, we saw that he had three very favorite forms of temptation that he used over and over again: the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes and the pride of life (1 Jn.2:16). Likewise, in Satan's role as our adversary, there are repetitious favorite and explosive fiery darts that he likes to use against dedicated believers in Christ to seek to hinder their forward progress in God. We will consider six of them on the following pages. Let us keep in mind that what Peter depicts is the ultimate goal God has in allowing such adversity: after you have suffered a while resisting, then God will perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you (1 Pet. 5:10). Paul also endorsed such workings of God by means of embracing adversity:

**“MOREOVER LET US ALSO BE FULL OF JOY NOW!
LET US EXULT AND TRIUMPH IN OUR TROUBLES AND REJOICE IN OUR SUFFERINGS, KNOWING THAT PRESSURE
AND AFFLICTION AND HARDSHIP PRODUCE PATIENT AND UNSWERVING ENDURANCE. AND ENDURANCE
DEVELOPS MATURITY OF CHARACTER (APPROVED FAITH AND TRIED INTEGRITY). AND CHARACTER OF THIS
SORT PRODUCES THE HABIT OF JOYFUL AND CONFIDENT HOPE OF ETERNAL SALVATION.”**

Rom. 5:3-4 Amplified Bible

**PERSECUTE:
“TO WEAR OUT”,
TO HARASS, ANNOY,
TROUBLE, DISTURB,
DEPRIVE, INFLICT
SEVERE
PUNISHMENT”**



**CREATE
PERSECUTION**

**“YOUR
ADVERSARY
THE DEVIL”**



**“...WHAT PERSECUTIONS
I ENDURED.
AND OUT OF THEM ALL
THE LORD DELIVERED ME.
YES, AND ALL
WHO DESIRE TO LIVE GODLY
IN CHRIST JESUS
WILL SUFFER PERSECUTION.”**

2 Tim. 3:11-13

"...AND ALL WHO DESIRE TO LIVE GODLY IN CHRIST JESUS WILL SUFFER PERSECUTION." 2 Tim. 3:11-13

Ask most Christians in America if they know anything about persecution and you might hear back, "Percy who?" American Christianity, steeped solidly in politics, knows more about **PROSECUTION** of others than **PERSECUTION** from others. The defiant motto of a coiled rattlesnake on the Texas state flag warns, "Don't tread on me"! This defiant concept is also held dear among many of God's people in this country that are steeped in the defense of the cherished Bill of Rights. However, the threat of messing with my rights and I will sue you, flies in the face of how Paul depicted the true temperament of Christianity:

"BUT RECALL THE FORMER DAYS IN WHICH, AFTER YOU WERE ILLUMINATED, YOU ENDURED A GREAT STRUGGLE WITH SUFFERINGS: PARTLY WHILE YOU WERE MADE A SPECTACLE BOTH BY REPROACHES AND TRIBULATIONS, AND PARTLY WHILE YOU BECAME COMPANIONS OF THOSE WHO WERE SO TREATED; FOR YOU HAD COMPASSION ON ME IN MY CHAINS, AND JOYFULLY ACCEPTED THE PLUNDERING OF YOUR GOODS, KNOWING THAT YOU HAVE A BETTER AND AN ENDURING POSSESSION FOR YOURSELVES IN HEAVEN." Heb. 10:32-35

"BUT BROTHER GOES TO LAW AGAINST BROTHER, AND THAT BEFORE UNBELIEVERS! THEREFORE NOW IT IS ALREADY AN UTTER FAILURE FOR YOU THAT YOU GO TO LAW AGAINST ONE ANOTHER. WHY DO YOU NOT RATHER ACCEPT WRONG? WHY DO YOU NOT RATHER LET YOURSELVES BE DEFRAUDED? NO, YOU YOURSELVES DO WRONG AND DEFRAUD, AND YOU DO THESE THINGS TO YOUR BRETHREN!" 1 Cor. 6:6-8

Embracing persecution must be seen as an intrinsic part of the Christian life here in America as it is accepted in the rest of the world. The solution is not by prosecution of those we perceive to be our enemies. Today's political Tea Party, so loved by Christians, is no more the spirit of Christ than was the original Masonic-led Boston Tea Party. Has the cherished constitutional Bill of Rights negated these words of Jesus spoken to His people:

"...LOVE YOUR ENEMIES, BLESS THOSE WHO CURSE YOU, DO GOOD TO THOSE WHO HATE YOU, AND PRAY FOR THOSE WHO SPITEFULLY USE YOU AND PERSECUTE YOU THAT YOU MAY BE SONS OF YOUR FATHER IN HEAVEN..."

Matt. 5:44

Much of what is considered by Christians to be persecution in this country is nothing but strife generated by political warfare between liberal Democrats and conservative Republicans for the control of an earthly kingdom. Jesus stated 2,000 years ago His view of involvement in earthly kingdoms. He has not rescinded this viewpoint to this very day:

"MY KINGDOM IS NOT OF THIS WORLD. IF MY KINGDOM WERE OF THIS WORLD, MY SERVANTS WOULD FIGHT...BUT NOW MY KINGDOM IS NOT FROM HERE." Jn. 18:36

SATAN'S FIERY DART OF PERSECUTION DEFINED

**"REMEMBER THE WORD THAT I SAID TO YOU,
'A SERVANT IS NOT GREATER THAN HIS MASTER.
IF THEY PERSECUTED ME,
THEY WILL ALSO PERSECUTE YOU.' "**

Jn. 15:20

1 PERSECUTION FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS SAKE

**"BLESSED ARE THOSE WHO ARE
PERSECUTED FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS SAKE...
BLESSED ARE YOU WHEN THEY REVILE AND
PERSECUTE YOU AND SAY ALL KINDS OF
EVIL AGAINST YOU FALSELY FOR MY SAKE.
REJOICE AND BE EXCEEDINGLY GLAD,
FOR GREAT IS YOUR REWARD IN HEAVEN,
FOR SO THEY PERSECUTED THE PROPHETS
WHO WERE BEFORE YOU."**

Matt. 5:10-12



3 PERSECUTION FOR THE WORD'S SAKE

**"THE SOWER SOWS THE WORD...
WHEN THEY HEAR THE WORD,
IMMEDIATELY RECEIVE IT WITH GLADNESS;
AND THEY HAVE NO ROOT IN THEMSELVES
AND SO ENDURE ONLY FOR A TIME.
AFTERWARD,
WHEN TRIBULATION OR PERSECUTION
ARISES FOR THE WORD'S SAKE,
IMMEDIATELY THEY STUMBLE."**

Mark 4:14, 16-17

**"...BUT ALL THESE THINGS THEY WILL
DO TO YOU FOR MY NAME'S SAKE,
BECAUSE THEY DO NOT KNOW HIM
WHO SENT ME."**

Jn. 15:21

2 PERSECUTION FOR HIS NAME'S SAKE

The three kinds of bible-based persecution that comprise Satan's oppressive fiery darts are listed on the opposite page. It should come as no surprise that two of the reasons for persecution are (1) for righteousness sake and (2) for the Word's sake, as both of these are listed among the seven pieces of the armor of God:

**“PUT ON THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD, THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO STAND AGAINST THE WILES OF THE DEVIL...
HAVING PUT ON THE BREASTPLATE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS...AND TAKE...
THE SWORD OF THE SPIRIT, WHICH IS THE WORD OF GOD.”** Eph. 6:11,14,17

Remember earlier I stated to you that the armor of God is not applied to the believer as a mystical ritual of faith, but rather depicts a dedicated ongoing lifestyle demonstrated by the believer. Are you clothed in righteous acts of the saints? (Rev. 19:8). Are you being filled with fruits of righteousness? (Phil. 1:11). Are you living soberly, righteously and godly in this present age? (Titus 2:12). Then you are Satan's prime target for persecution for righteousness sake. This kind of lifestyle Satan is very determined to hinder.

And what of the armor of God identified as the sword of the Spirit, the Word of God? Do you hide the Word of God in your heart that you might not sin against Him? (Psalm 119:11). Do you ask God to direct your steps by His Word? (Psalm 119:133). Do you rejoice at God's Word as one who finds great treasure? (Psalm 119:162). Do you embrace the entirety of God's Word to be truth? (Psalm 119:160). Then you are Satan's prime target for persecution for the Word's sake. This kind of God-centered lifestyle Satan is very determined to hinder.

Notice, that in the account of the Parable of the Sower on the opposite page, Jesus is warning of a great negative impact on some believers when confronted with tribulation or persecution for the Word's sake. We find that immediately they stumble. The Amplified Bible says, “they immediately are offended (become displeased, indignant, resentful) and they stumble and fall away.” This is what Satan wants: the believer to stumble and fall away, to count the cost too great to continue to go forward.

And what of persecution for His Name's sake? Satan has such a stranglehold on most nations in the world that merely to name the name of Christ is sufficient to provoke great persecution on the believer. It is the kiss of death for a Muslim to suddenly become a Christian. He could be killed by his own family for this single act alone. Never mind living for righteousness sake or living for the Word's sake. It only takes naming the name of Christ to bring forth great persecution from Satan's false religions encompassing most of the world.

You do not need to live in India to suffer persecution. It also happens in Indiana. Neither will all persecution of dedicated believers come from “outside the camp.” By that I mean that not all persecution will originate from unbelievers in Christ persecuting believers in Christ. Some persecution will arise from within the camp in which one type of believer will be set against another type of believer. Let Jesus prophetically describe this scenario for us:

**“...AND THEN MANY
WILL BE OFFENDED,
WILL BETRAY
ONE ANOTHER,
AND WILL HATE
ONE ANOTHER.
THEN MANY FALSE PROPHETS
WILL RISE UP AND DECEIVE MANY.
AND BECAUSE LAWLESSNESS WILL ABOUND,
THE LOVE OF MANY WILL GROW COLD.
BUT HE WHO ENDURES TO THE END
SHALL BE SAVED.”**

Matt. 24:10-13



**“...THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN SHALL BE LIKENED
TO TEN VIRGINS WHO TOOK THEIR LAMPS
AND WENT OUT TO MEET THE BRIDEGROOM.
NOW FIVE OF THEM WERE WISE,
AND FIVE WERE FOOLISH.
THOSE WHO WERE FOOLISH TOOK THEIR LAMPS
AND TOOK NO OIL WITH THEM, BUT THE WISE
TOOK OIL IN THEIR VESSELS WITH THEIR LAMPS...
THE BRIDEGROOM CAME,
AND THOSE WHO WERE READY
WENT IN WITH HIM TO THE WEDDING;
AND THE DOOR WAS SHUT.”**

Matt. 25:1-13 excerpts

The apostle Paul gives further prophetic illumination for us:



**“SEE THEN THAT YOU WALK CIRCUMSPECTLY, NOT AS FOOLS BUT AS WISE,
REDEEMING THE TIME, BECAUSE THE DAYS ARE EVIL.
THEREFORE DO NOT BE UNWISE, BUT UNDERSTAND WHAT THE WILL OF THE LORD IS.”** Eph. 5:15-17

**“NOW THE SPIRIT EXPRESSLY SAYS THAT IN LATTER TIMES SOME WILL DEPART FROM THE FAITH,
GIVING HEED TO DECEIVING SPIRITS AND DOCTRINES OF DEMONS, SPEAKING LIES IN HYPOCRISY,
HAVING THEIR OWN CONSCIENCE SEARED WITH A HOT IRON...”** 1 Tim. 4:1-3

**“I CHARGE YOU THEREFORE BEFORE GOD AND THE LORD JESUS CHRIST... PREACH THE WORD...
FOR THE TIME WILL COME WHEN THEY WILL NOT ENDURE SOUND DOCTRINE, BUT ACCORDING TO THEIR
OWN DESIRES, BECAUSE THEY HAVE ITCHING EARS, THEY WILL HEAP UP FOR THEMSELVES TEACHERS;
AND THEY WILL TURN THEIR EARS AWAY FROM THE TRUTH, AND BE TURNED ASIDE TO FABLES.”** 2 Tim. 4:1-5

Much elaboration could be made of Jesus' and Paul's prophetic depiction of the Body of Christ in the last days, but it is beyond the scope of this book to do so. However, a number of stark contrasts can be made between the wise and the foolish believer:

The wise understands what the will of the Lord is and walks accordingly. The foolish walk in an unwise manner. The wise possess oil in their lamps and wait in a state of readiness for the coming Bridegroom. The foolish does not and are therefore marked to be left behind. In these prophesied difficult times, many become offended, hateful, and betray other believers. The love of many believers grows cold. Many false prophets arise. Doctrines of deceiving demons are embraced causing a departure from the true faith. Truth is replaced with preferred fables. Sound doctrine is rejected in favor of doctrines that sound good to itching ears. The foolish heap teachers to themselves who turn them farther from the truth. The conscience of believers become seared as with a hot iron. Hypocrisy prevails through demonic lies presented as truth. All of this sets the stage for the persecution of the wise by those who have become foolish.

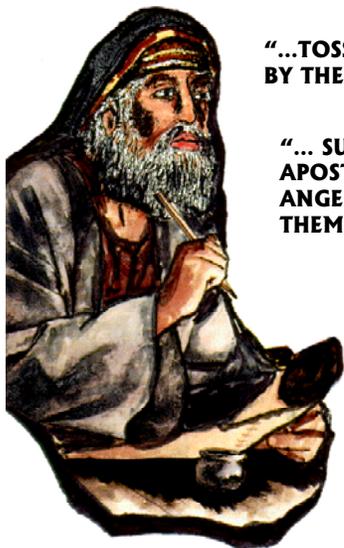
As a pastor/teacher over the last 36 years I have witnessed firsthand the above scenario in various degrees in the lives of believers in Christ. It is God who labels them as foolish, but they continue to see themselves as wise. In reality, the foolish persecute the wise. Although many who have come and gone over the years of ministry never caused us any problem, a segment of them bore vendettas toward our ministry, accusing us of legalism or the infamous Galatian error of mixing law with grace. Dear friends, it is not legalism to teach God's people who have received the righteousness of Christ how to have a life filled with the righteous acts of the saints. The righteousness of Christ forms the Body of Christ, but the righteous acts of the saints produces the Bride of Christ (Rev.19:8). One is a gift, but the other is a reward. What did Jesus say would be a cause of persecution?

“BLESSED ARE THOSE WHO ARE PERSECUTED FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS SAKE...BLESSED ARE YOU WHEN THEY REVILE AND PERSECUTE YOU AND SAY ALL KINDS OF EVIL AGAINST YOU FALSELY FOR MY SAKE. REJOICE AND BE EXCEEDINGLY GLAD, FOR GREAT IS YOUR REWARD IN HEAVEN, FOR SO THEY PERSECUTED THE PROPHETS WHO WERE BEFORE YOU” (Matt. 5:10-12)

Likewise, persecution would come for the Word's sake (Mark 4:16-17). Wise virgins will embrace the whole counsel of God (Acts 20:26-27), not just half of it. To truly rightly divide the Word of truth (2 Tim. 2:15) requires embracing the portion of the Word of God that confronts us, not just singling out the words from God that comfort us.

**“THEREFORE I TESTIFY TO YOU THIS DAY THAT I AM INNOCENT OF THE BLOOD OF ALL MEN.
FOR I HAVE NOT SHUNNED TO DECLARE TO YOU THE WHOLE COUNSEL OF GOD.
THEREFORE TAKE HEED TO YOURSELVES AND TO ALL THE FLOCK, AMONG WHICH THE HOLY SPIRIT HAS MADE
YOU OVERSEERS, TO SHEPHERD THE CHURCH OF GOD WHICH HE PURCHASED WITH HIS OWN BLOOD.
FOR I KNOW THIS, THAT AFTER MY DEPARTURE SAVAGE WOLVES WILL COME IN AMONG YOU,
NOT SPARING THE FLOCK. ALSO FROM AMONG YOURSELVES MEN WILL RISE UP, SPEAKING PERVERSE THINGS,
TO DRAW AWAY THE DISCIPLES AFTER THEMSELVES.”**

Acts 20:26-31



**“...TOSSED TO AND FRO AND CARRIED ABOUT WITH EVERY WIND OF DOCTRINE,
BY THE TRICKERY OF MEN, IN THE CUNNING CRAFTINESS BY WHICH THEY LIE IN WAIT TO DECEIVE...”**

Eph. 4:14-15

**“... SUCH ARE FALSE APOSTLES, DECEITFUL WORKERS, TRANSFORMING THEMSELVES INTO
APOSTLES OF CHRIST. AND NO WONDER! FOR SATAN HIMSELF TRANSFORMS HIMSELF INTO AN
ANGEL OF LIGHT. THEREFORE IT IS NO GREAT THING IF HIS MINISTERS ALSO TRANSFORM
THEMSELVES INTO MINISTERS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS...”**

2 Cor. 11:13-15

**“...THE TIME WILL COME WHEN THEY WILL NOT ENDURE SOUND DOCTRINE,
BUT ACCORDING TO THEIR OWN DESIRES, BECAUSE THEY HAVE ITCHING EARS,
THEY WILL HEAR UP FOR THEMSELVES TEACHERS; AND THEY WILL TURN THEIR
EARS AWAY FROM THE TRUTH, AND BE TURNED ASIDE TO FABLES. “**

2 Tim. 4:3-5

**“BUT KNOW THIS, THAT IN THE LAST DAYS PERILOUS TIMES WILL COME:
FOR MEN WILL BE LOVERS OF THEMSELVES, LOVERS OF MONEY, BOASTERS, PROUD,
BLASPHEMERS, DISOBEDIENT TO PARENTS, UNTHANKFUL, UNHOLY, UNLOVING,
UNFORGIVING, SLANDERERS, WITHOUT SELF-CONTROL, BRUTAL, DESPISERS OF GOOD,
TRAITORS, HEADSTRONG, HAUGHTY, LOVERS OF PLEASURE RATHER THAN LOVERS OF
GOD, HAVING A FORM OF GODLINESS BUT DENYING ITS POWER.**

AND FROM SUCH PEOPLE TURN AWAY!”

2 Tim. 3:1-5

**“DO NOT THINK THAT I CAME TO BRING PEACE ON EARTH. I DID NOT COME TO BRING PEACE BUT A SWORD.
FOR I HAVE COME TO 'SET A MAN AGAINST HIS FATHER, A DAUGHTER AGAINST HER MOTHER,
AND A DAUGHTER-IN-LAW AGAINST HER MOTHER-IN-LAW';
AND 'A MAN'S ENEMIES WILL BE THOSE OF HIS OWN HOUSEHOLD.'”**

Matt. 10:34-36

Carefully ponder the prophetic scriptures on the opposite page. Both in the pulpit and in the pew there is brewing a demonically-fed mixture of toxic persecution capable of touching every phase and facet of life. The last scripture is a warning from the mouth of Jesus pertaining to the real potential of a man's enemies to be those of his own household. Why so? Because Paul warns every dedicated believer what will be the trigger point for persecution:

"...WHAT PERSECUTIONS I ENDURED. AND OUT OF THEM ALL THE LORD DELIVERED ME. YES, AND ALL WHO DESIRE TO LIVE GODLY IN CHRIST JESUS WILL SUFFER PERSECUTION." 2 Tim. 3:11-13

Paul is revealing the primary reason for the persecutions he endured at the hand of men motivated by Satan. It was his godliness. What follows is a warning to all who desire to live godly, you will suffer persecution also. Satan intends to persecute you in your church, at your work, and even in your home. He is banking on making your life so miserable that you will forget about desiring to live godly among the ungodly. However, Paul also reminds us of the great blessings that godliness will produce:

"...EXERCISE YOURSELF TOWARD GODLINESS. FOR BODILY EXERCISE PROFITS A LITTLE, BUT GODLINESS IS PROFITABLE FOR ALL THINGS, HAVING PROMISE OF THE LIFE THAT NOW IS AND OF THAT WHICH IS TO COME. THIS IS A FAITHFUL SAYING AND WORTHY OF ALL ACCEPTANCE. FOR TO THIS END WE BOTH LABOR AND SUFFER REPROACH..." 1 Tim. 4:7-10

A needful word about the meaning of godliness: it is your attitude toward God. Godliness is not holiness or righteousness. These are the things that godliness produces. Paul was godly and he suffered great persecution. Job was godly and he, too, suffered great persecution. Get the message: all who desire to live godly will suffer persecution. Satan hates godliness. He hates all who embrace this kind of godliness:

"YOU SHALL LOVE THE LORD YOUR GOD WITH ALL YOUR HEART, WITH ALL YOUR SOUL, AND WITH ALL YOUR STRENGTH."

Deut. 6:5

Although persecution is not by any means a pleasant experience, it is how spiritual growth takes place. Our focus must remain centered upon what Jesus stated that such persecution will produce in the life which is to come:

"BLESSED ARE YOU WHEN THEY REVILE AND PERSECUTE YOU AND SAY ALL KINDS OF EVIL AGAINST YOU FALSELY FOR MY SAKE. REJOICE AND BE EXCEEDINGLY GLAD, FOR GREAT IS YOUR REWARD IN HEAVEN, FOR SO THEY PERSECUTED THE PROPHETS WHO WERE BEFORE YOU." Matt. 5:10-12

**“IT IS NOT AN ENEMY
WHO REPROACHES ME;
THEN I COULD BEAR IT.**

**NOR IS IT ONE
WHO HATES ME
WHO HAS MAGNIFIED
HIMSELF AGAINST ME..**

**“YOUR
ADVERSARY
THE DEVIL”**

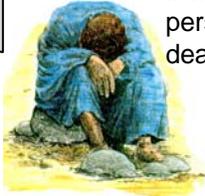


**CREATE
DISCOURAGEMENT**



**BUT IT WAS YOU,
A MAN MY EQUAL,
MY COMPANION AND
MY ACQUAINTANCE.
WE TOOK SWEET COUNSEL TOGETHER,
AND WALKED TO THE HOUSE OF GOD
IN THE THRONG.”**

Psalm 55:12-14



If we are not careful, **DISCOURAGEMENT** becomes a fiery dart quickly following on the heels of persecution. That is especially true when the source of that persecution has become someone once dear such as David describes:

**“IT IS NOT AN ENEMY WHO REPROACHES ME; THEN I COULD BEAR IT.
NOR IS IT ONE WHO HATES ME WHO HAS MAGNIFIED HIMSELF AGAINST ME...
BUT IT WAS YOU, A MAN MY EQUAL, MY COMPANION AND MY ACQUAINTANCE.
WE TOOK SWEET COUNSEL TOGETHER, AND WALKED TO THE HOUSE OF GOD IN THE THRONG.”**

Psalm 55:12-14

How much more effective is persecution at the hand of someone within the camp as David describes. It wasn't someone who hated him, but rather it was a man his equal, his companion and his acquaintance. It was one with whom he had shared sweet counsel together, one with whom he walked together to church. “This is too much to bear!”, and herein lies Satan's reason for using someone so close and so dear! Satan seeks to follow up such persecution now with waves of great discouragement. We could think of Job in the midst of his hour of great distress, suffering discouragement from the one whom he dearly loved, right in the midst of Satan's fiery persecution:

**“SO SATAN WENT OUT FROM THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD, AND STRUCK JOB WITH PAINFUL BOILS
FROM THE SOLE OF HIS FOOT TO THE CROWN OF HIS HEAD. AND HE TOOK FOR HIMSELF
A POTSDERD WITH WHICH TO SCRAPE HIMSELF WHILE HE SAT IN THE MIDST OF THE ASHES.
THEN HIS WIFE SAID TO HIM, ‘DO YOU STILL HOLD FAST TO YOUR INTEGRITY? CURSE GOD AND DIE!’ ”** Job 2:7-9

Where did these words of discouragement originate? Satan argued with God that Job would curse God to His face if he received a dose of physical infirmity (Job 2:5) . Who did Satan get to do his dirty work? He baited Job's wife with these very words of cursing God. There is an old secular song that goes, “You always hurt the one you love.” It is far more effective when the seeds of discouragement are spoken through one that we love. Solomon stated how effective two can be in the midst of a trial:

**“TWO ARE BETTER THAN ONE... FOR IF THEY FALL, ONE WILL LIFT UP HIS COMPANION.
BUT WOE TO HIM WHO IS ALONE WHEN HE FALLS, FOR HE HAS NO ONE TO HELP HIM UP...
THOUGH ONE MAY BE OVERPOWERED BY ANOTHER, TWO CAN WITHSTAND HIM.”** Eccl. 4:9-12

These promises are not limited to a husband/wife relationship, but are equally effective for brothers and sisters in Christ who effectively labor to bear one another's burdens (Gal. 6:2).



To DISCOURAGE

**“DISHEARTEN, DEJECT,
DIMINISH CONFIDENCE,
TO CHECK, TO HINDER,
TO DAMPEN OUTLOOK,
TO ATTEMPT TO
DISSUADE FROM ACTION NEEDED...
CREATE INABILITY TO MUSTER UP
HOPE AND DETERMINATION...”**

Webster



To ENCOURAGE

**“CREATE ATMOSPHERE OF COURAGE,
INSPIRE FAITH TO PERFORM
OR CONTINUE IN SPITE OF
OPPOSITION AND DIFFICULTY,
CREATE HOPE,
PROMOTE POSSIBILITIES,
TO SPUR ON, CHEER, HEARTEN...”**

Webster

DISCOURAGE or ENCOURAGE?

We don't need to be as smart as Sherlock Holmes to figure out which category that Satan promotes. Remember, his primary function is to hinder progress in the life of the believer:

**“THEREFORE WE WANTED TO COME TO YOU --
EVEN I, PAUL, TIME AND AGAIN --
BUT SATAN HINDERED US...”** 1 Thess. 2:18

**“NOW I DO NOT WANT YOU TO BE UNAWARE, BRETHREN,
THAT I OFTEN PLANNED TO COME TO YOU
(BUT WAS HINDERED UNTIL NOW)...”** Rom. 1:13

The fiery dart of discouragement is most effective if it functions through people inside the camp in which believers are used by Satan to discourage other believers. What is the antidote to Satan's fiery darts?

**“...TAKING UP THE SHIELD OF FAITH WITH WHICH YOU WILL BE ABLE
TO QUENCH ALL THE FIERY DARTS OF THE WICKED ONE.”** Eph. 6:16

Consider the meaning of discourage and encourage. Which one of the two categories best describes faith? (Even Sherlock's assistant Watson would get this one right). It is encouragement.

This is a recurring theme throughout the scriptures, brethren encouraging brethren:

**“...AND SENT TIMOTHY, OUR BROTHER AND MINISTER OF GOD, AND OUR FELLOW LABORER IN THE GOSPEL OF CHRIST,
TO ESTABLISH YOU AND ENCOURAGE YOU CONCERNING YOUR FAITH,
THAT NO ONE SHOULD BE SHAKEN BY THESE AFFLICTIONS...”** 1 Thess. 3:2-3

And yet, we find detailed accounts to the contrary in which a portion of the brethren were instrumental in discouraging the majority of the brethren. Here is one example:

**“NOW THE CHILDREN OF REUBEN AND THE CHILDREN OF GAD HAD A VERY GREAT MULTITUDE OF LIVESTOCK;
AND WHEN THEY SAW...THAT INDEED THE REGION WAS A PLACE FOR LIVESTOCK, THE CHILDREN OF GAD AND THE
CHILDREN OF REUBEN... SPOKE TO MOSES... ‘IF WE HAVE FOUND FAVOR IN YOUR SIGHT, LET THIS LAND BE GIVEN TO
YOUR SERVANTS AS A POSSESSION. DO NOT TAKE US OVER THE JORDAN.’ AND MOSES SAID...
‘SHALL YOUR BRETHREN GO TO WAR WHILE YOU SIT HERE? NOW WHY WILL YOU DISCOURAGE THE HEART OF THE
CHILDREN OF ISRAEL FROM GOING OVER INTO THE LAND WHICH THE LORD HAS GIVEN THEM?’ ”** Num. 32:1-7

Possession of a great multitude of livestock led to a self-justified reluctance for the tribes of Ruben and Gad to enter warfare on the other side of the Jordan. They were most willing to settle for less than God's best which was in the land possessed by giants. Moses rebukes them for their reluctance and for creating an atmosphere of discouragement for the other tribes of the children of Israel. Moses tells them this is a repeat performance. →

**“ ‘NOW WHY WILL YOU DISCOURAGE THE HEART OF THE CHILDREN OF ISRAEL FROM GOING OVER INTO THE LAND WHICH THE LORD HAS GIVEN THEM?’
THUS YOUR FATHERS DID WHEN I SENT THEM... FOR WHEN THEY... SAW THE LAND,
THEY DISCOURAGED THE HEART OF THE CHILDREN OF ISRAEL,
SO THAT THEY DID NOT GO INTO THE LAND WHICH THE LORD HAD GIVEN THEM.’”**

Num. 32:1-10

“AND THE LORD SPOKE TO MOSES SAYING, ‘SEND MEN TO SPY OUT THE LAND OF CANAAN...FROM EACH TRIBE YOU SHALL SEND A MAN, EVERY ONE A LEADER AMONG THEM’....NOW THEY DEPARTED AND CAME BACK TO MOSES AND AARON AND ALL THE CONGREGATION OF THE CHILDREN OF ISRAEL IN THE WILDERNESS...

AND SHOWED THEM THE FRUIT OF THE LAND... AND SAID:

‘WE WENT TO THE LAND WHERE YOU SENT US. IT TRULY FLOWS WITH MILK AND HONEY, AND THIS IS ITS FRUIT. NEVERTHELESS THE PEOPLE WHO DWELL IN THE LAND ARE STRONG; THE CITIES ARE FORTIFIED AND VERY LARGE; MOREOVER WE SAW THE DESCENDANTS OF ANAK (DESCENDANTS OF THE GIANTS) THERE...’

**THEN CALEB QUIETED THE PEOPLE BEFORE MOSES, AND SAID,
‘LET US GO UP AT ONCE AND TAKE POSSESSION, FOR WE ARE WELL ABLE TO OVERCOME IT.’**

**BUT THE MEN WHO HAD GONE UP WITH HIM SAID,
‘WE ARE NOT ABLE TO GO UP AGAINST THE PEOPLE, FOR THEY ARE STRONGER THAN WE.’ AND THEY GAVE THE CHILDREN OF ISRAEL A BAD REPORT OF THE LAND WHICH THEY HAD SPIED OUT, SAYING, ‘THE LAND THROUGH WHICH WE HAVE GONE AS SPIES IS A LAND THAT DEVOURS ITS INHABITANTS, AND ALL THE PEOPLE WHOM WE SAW IN IT ARE MEN OF GREAT STATURE. THERE WE SAW THE GIANTS (THE DESCENDANTS OF ANAK CAME FROM THE GIANTS); AND WE WERE LIKE GRASSHOPPERS IN OUR OWN SIGHT, AND SO WE WERE IN THEIR SIGHT.’ SO ALL THE CONGREGATION LIFTED UP THEIR VOICES AND CRIED, AND THE PEOPLE WEPT THAT NIGHT. AND ALL THE CHILDREN OF ISRAEL COMPLAINED AGAINST MOSES AND AARON...**

**BUT JOSHUA AND CALEB WHO WERE AMONG THOSE WHO HAD SPIED OUT THE LAND, TORE THEIR CLOTHES;
AND THEY SPOKE TO ALL THE CONGREGATION OF THE CHILDREN OF ISRAEL, SAYING:
‘THE LAND WE PASSED THROUGH TO SPY OUT IS AN EXCEEDINGLY GOOD LAND. IF THE LORD DELIGHTS IN US,
THEN HE WILL BRING US INTO THIS LAND AND GIVE IT TO US... THEIR PROTECTION HAS DEPARTED FROM THEM,
AND THE LORD IS WITH US. DO NOT FEAR THEM.’**

AND ALL THE CONGREGATION SAID TO STONE THEM WITH STONES.”

Num. 13:1-2,13:26-33, 14:1-10

One leader was chosen from each of the twelve tribes of Israel to be sent into the land and bring back a report. Ten of the twelve brought back a discouraging word pertaining to what they saw, only Joshua and Caleb brought an encouraging word back to the people. In other words, the majority gave only a bad report and the minority gave a good report in spite of the opposition that they saw. Ten chose to be discouragers of the brethren and two sought to encourage the brethren. Ten were motivated by their fear of man and two were motivated by their faith in God. Notice whose influence prevailed, "...and all the congregation said to stone them with stones."

Truly, discouragement is an effective fiery dart of the wicked one utilized to discourage the heart of the people in the midst of adversity. The only antidote for discouragement is encouragement (a life of faith in God). Only Caleb and Joshua demonstrated faith in God. However, their encouraging message of faith was quenched rather than Satan's fiery dart of discouragement. Do not think we live in different times. Discouragement continues to be among Satan's wiles at work among God's people to set brethren against brethren. We must always seek to encourage one another in the midst of adversity as does Paul in passages such as these:

"THEREFORE, WHEN WE COULD NO LONGER ENDURE IT, WE THOUGHT IT GOOD TO BE LEFT IN ATHENS ALONE, AND SENT TIMOTHY, OUR BROTHER AND MINISTER OF GOD, AND OUR FELLOW LABORER IN THE GOSPEL OF CHRIST, TO ESTABLISH YOU AND ENCOURAGE YOU CONCERNING YOUR FAITH, THAT NO ONE SHOULD BE SHAKEN BY THESE AFFLICTIONS; FOR YOU YOURSELVES KNOW THAT WE ARE APPOINTED TO THIS. FOR, IN FACT, WE TOLD YOU BEFORE WHEN WE WERE WITH YOU THAT WE WOULD SUFFER TRIBULATION, JUST AS IT HAPPENED, AND YOU KNOW...

BUT NOW THAT TIMOTHY HAS COME TO US FROM YOU, AND BROUGHT US GOOD NEWS OF YOUR FAITH AND LOVE, AND THAT YOU ALWAYS HAVE GOOD REMEMBRANCE OF US, GREATLY DESIRING TO SEE US, AS WE ALSO TO SEE YOU -- THEREFORE, BRETHREN, IN ALL OUR AFFLICTION AND DISTRESS WE WERE COMFORTED CONCERNING YOU BY YOUR FAITH. FOR NOW WE LIVE, IF YOU STAND FAST IN THE LORD. FOR WHAT THANKS CAN WE RENDER TO GOD FOR YOU, FOR ALL THE JOY WITH WHICH WE REJOICE FOR YOUR SAKE BEFORE OUR GOD, NIGHT AND DAY PRAYING EXCEEDINGLY THAT WE MAY SEE YOUR FACE AND PERFECT WHAT IS LACKING IN YOUR FAITH?

NOW MAY OUR GOD AND FATHER HIMSELF, AND OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST, DIRECT OUR WAY TO YOU. AND MAY THE LORD MAKE YOU INCREASE AND ABOUND IN LOVE TO ONE ANOTHER AND TO ALL, JUST AS WE DO TO YOU, SO THAT HE MAY ESTABLISH YOUR HEARTS BLAMELESS IN HOLINESS BEFORE OUR GOD AND FATHER AT THE COMING OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST WITH ALL HIS SAINTS." 1 Thess. 3:1-4:1

**“GOD IS NOT
THE AUTHOR OF CONFUSION
BUT OF PEACE,
AS IN ALL THE CHURCHES
OF THE SAINTS.”**

1 Cor. 14:33

**“YOUR
ADVERSARY
THE DEVIL”**



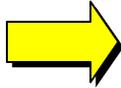
**CREATE
CONFUSION**



**“A LACK OF CERTAINTY,
TO MAKE UNCLEAR,
THE “FUSION”
(MELTING TOGETHER)
OF TWO OPPOSING CONCEPTS,
TO BEWILDER,
TO CONFOUND...”**

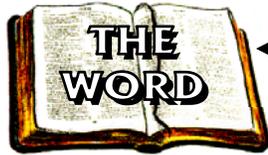
Webster

**"GOD IS NOT
THE AUTHOR OF
CONFUSION.."**



**CONFUSION: "A LACK OF CERTAINTY, TO MAKE UNCLEAR...
THE FUSION (MELTING TOGETHER) OF TWO OPPOSING CONCEPTS..."**

In stating that God is not the author of confusion it implies that there is an author behind all confusion. It is Satan. Satan's fiery dart of confusion is at work to take what is certain and clear and make it uncertain and unclear. How does he do it? It is revealed in the core meaning of the word confusion:



THE FUSION (MELTING TOGETHER) OF TWO OPPOSING CONCEPTS..."

The key to creating confusion is to melt together two concepts that are diametrically opposed to one another, namely the principles of the Word of God vs. the principles of the world.



Confusion reigns among God's people when Satan is successful in marrying together, as one and the same, what is clearly stated in God's Word as being diametrically opposed. The satanic idea is that by melting together worldly goals and objectives as if they are one and the same as the goals stated in God's Word, God's people will feel quite comfortable in pursuing after worldly objectives under the banner of performing God's will. Therefore God charges His servants in ministry with this sober responsibility to counteract what is taking place among God's people by means of deception:

"AND A SERVANT OF THE LORD MUST NOT QUARREL BUT BE GENTLE TO ALL, ABLE TO TEACH, PATIENT, IN HUMILITY CORRECTING THOSE WHO ARE IN OPPOSITION, IF GOD PERHAPS WILL GRANT THEM REPENTANCE, SO THAT THEY MAY KNOW THE TRUTH, AND THAT THEY MAY COME TO THEIR SENSES AND ESCAPE THE SNARE OF THE DEVIL, HAVING BEEN TAKEN CAPTIVE BY HIM TO DO HIS WILL." 2 Tim. 2:24-26

Here is real confusion: Being firmly convinced that as a follower of Christ I am doing God's will in a given area of my life, while all the time I am actually performing Satan's will. Let us keep in mind that Satan, as your adversary, will use whatever deceptive tactic it takes to hinder you from following God's will. If he can hand you a deceptive set of spiritual goals that will detour you from pursuing what really is God's revealed will, even though we pursue it with fervent zeal to please God, the goals are deceptive and we are taken captive by Satan to do his will.

INSPIRED WORDS AUTHORED BY GOD:



WORDS ALSO CONSIDERED INSPIRED BY GOD:



CONFUSION

**THE *FUSION* (MELTING TOGETHER)
OF TWO OPPOSING CONCEPTS..."**

STATED OBJECTIVES:

"...THE KINGDOM OF GOD...
IS RIGHTEOUSNESS, PEACE AND JOY
IN THE HOLY SPIRIT..." Rom. 14:17

A THEOCRACY GOVERNED BY GOD:

"FOR HIS DOMINION IS AN EVERLASTING DOMINION,
AND HIS KINGDOM IS FROM GENERATION TO GENERATION.
ALL THE INHABITANTS OF THE EARTH ARE REPUTED AS
NOTHING; HE DOES ACCORDING TO HIS WILL ...
AND AMONG THE INHABITANTS OF THE EARTH.
NO ONE CAN RESTRAIN HIS HAND..." Dan. 4:34-35

"...THE MOST HIGH GOD RULES IN THE KINGDOM OF MEN,
AND APPOINTS OVER IT WHOMEVER HE CHOOSES." Dan. 5: 21

PRIORITY IS CITIZENSHIP IN HEAVEN:

"...FOR OUR CITIZENSHIP IS IN HEAVEN, FROM WHICH WE ALSO
EAGERLY WAIT FOR THE SAVIOR, THE LORD JESUS CHRIST..." Phil 3:20-21

"...FOR HERE WE HAVE NO CONTINUING CITY,
BUT WE SEEK THE ONE TO COME" Heb. 13:14

NOT A VISIBLE KINGDOM AT THIS TIME:

"...MY KINGDOM IS NOT OF THIS WORLD. IF MY KINGDOM
WERE OF THIS WORLD, MY SERVANTS WOULD FIGHT...
BUT NOW MY KINGDOM IS NOT FROM HERE..." Jn. 18:36-37

" '...THE KINGDOM OF GOD DOES NOT COME WITH OBSERVATION;
NOR WILL THEY SAY "SEE HERE!" OR "SEE THERE!"
FOR INDEED, THE KINGDOM OF GOD IS WITHIN YOU.' "
("IN YOUR HEARTS"-Amp.) Luke 17:20-21

STATED OBJECTIVES:

"INALIENABLE RIGHTS TO
LIFE, LIBERTY, AND
THE PURSUIT OF HAPPINESS"

A DEMOCRACY GOVERNED BY MEN:

"GOVERNMENT OF THE PEOPLE, BY THE PEOPLE,
AND FOR THE PEOPLE...TO SECURE THESE RIGHTS,
GOVERNMENTS ARE INSTITUTED... DERIVING THEIR POWERS
FROM THE CONSENT OF THE GOVERNED...IT IS THE RIGHT
OF THE PEOPLE TO ALTER OR TO ABOLISH IT, AND TO
INSTITUTE NEW GOVERNMENT...AS TO THEM SHALL SEEM
MOST LIKELY TO EFFECT SAFETY AND HAPPINESS."
Declaration of Independence

PRIORITY IS CITIZENSHIP ON EARTH:

"CITIZENSHIP IN THE UNITED STATES IS A LEGAL
MARKER DENOTING POLITICAL MEMBERSHIP THAT
ENTAILS SPECIFIC RIGHTS...AND IS UNDERSTOOD AS A
"RIGHT TO HAVE RIGHTS" Wikipedia

THE PREDOMINANT VISIBLE KINGDOM AT THIS TIME:

"AMERICA IS THE ONLY SUPERPOWER IN THE WORLD
TODAY. A SUPERPOWER IS A NATION WITH A
DOMINANT WORLD POSITION WHICH HAS THE ABILITY
TO INFLUENCE EVENTS AND ITS OWN INTERESTS AND
PROJECT POWER ON A WORLDWIDE SCALE TO
PROTECT THOSE INTERESTS." Wikipedia

Consider the opposite page as a prime example of how God's people can be guilty of being taken captive to do Satan's will. The pursuit of America, by a large segment of Christianity, as a nation founded as "One Nation Under God", and a nation espousing "In God We Trust", graphically illustrates the power of Satan's fiery dart of confusion at work. The brief comparison on the opposite page shows some of the stark contrast of opposing concepts that are being melted together and presented to God's people as one and the same, and supposedly having both been created by the same divine author, namely the God of the Bible. If God is the author of America's constitution, then He is double-minded, for these two institutions (the spiritual nation called the church and the physical nation called America) are far from being the same in foundational or operational principles, but rather they stand in stark opposition to one another.

The principles upon which America rests are carbon-copies of the ancient Roman Empire rather than the picture scripture paints of the Kingdom of God on earth. For God to have purposely patterned America as One Nation under God, and use for a template the pagan-based evil Roman Empire that persecuted early Christianity and executed Jesus Christ, is to give sanctified confusion a firm grip upon the hearts and minds of God's people.



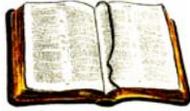
(I would suggest these books which I have written on this subject:)

So consumed and absorbed with America as One Nation Under God, multitudes of Christians demonstrated at the polls recently that they were desperate enough even to endorse a Mormon to be the president of their cherished Christian nation. Even Billy Graham Ministries removed Mormonism from among those religions previously listed on their website as a religious cult so that Christians would feel better about voting for a Mormon. To many, family values are more important than doctrinal beliefs. Ask yourself: would the apostle Paul have endorsed a Mormon to the highest office in the land, one whose religion is stated to have come from an angelic being?

"I MARVEL THAT YOU ARE TURNING AWAY SO SOON...TO A DIFFERENT GOSPEL... BUT EVEN IF WE, OR AN ANGEL FROM HEAVEN, (Mormon's Angel Moroni) PREACH ANY OTHER GOSPEL TO YOU THAN WHAT WE HAVE PREACHED TO YOU, LET HIM BE ACCURSED." Gal. 1:6-8

Note that the apostle Paul draws a far different conclusion pertaining to the destiny of such a one than electing him to the highest office in the land: "...Let him be accursed." For emphasis, Paul's stated conclusion is repeated again in verse Nine. American Christian: Are you functioning under Satan's fiery dart of confusion?

THE WORD OF GOD



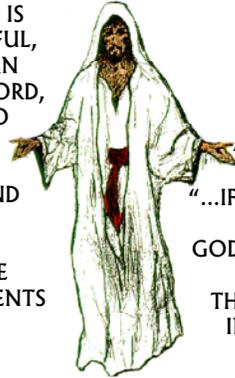
THE ONLY DIVINE SOURCE OF PEACE

“FOR GOD IS NOT THE AUTHOR OF CONFUSION, BUT OF PEACE, AS IN ALL THE CHURCHES OF THE SAINTS.”

1 Cor. 14:33

“FOR THE WORD OF GOD IS LIVING AND POWERFUL, AND SHARPER THAN ANY TWO-EDGED SWORD, PIERCING EVEN TO THE DIVISION OF SOUL AND SPRIIT, AND OF JOINTS AND MARROW, AND IS A DISCERNER OF THE THOUGHTS AND INTENTS OF THE HEART.”

Heb. 4:12



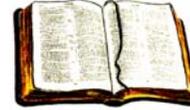
“YOU SHALL NOT ADD TO THE WORD WHICH I COMMAND YOU, NOR TAKE ANYTHING FROM IT...”

Deut. 4:2

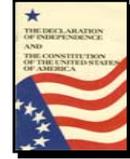
“...IF ANYONE ADDS TO THESE THINGS, GOD WILL ADD TO HIM THE PLAGUES THAT ARE WRITTEN IN THIS BOOK...”

Rev. 22:18

THE WORD OF GOD



AND



PRODUCES CONFUSION

FUSION
(MELTING TOGETHER)
OF TWO OPPOSING
CONCEPTS...”

WISDOM FROM ABOVE:

“BUT THE WISDOM FROM ABOVE IS FIRST OF ALL PURE (UNDEFILED); THEN IT IS PEACE-LOVING, COURTEOUS (CONSIDERATE, GENTLE). [IT IS WILLING TO] YIELD TO REASON, FULL OF COMPASSION AND GOOD FRUITS; IT IS WHOLEHEARTED AND STRAIGHTFORWARD, IMPARTIAL AND UNFEIGNED (FREE FROM DOUBTS, WAVERING, AND INSINCERITY). AND THE HARVEST OF RIGHTEOUSNESS (OF CONFORMITY TO GOD'S WILL IN THOUGHT AND DEED) IS [THE FRUIT OF THE SEED] SOWN IN PEACE BY THOSE WHO WORK FOR AND MAKE PEACE [IN THEMSELVES AND IN OTHERS, THAT PEACE WHICH MEANS CONCORD, AGREEMENT, AND HARMONY BETWEEN INDIVIDUALS, WITH UNDISTURBEDNESS, IN A PEACEFUL MIND FREE FROM FEARS AND AGITATING PASSIONS AND MORAL CONFLICTS].”

WISDOM FROM BELOW:

“BUT IF YOU HAVE BITTER JEALOUSY (ENVY) AND CONTENTION (RIVALRY, SELFISH AMBITION) IN YOUR HEARTS, DO NOT PRIDE YOURSELVES ON IT AND THUS BE IN DEFIANCE OF AND FALSE TO THE TRUTH. THIS [SUPERFICIAL] WISDOM IS NOT SUCH AS COMES DOWN FROM ABOVE, BUT IS EARTHLY, UNSPIRITUAL (ANIMAL), EVEN DEVILISH (DEMONIACAL). FOR WHEREVER THERE IS JEALOUSY (ENVY) AND CONTENTION (RIVALRY AND SELFISH AMBITION), THERE WILL ALSO BE CONFUSION (UNREST, DISHARMONY, REBELLION) AND ALL SORTS OF EVIL AND VILE PRACTICES.”

James 3:14-18 Amplified

“I MARVEL THAT YOU ARE TURNING AWAY SO SOON...TO A DIFFERENT GOSPEL... BUT EVEN IF WE, OR AN ANGEL FROM HEAVEN (Mormon’s Angel Moroni) PREACH ANY OTHER GOSPEL TO YOU THAN WHAT WE HAVE PREACHED TO YOU, LET HIM BE ACCURSED. AS WE HAVE SAID BEFORE, SO NOW I SAY AGAIN, IF ANYONE PREACHES ANY OTHER GOSPEL TO YOU THAN WHAT YOU HAVE RECEIVED, LET HIM BE ACCURSED.” Gal. 1:6-9

Obviously, Paul places a crystal clear judgment on anyone endorsing a different gospel than he preached, “...let him be accursed.” However, today multitudes of Christians make a contrary judgment as clear as mud, “Let him become our President.” Why so? Because he holds to the same family values as does the American political brand of Christianity. What happen to Paul’s judgment based on the condemning factor of embracing a different gospel? Has not much of Christendom in America become confused? What is the basis of such wisdom? Consider the apostle James’ warning as to the origin of confusion:

“...DO NOT BOAST AND LIE AGAINST THE TRUTH. THIS WISDOM DOES NOT DESCEND FROM ABOVE, BUT IS EARTHLY, SENSUAL, DEMONIC. FOR WHERE ENVY AND SELF-SEEKING EXIST, CONFUSION AND EVERY EVIL THING WILL BE THERE.” James 3:14-16

It is only the Word of God that is capable of making true black and white contrasts capable of exposing the demonically-based wisdom from below that generates the fiery dart of confusion. The wisdom of God calls drunkenness sin. The wisdom of man calls it a disease. The wisdom of God states homosexuality and lesbianism to be perverse sin that generates the wrath of God (Rom. 1:26-27). Such wrath from God fell upon Sodom and Gomorrah. The wisdom of man now labels such previously condemned perversities to be socially acceptable as an alternate lifestyle. The Word of God singles out the Kingdom of God as a spiritual kingdom abiding in the heart of all believers throughout the whole world, but the wisdom of man replaces that concept with a visible, tangible, geographical, physical kingdom called America. God’s own people succumb to deception in pursuit of this earthly kingdom with fervent zeal under the false banner of being One Nation Under God, a divinely inspired creation of God Himself.

We are called to seek first the Kingdom of God and his righteousness (Matt. 6:33). Ask American Christians as members of the Religious Right, the Moral Majority, or the Tea Party movement, and they will tell you that is exactly what they are doing in seeking to take back America for God. However, is not seeking first the Kingdom of God a universal call to all believers? How is this mandate to be fulfilled in the lives of the majority of Christianity that live outside the kingdom of America? Is not American Christianity in a death-grip of Satan’s fiery dart of confusion with this limited and custom-made version (or perversion) of the gospel of Jesus Christ?

**“BUT UNDERSTAND THIS,
THAT IN THE LAST DAYS WILL COME
(SET IN) PERILOUS TIMES OF GREAT STRESS
AND TROUBLE HARD TO DEAL WITH AND
HARD TO BEAR.
FOR PEOPLE WILL BE...**

**“YOUR
ADVERSARY
THE DEVIL”**



**CREATE
STRESS**



**UTTERLY SELF-CENTERED
PROUD AND ARROGANT...
CONTEMPTUOUS...ABUSIVE SCOFFERS,
DISOBEDIENT TO PARENTS,
UNGRATEFUL, RELENTLESS
(ADMITTING OF NO TRUCE OR APPEASEMENT) SLANDERERS,
FALSE ACCUSERS... CALLOUS AND INHUMAN, TROUBLEMAKERS...
LOOSE IN MORALS AND CONDUCT,
UNCONTROLLED AND FIERCE, RASH...”** 2 Tim. 3:1-4 Amplified

We tend to think of the last days being marked primarily with the cataclysmic list Jesus gives in Matthew 24 of nation against nation producing wars and rumors of war, of earthquakes in various places, and of famines and pestilences. However, among all the prophetic signs of the times singled out marking the events of the last days is also the setting in of a period of great difficulty which Paul labels as **PERILOUS TIMES OF GREAT STRESS**. The source behind such great stress that Paul singles out is neither war nor weather, but instead the ever-increasing deteriorating condition of the character of people themselves:

“BUT UNDERSTAND THIS, THAT IN THE LAST DAYS WILL COME (SET IN) PERILOUS TIMES OF GREAT STRESS AND TROUBLE HARD TO DEAL WITH AND HARD TO BEAR. FOR PEOPLE WILL BE... UTTERLY SELF-CENTERED PROUD AND ARROGANT... CONTEMPTUOUS...ABUSIVE SCOFFERS, DISOBEDIENT TO PARENTS, UNGRATEFUL, RELENTLESS (ADMITTING OF NO TRUCE OR APPEASEMENT) SLANDERERS, FALSE ACCUSERS...CALLOUS AND INHUMAN, TROUBLEMAKERS... LOOSE IN MORALS AND CONDUCT, UNCONTROLLED AND FIERCE, RASH...”

2 Tim. 3:1-4 Amplified excerpts

It is this end-time deterioration of the character of people that Paul states will create perilous times of great stress and trouble hard to deal with and difficult to bear, Matthew 24 also lists this depiction of people problems as well:

“AND MANY WILL BE OFFENDED, WILL BETRAY ONE ANOTHER, AND WILL HATE ONE ANOTHER. ...BECAUSE LAWLESSNESS WILL ABOUND, THE LOVE OF MANY WILL GROW COLD.” Matt. 24:10,12

Earlier in Matthew Chapter 10, Jesus gives this alarming scenario of potential people problems that will face any dedicated follower of Christ:

"DO NOT THINK THAT I CAME TO BRING PEACE ON EARTH. I DID NOT COME TO BRING PEACE BUT A SWORD. FOR I HAVE COME TO 'SET A MAN AGAINST HIS FATHER, A DAUGHTER AGAINST HER MOTHER, AND A DAUGHTER-IN-LAW AGAINST HER MOTHER-IN-LAW;' AND 'A MAN'S ENEMIES WILL BE THOSE OF HIS OWN HOUSEHOLD.' "

Matt. 10:34-37

David records a mournful time in his own life in suffering through such a deterioration of a close relationship:

“FOR IT IS NOT AN ENEMY WHO REPROACHES ME; THEN I COULD BEAR IT. NOR IS IT ONE WHO HATES ME WHO HAS EXALTED HIMSELF AGAINST ME; THEN I COULD HIDE FROM HIM. BUT IT WAS YOU, A MAN MY EQUAL, MY COMPANION AND MY ACQUAINTANCE. WE TOOK SWEET COUNSEL TOGETHER, AND WALKED TO THE HOUSE OF GOD IN THE THRONG.” Ps. 55:12-14

**"YOUR
ADVERSARY
THE DEVIL"**

Psm. 34:19



**CREATE
AFFLICTION**



**AFFLICTIONS:
"SUDDEN OR ONGOING DISTRESS,
UNSETTLING TROUBLE,
TIME-CONSUMING EMERGENCIES,
CONDITIONS PRODUCING
MENTAL ANGUISH,
DISTRESSING SITUATIONS"**

"...PERILOUS TIMES OF GREAT STRESS AND TROUBLE HARD TO DEAL WITH AND HARD TO BEAR..."

2 Tim. 3:1-4 Amplified

Following hard on the heels of the underlying stress in relationships because of what men will become, is Satan's fiery dart laced with many repetitious and pain-filled afflictions. All the more painful are afflictions that are brought on by those that we love, and as Jesus reminds us, they can even be members of our own household. We live in times of the ripening of Wheat and Tares (Matt.13:36-43), of the developing of the Wise and Foolish Virgins (Matt.25:1-13), and of the distinction between the righteous and the wicked (Prov.12:21). Let us understand that from the data base of the tares, the foolish virgins and the wicked, there shall rise much affliction directed at the wheat, the wise and the righteous. Make no mistake about it, affliction is a mark of the last days:

AFFLICTION: "SUDDEN OR ONGOING DISTRESS, UNSETTLING TROUBLE, TIME CONSUMING EMERGENCIES, CONDITIONS PRODUCING MENTAL ANGUISH, DISTRESSING SITUATIONS"

Add to that definition the frequency of such afflictions that the righteous will suffer, and you begin to get the scope of what we are facing:

"MANY ARE THE AFFLICTIONS OF THE RIGHTEOUS, BUT THE LORD DELIVERS HIM OUT OF THEM ALL." Psm. 34:19

I have often wished that the Lord would use overnight delivery or priority mail to deliver me speedily from my on-going afflictions, but it seems that He prefers to use the non-emergency form of delivery that people cynically call "snail-mail." Just hang in there, it will show up eventually. Let us not forget that the purpose of Satan and the purpose of God pertaining to affliction are not the same:

"...YOU (Satan) MEANT EVIL AGAINST ME; BUT GOD MEANT IT FOR GOOD..." Gen. 50:20

That means our God is able to take something Satan filled with evil and produce something good by means of it. Paul reminds us of this over-riding principle of God:

"AND WE KNOW THAT ALL THINGS WORK TOGETHER FOR GOOD TO THOSE WHO LOVE GOD, TO THOSE WHO ARE THE CALLED ACCORDING TO HIS PURPOSE...TO BE CONFORMED TO THE IMAGE OF HIS SON, THAT HE MIGHT BE THE FIRSTBORN AMONG MANY BRETHREN."

Rom. 8:28-30

“...YOU (Satan) MEANT EVIL AGAINST ME; BUT GOD MEANT IT FOR GOOD...”

Gen. 50:20

“MY BRETHREN, COUNT IT ALL JOY WHEN YOU FALL INTO VARIOUS TRIALS, KNOWING THAT THE TESTING OF YOUR FAITH PRODUCES PATIENCE. BUT LET PATIENCE HAVE ITS PERFECT WORK, THAT YOU MAY BE PERFECT AND COMPLETE, LACKING NOTHING.”

James 1:2-5

“IN THIS YOU GREATLY REJOICE, THOUGH NOW FOR A LITTLE WHILE, IF NEED BE, YOU HAVE BEEN GRIEVED BY VARIOUS TRIALS, THAT THE GENUINENESS OF YOUR FAITH, BEING MUCH MORE PRECIOUS THAN GOLD THAT PERISHES, THOUGH IT IS TESTED BY FIRE, MAY BE FOUND TO PRAISE, HONOR, AND GLORY AT THE REVELATION OF JESUS CHRIST...”

1 Peter 1:6-8

“BELOVED, DO NOT THINK IT STRANGE CONCERNING THE FIERY TRIAL WHICH IS TO TRY YOU, AS THOUGH SOME STRANGE THING HAPPENED TO YOU; BUT REJOICE TO THE EXTENT THAT YOU PARTAKE OF CHRIST'S SUFFERINGS, THAT WHEN HIS GLORY IS REVEALED, YOU MAY ALSO BE GLAD WITH EXCEEDING JOY. IF YOU ARE REPROACHED FOR THE NAME OF CHRIST, BLESSED ARE YOU, FOR THE SPIRIT OF GLORY AND OF GOD RESTS UPON YOU... IF ANYONE SUFFERS AS A CHRISTIAN, LET HIM NOT BE ASHAMED, BUT LET HIM GLORIFY GOD IN THIS MATTER.”

1 Peter 4:12-16

“MOREOVER [LET US ALSO BE FULL OF JOY NOW!] LET US EXULT AND TRIUMPH IN OUR TROUBLES AND REJOICE IN OUR SUFFERINGS, KNOWING THAT PRESSURE AND AFFLICTION AND HARDSHIP PRODUCE PATIENT AND UNSWERVING ENDURANCE. AND ENDURANCE (FORTITUDE) DEVELOPS MATURITY OF CHARACTER (APPROVED FAITH AND TRIED INTEGRITY).”

Rom. 5:3-4 Amplified

“OH, BLESS OUR GOD, YOU PEOPLES! AND MAKE THE VOICE OF HIS PRAISE TO BE HEARD, WHO KEEPS OUR SOUL AMONG THE LIVING, AND DOES NOT ALLOW OUR FEET TO BE MOVED. FOR YOU, O GOD, HAVE TESTED US; YOU HAVE REFINED US AS SILVER IS REFINED. YOU BROUGHT US INTO THE NET; YOU LAID AFFLICTION ON OUR BACKS. YOU HAVE CAUSED MEN TO RIDE OVER OUR HEADS; WE WENT THROUGH FIRE AND THROUGH WATER; BUT YOU BROUGHT US OUT TO RICH FULFILLMENT.”

Ps. 66:8-12

The opposite page reveals what God intends to accomplish by means of allowing stress and affliction in the life of every dedicated believer. Yes, it is Satan at work with his fiery darts by unleashing ever-increasing stress into our relationships. Such stress will take place in the home, at work and even at church where you expect it the least.

However, God intends to take what Satan means for evil and produce good fruit from it. Satan banks on God's people becoming extremely **BITTER** against God in the midst of great stress and affliction. God seeks to make His people increasingly **BETTER** through creating a vehicle by which the Holy Spirit can manifest His fruit in our lives. Carefully meditate in the scriptures on the opposite page for it is evident that all spiritual growth comes through what God allows to transpire in days of adversity, not in days of prosperity! We must embrace both concepts as from a loving God:

**“IN THE DAY OF PROSPERITY BE JOYFUL, BUT IN THE DAY OF ADVERSITY CONSIDER:
SURELY GOD HAS APPOINTED THE ONE AS WELL AS THE OTHER...”** Eccl. 7:14

Ve must never forget what is shown to us as transpiring behind the scenes between God and Satan:

“THEN THE LORD SAID TO SATAN, ‘HAVE YOU CONSIDERED MY SERVANT JOB, THAT THERE IS NONE LIKE HIM ON THE EARTH, A BLAMELESS AND UPRIGHT MAN, ONE WHO FEARS GOD AND SHUNS EVIL?’ SO SATAN ANSWERED THE LORD AND SAID, ‘DOES JOB FEAR GOD FOR NOTHING? HAVE YOU NOT MADE A HEDGE AROUND HIM, AROUND HIS HOUSEHOLD, AND AROUND ALL THAT HE HAS ON EVERY SIDE? YOU HAVE BLESSED THE WORK OF HIS HANDS, AND HIS POSSESSIONS HAVE INCREASED IN THE LAND. BUT NOW, STRETCH OUT YOUR HAND AND TOUCH ALL THAT HE HAS, AND HE WILL SURELY CURSE YOU TO YOUR FACE!’ AND THE LORD SAID TO SATAN, ‘BEHOLD, ALL THAT HE HAS IS IN YOUR POWER; ONLY DO NOT LAY A HAND ON HIS PERSON.’ ” Job 1:8-12

Notice what Satan is after; he wants Job to become so bitter that he will curse God to His face. However, we know the recorded end of this initial trial God permits Job to suffer was that he did not sin nor charge God with wrong (Job 1:22). Although it is an unsettling statement to read that all that Job had was placed in Satan's power, we see that God places limits on Satan by also stating that he was not to lay a hand on his person. Nothing comes to us that does not pass through the permissive will of God who is governing the degree of the trial that He allows Satan to carry out. No matter the degree of stress or affliction that comes your way, know that God is in charge of the trying of those saints who, like Job, are totally dedicated to serving God.

**“WOE IS ME FOR MY HURT!
MY WOUND IS SEVERE.**

**BUT I SAY,
‘TRULY THIS IS AN INFIRMITY,
AND I MUST BEAR IT.’ ”**

Jer. 10:19

**“YOUR
ADVERSARY
THE DEVIL”**



**CREATE
INFIRMITY**



INFIRMITY: “PHYSICAL WEAKENING”

**“ILLNESS, AILMENT, DISEASE, DISORDER, SICKNESS,
FRAILTY, WEAKNESS, DISABILITY, IMPAIRMENT”**

Webster

Physical infirmity-the ultimate test. We left off with Job's first trial by Satan being limited by God to only being able to touch what Job physically possessed:

"...'BEHOLD, ALL THAT HE HAS IS IN YOUR POWER; ONLY DO NOT LAY A HAND ON HIS PERSON.'" Job 1:12

Had the story of Job ended there we would have great credence for eliminating physical infirmity as being a test from God upon the faithful follower. However, there is a "round two" following the initial trial pertaining to Job's possessions:

"THEN THE LORD SAID TO SATAN, 'HAVE YOU CONSIDERED MY SERVANT JOB, THAT THERE IS NONE LIKE HIM ON THE EARTH, A BLAMELESS AND UPRIGHT MAN, ONE WHO FEARS GOD AND SHUNS EVIL?

...SO SATAN ANSWERED THE LORD AND SAID, 'SKIN FOR SKIN! YES, ALL THAT A MAN HAS HE WILL GIVE FOR HIS LIFE. BUT STRETCH OUT YOUR HAND NOW, AND TOUCH HIS BONE AND HIS FLESH, AND

HE WILL SURELY CURSE YOU TO YOUR FACE!' AND THE LORD SAID TO SATAN,

'BEHOLD, HE IS IN YOUR HAND, BUT SPARE HIS LIFE.' SO SATAN... STRUCK JOB WITH PAINFUL BOILS FROM THE SOLE OF HIS FOOT TO THE CROWN OF HIS HEAD... THEN HIS WIFE SAID TO HIM,

'DO YOU STILL HOLD FAST TO YOUR INTEGRITY? CURSE GOD AND DIE!'

BUT HE SAID TO HER, 'YOU SPEAK AS ONE OF THE FOOLISH WOMEN SPEAKS.

SHALL WE INDEED ACCEPT GOOD FROM GOD, AND SHALL WE NOT ACCEPT ADVERSITY?'

IN ALL THIS JOB DID NOT SIN WITH HIS LIPS." Job 2:3-10

Satan was given divine permission to ultimately test Job with physical infirmity. What is at stake is the same: Satan believes he can provoke Job to become bitter enough to curse God to His face. However, God believes in his servant Job enough to know that this trial will eventually make him better-not bitter! What follows is forty detailed chapters revealing how God took this severe physical infirmity and used it to make Job a better person in the end. God did the same thing with the apostle Paul:

"I WILL NOT BOAST, EXCEPT IN MY INFIRMITIES... LEST I SHOULD BE EXALTED ABOVE MEASURE BY THE ABUNDANCE OF THE REVELATIONS, A THORN IN THE FLESH WAS GIVEN TO ME, A MESSENGER OF SATAN TO BUFFET ME, LEST I BE EXALTED ABOVE MEASURE. CONCERNING THIS THING I PLEADED WITH THE LORD THREE TIMES THAT IT MIGHT DEPART FROM ME. AND HE SAID TO ME, 'MY GRACE IS SUFFICIENT FOR YOU, FOR MY STRENGTH IS MADE PERFECT IN WEAKNESS.' THEREFORE MOST GLADLY I WILL RATHER BOAST IN MY INFIRMITIES, THAT THE POWER OF CHRIST MAY REST UPON ME. THEREFORE I TAKE PLEASURE IN INFIRMITIES...

FOR WHEN I AM WEAK, THEN I AM STRONG."

2 Cor. 12:5-10

“YOU KNOW THAT BECAUSE OF PHYSICAL INFIRMITY I PREACHED THE GOSPEL TO YOU AT THE FIRST. AND MY TRIAL WHICH WAS IN MY FLESH YOU DID NOT DESPISE OR REJECT, BUT YOU RECEIVED ME AS AN ANGEL OF GOD, EVEN AS CHRIST JESUS. WHAT THEN WAS THE BLESSING YOU ENJOYED? FOR I BEAR YOU WITNESS THAT, IF POSSIBLE, YOU WOULD HAVE PLUCKED OUT YOUR OWN EYES AND GIVEN THEM TO ME.” Gal. 4:13-16

I believe Paul's thorn in the flesh, as a messenger from Satan, was his frail eyesight. It plagued him all of his Christian life. It was so bad that it necessitated for Luke, the physician, to travel with Paul and even required others to physically write his epistles for him (Rom. 16:22, Gal.6:11). Regardless, let us not miss Paul's summarization of the value of his physical infirmity allowed by God through Satan:

“THEREFORE MOST GLADLY I WILL RATHER BOAST IN MY INFIRMITIES, THAT THE POWER OF CHRIST MAY REST UPON ME. THEREFORE I TAKE PLEASURE IN INFIRMITIES... FOR WHEN I AM WEAK, THEN I AM STRONG.” 2 Cor. 12:9-10

It is necessary to inject that not all physical infirmity is the result of a life lived like Job or Paul. We are warned that whatever a man sows, that is what he shall also reap (Gal. 6:7). If a believer in Christ disregards the care of his/her physical body, they can smoke their way into lung cancer. The alcoholic can drink his way into the destruction of his liver, and the drug addict can inject himself until he/she destroys the ability of the brain to function rationally. A fork can be deemed as a weapon of mass destruction. Being overly obese can be the result of a lack of self-control at the dinner table leading to various forms of serious heart trouble and early death. Carelessly feeding oneself a diet of junk food from McDonalds is not the kind of trial we are discussing. Watch the documentary entitled “Super-size Me” if you think God will bless whatever you eat. We are not speaking of such self-induced physical infirmity as being a trial from God such as Job and Paul experienced. All such described briefly here are merely the result of giving place to the devil in order that he may rob, kill, and destroy as he sees fit.

Take firm hold of the message: we are addressing physical infirmity that is the result of a life lived like Job, a man of whom God boasted that there was none like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man, one who feared God and avoided evil. We speak of a man like Paul whose physical infirmity was given because of the abundance of his revelations, a thorn in the flesh was given to him, a messenger of Satan to buffet him. These were saints of God who could not be moved aside by Satan in any other way. So Satan asked for them to be tested at the highest permissible level, that of skin for skin: Satan's challenge of Job was that if God would touch his bone and his flesh, he would surely curse God to His face! Truly, physical infirmity is the ultimate level of testing for God's people.

JOB: "THOUGH HE SLAY ME, YET WILL I TRUST HIM..."

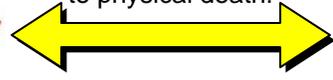
(Job 13:15)

"...AFTER MY SKIN IS DESTROYED, THIS I KNOW, THAT IN MY FLESH I SHALL SEE GOD..."

(Job 19:26)



This is God's best responding to Satan's worst-physical infirmity, even if God allows it to lead to physical death!



PAUL:

"IF WE LIVE, WE LIVE TO THE LORD; AND IF WE DIE, WE DIE TO THE LORD. THEREFORE, WHETHER WE LIVE OR DIE, WE ARE THE LORD'S."

Rom. 14:8

The effectiveness of Satan's fiery dart of physical infirmity is quickly quenched in the spirit of men like Job and Paul who held fast to the eternal vision of God's promise of the resurrection of the physical body. Job, in the midst of his lack of understanding of what was taking place behind the scenes between God and Satan, was willing to trust God even if God would slay him. He looked to the ultimate healing of the resurrection of the dead body.

However, it was not God who sought to slay Job, but rather it was Satan. God, overseeing the trial of His servant, restricted Satan from taking Job's life in saying, "...he is in your hand, but spare his life" (Job 2:6). It is important to understand that not all trials of physical infirmity end up with God sparing the life of the one being tried as we see with Job. Perhaps you have known, as I have also, saints of God that persevered in great faith in the midst of physical infirmity, but ended up losing the battle. We bury them with great grief, but we must understand that in some cases God will allow death to take place. Consider Jesus' close friend, Lazarus. Read the story carefully. Jesus waited until His friend Lazarus had died and was buried for four days. It was then that He went to where Lazarus was buried and raised him from the dead. The moral to the story that Jesus spoke to Mary was this:

"JESUS SAID TO HER, 'I AM THE RESURRECTION AND THE LIFE. HE WHO BELIEVES IN ME, THOUGH HE MAY DIE, HE SHALL LIVE. AND WHOEVER LIVES AND BELIEVES IN ME SHALL NEVER DIE. DO YOU BELIEVE THIS?'"

John 11:25-26

Jesus allowed His close friend to die to make a point. Death is not final for the believer. The resurrection has final authority and contains God's expression of ultimate healing of all physical infirmity. Not all physical infirmity is healed in this present life! We are misinterpreting healing passages in scripture when we severely and fervently limit them to only taking place in this present life. Some healing must wait until the resurrection, but all God's people will be healed!

**JOB: "THOUGH
HE SLAY ME,
YET WILL I TRUST HIM..."**

(Job 13:15)

**"...AFTER MY SKIN IS DESTROYED,
THIS I KNOW,
THAT IN MY FLESH
I SHALL SEE GOD..."**

(Job 19:26)



**PAUL: "IF WE LIVE,
WE LIVE TO THE LORD;
AND IF WE DIE,
WE DIE TO THE LORD.**

**THEREFORE,
WHETHER WE LIVE OR DIE,
WE ARE THE LORD'S."**

Rom. 14:8



Consider again our two examples of men who lived under physical infirmity. Obviously, both have died physically. However, both are not in the same position although they both are presently with the Lord! Job has already received his resurrected body, but Paul has not! In speaking of the resurrection of the dead, Paul tells us:

"BUT NOW CHRIST IS RISEN FROM THE DEAD, AND HAS BECOME THE FIRSTFRUITS OF THOSE WHO HAVE FALLEN ASLEEP. FOR SINCE BY MAN CAME DEATH, BY MAN ALSO CAME THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD. FOR AS IN ADAM ALL DIE, EVEN SO IN CHRIST ALL SHALL BE MADE ALIVE. BUT EACH ONE IN HIS OWN ORDER: CHRIST THE FIRSTFRUITS, AFTERWARD THOSE WHO ARE CHRIST'S AT HIS COMING." 1 Cor 15:20-23

When Jesus was raised from the dead, He brought up with Him, from a place called Abraham's Bosom in the lower parts of the earth, all the faithful Old Covenant saints. In Matthew 27 we read:

"AND THE GRAVES WERE OPENED; AND MANY BODIES OF THE SAINTS WHO HAD FALLEN ASLEEP WERE RAISED; AND COMING OUT OF THE GRAVES AFTER HIS RESURRECTION, THEY WENT INTO THE HOLY CITY AND APPEARED TO MANY."

Matt. 27:52-53

Included among those raised from the dead, along with Jesus, was Job. Being part of the firstfruits from the dead, he received his resurrected body and now is complete; spirit, soul and body. However, Paul was not part of the firstfruit resurrection as he died after that great event. It was Paul who stated that to be absent from the body is to be present with the Lord (2 Cor. 5:6). Paul is presently with the Lord in spirit and soul, but his body still lies in the grave awaiting the next stage of the resurrection of the dead which is to take place at the event known as the rapture (1 Thess. 4:13-18).

Although Paul would tell you that it is wonderful to be with the Lord in spirit and in soul, he will not be complete until after his body is resurrected from the dead! Ultimate completion takes place by means of the resurrection!

Paul awaits a great event to take place that will make him complete. All of God's faithful saints who have died since firstfruits (the resurrection of Jesus) are in the same incomplete situation. Life truly will begin with the resurrection of the body from the grave. Here is Paul's depiction of that event. Write it on the tablets of your heart if you too find yourself among God's saints who are being tried by extreme physical infirmity, even such infirmity that may lead to physical death. Dear saints, we may indeed die physically, but death has no power over God's people:

**"SO ALSO IS THE RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD. THE BODY IS SOWN IN CORRUPTION,
IT IS RAISED IN INCORRUPTION. IT IS SOWN IN DISHONOR, IT IS RAISED IN GLORY.
IT IS SOWN IN WEAKNESS, IT IS RAISED IN POWER. IT IS SOWN A NATURAL BODY, IT IS RAISED A SPIRITUAL BODY...
NOW THIS I SAY, BRETHREN, THAT FLESH AND BLOOD CANNOT INHERIT THE KINGDOM OF GOD;
NOR DOES CORRUPTION INHERIT INCORRUPTION. BEHOLD, I TELL YOU A MYSTERY: WE SHALL NOT ALL SLEEP,
BUT WE SHALL ALL BE CHANGED -- IN A MOMENT, IN THE TWINKLING OF AN EYE, AT THE LAST TRUMPET.
FOR THE TRUMPET WILL SOUND, AND THE DEAD WILL BE RAISED INCORRUPTIBLE, AND WE SHALL BE CHANGED.
FOR THIS CORRUPTIBLE MUST PUT ON INCORRUPTION, AND THIS MORTAL MUST PUT ON IMMORTALITY.
SO WHEN THIS CORRUPTIBLE HAS PUT ON INCORRUPTION, AND THIS MORTAL HAS PUT ON IMMORTALITY,
THEN SHALL BE BROUGHT TO PASS THE SAYING THAT IS WRITTEN: 'DEATH IS SWALLOWED UP IN VICTORY.'
'O DEATH, WHERE IS YOUR STING? O HADES, WHERE IS YOUR VICTORY?'
...BUT THANKS BE TO GOD, WHO GIVES US THE VICTORY THROUGH OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST.
THEREFORE, MY BELOVED BRETHREN, BE STEADFAST, IMMOVABLE,
ALWAYS ABOUNDING IN THE WORK OF THE LORD,
KNOWING THAT YOUR LABOR IS NOT IN VAIN IN THE LORD."**

1 Cor. 15 42-58 excerpts

Jesus as the Way, the Truth and the Life (Jn. 14:6) is a progressive revelation of Himself that unfolds in the life of the believer. He has become the Way of salvation (past). He is the Truth (present) as we continue to follow Him and embrace the truth of His Word (your Word is truth-Jn.17:17)

However, in His role as the Life, this aspect of Jesus is yet future for us all. Life truly begins at the resurrection of the dead and not before! This present temporal life is not the abundant life that Jesus promised. It is the life which is to come. It will begin for us at the event known as the rapture which contains the next stage of the resurrection of the dead in which the spirit and soul will be reunited with a resurrected body.

**“WOE IS ME FOR MY HURT! MY WOUND IS SEVERE. BUT I SAY,
‘TRULY THIS IS AN INFIRMITY, AND I MUST BEAR IT.’ ”**

Jer. 10:19

My wife and I sat in the doctor's office as he explained to us the findings of an MRI performed due to a sudden build up of fluid in my left leg and groin area. We had just returned from a long flight to Ohio in which I performed the funeral and memorial service of my long-time friend and vice-president of our church, Dutch Karickhoff. On the return flight home, I suffered with a nasty bout of restless leg syndrome which led to the discovery of a badly swollen left leg and foot. That is how I ended up in the doctor's office awaiting the outcome of an MRI.

We were not at all prepared for the words of sympathy that were flowing out of my doctor's mouth. We could not believe what we were hearing. It was that dreaded “C” word being applied to my condition. It was Stage II, chronic, Non-Hodgkin's, Lymphoma cancer in both sides of my pelvic region that was causing the excessive fluid buildup. “I have cancer” kept ringing inside my head. “It cannot be, it cannot be”, I kept saying to myself.

To say the least, Lucette and I were stunned beyond measure. We were not food junkies, but sought to eat carefully. My wife always shopped carefully at an organic store to help insure that we would never hear these kind of words. Even greater, together we have observed the principles of the Old Testament dietary law for over thirty years of our lives. We believe that God's dietary Laws are among the necessary keys to avoiding such dreaded things as cancer. We are assured by conditional promises in God's word such as, "If you diligently heed the voice of the Lord your God and do what is right in His sight, give ear to His commandments and keep all His statutes, I will put none of the diseases on you which I have brought on the Egyptians. For I am the Lord who heals you" (Ex. 15:26) . We felt secure that observing the principles of the dietary law would be sufficient to keep us from things like cancer. We still believe this to be true, except as I have been illustrating from the book of Job, at times God may let down our protective hedge in order to prove to Satan that physical infirmity will not cause a dedicated believer to curse God to His face anymore than it did with Job. Please understand, I am not placing myself on equal footing with the likes of what Job suffered at the hand of Satan, but the principle is quite applicable. If we are doing all that we can to avoid Satan's ensnarement (such as observing the principles of the dietary law), and physical infirmity still comes into our lives, we can know that Satan has asked for us that he might sift us like wheat as he did with Peter. Physical infirmity now becomes part of our test.



"SIMON, SIMON! INDEED, SATAN HAS ASKED FOR YOU, THAT HE MAY SIFT YOU AS WHEAT. BUT I HAVE PRAYED FOR YOU, THAT YOUR FAITH SHOULD NOT FAIL; AND WHEN YOU HAVE RETURNED TO ME, STRENGTHEN YOUR BRETHREN." Luke 22:31-32

Although Peter's trial is not one of physical infirmity, the threefold principle of what Jesus tells Peter is applicable in all trials God allows Satan to perform by means of inducing physical infirmity:

1. If Satan has asked for you (or me) in the same manner he asked for Job, he wants to sift your faith. What he really wants is your faith to totally fail the test, and you, in great bitterness, to curse God to His face.
2. Jesus commits to pray for you (or me) in order that your faith will NOT fail the test. Like Job, you (or I) will not sin nor charge God with wrong (Job 1:22).
3. When you (or I) triumph in the midst of the trial, then you (or I) should seek to strengthen our brethren. In other words, teach them (by example) how to handle physical infirmity by means of God's enabling grace.

Paul is quite specific in stating that our own trials are designed to impart God's means of comfort to others:

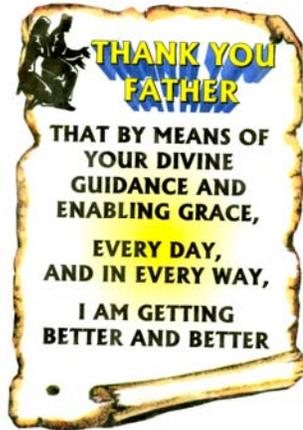
"BLESSED BE THE GOD AND FATHER OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST, THE FATHER OF MERCIES AND GOD OF ALL COMFORT, WHO COMFORTS US IN ALL OUR TRIBULATION, THAT WE MAY BE ABLE TO COMFORT THOSE WHO ARE IN ANY TROUBLE, WITH THE COMFORT WITH WHICH WE OURSELVES ARE COMFORTED BY GOD." 2 Cor. 1:3-5

However, remember what we learned previously; we are not to passively accept physical infirmity, but when it comes we must enter into intense warfare and resist its destructive power steadfast in the faith:

"BE SOBER, BE VIGILANT; BECAUSE YOUR ADVERSARY THE DEVIL WALKS ABOUT LIKE A ROARING LION, SEEKING WHOM HE MAY DEVOUR. RESIST HIM, STEADFAST IN THE FAITH, KNOWING THAT THE SAME SUFFERINGS ARE EXPERIENCED BY YOUR BROTHERHOOD IN THE WORLD. BUT MAY THE GOD OF ALL GRACE, WHO CALLED US TO HIS ETERNAL GLORY BY CHRIST JESUS, AFTER YOU HAVE SUFFERED A WHILE, (He will) PERFECT, ESTABLISH, STRENGTHEN, AND SETTLE YOU." 1 Peter 5:8-11

An extreme threat on your life by Satan calls for extreme methods of warfare. My ministry was crippled by this cancer. I stopped producing monthly teaching newsletters, cancelled my weekly radio programs, and stepped out of the pulpit in our local congregation in order to warfare against this deadly threat. I was impressed by God to enter into a forty day fast which I had never done. I had fasted twenty-one days in the earlier days of ministry on behalf of our son Mike and his lung disease, but forty days! This is just for Moses and Jesus, right? No, I felt it was for me too if I wanted to come out on the other side of this trial alive and well.

I made this poster and pasted it on my bathroom mirror in order to remind myself every day that I was under God's divine guidance and His enabling grace to endure what lay ahead.



The more I researched the value of fasting, I began to believe that God might smite this cancer totally through an extended fast. In 37 days I went from 142 pounds down to a mere 114 pounds. I was so thin that I looked like a survivor of Auschwitz. However, I was amazingly well, though I did not look like it. During the lengthy fast period, my body manifested a series of large red rashes and spots as the fast did its purging work.

My wife and I painfully marked off on a calendar each day of the fast with a big red "X". After 21 days I began to wonder if I could indeed complete forty days. It became a gruesome ordeal, but we persevered together. My wife was a huge encouragement during these trying times. Indeed as Solomon wrote:

"TWO ARE BETTER THAN ONE, BECAUSE THEY HAVE A GOOD REWARD FOR THEIR LABOR. FOR IF THEY FALL, ONE WILL LIFT UP HIS COMPANION... THOUGH ONE MAY BE OVERPOWERED BY ANOTHER, TWO CAN WITHSTAND HIM. AND A THREEFOLD CORD IS NOT QUICKLY BROKEN." Eccl. 4:9-12

To make a long story short, in the 37th day of my fast we encountered a divine appointment with a doctor in Mexico. Two days later we were on a plane. I spent two weeks at his clinic in which I received, "out of the box", treatment for cancer. I went home very weak, but minus my two cancer growths in my pelvis. Stay off sugar, stay on a low-dose of Prednisone, and I would remain free of cancer, was my doctor's counsel. However, one year later the cancer was back in full force, this time in my lungs along with a lengthy tumor threatening to intertwine with my spine.

In light of the return of this cancer within one year, I had to ask myself; was it indeed a divine appointment for me to seek help in Mexico? Looking back, my answer is still yes and here is why:

When I arrived in Mexico, I was examined by a Mexican doctor who was filling in for the founder of the clinic who was, at that time, teaching a clinic in South Korea. This substitute doctor I met in Mexico was amazed at the level of my physical endurance being 37 days into a forty day fast. At the beginning of my examination, he closed the door behind him and said to me, "I have only heard of two people ever completing a forty day fast; one was Jesus and the other was Moses. I know therefore that you are a very spiritual man, and I want to ask you a spiritual question." He then knelt down beside me and asked me in a pleading voice, "Tell me about God's grace! Can His grace alone get me to heaven?" Here was a Catholic man seeking the truth about what the Bible says about salvation. I was able to minister to his need, even later on sending him a book I had written on the subject of grace. Perhaps this was the real reason why I went to Mexico in the first place. I was seeking help from him in rescuing my physical life, but this doctor was seeking help from me in even greater matters; the keys to eternal life.

As stated earlier, one year passed by before the cancer returned with a vengeance. I remembered Job's second encounter with Satan's assault in order to get Job to curse God to His face. It didn't work with Job and by God's enabling grace, I was determined it wouldn't work with me either. My trip to Mexico was not covered by my medical insurance so my wife and I quickly decided we could not afford another trip to Mexico. Besides, our confidence was shaken more than a little by the re-occurrence of the cancer as the Mexican doctors were so emphatic it would not return. I know why it returned; it was round two of my fight with Satan with a test of physical infirmity.

This time we submitted ourselves under the American medical protocol of a series of systematic chemotherapy treatments. It was tough! Bouts with nausea and extreme weakness were the norm for the next five months. Initially, at the oncologist's advice, I had a port installed in my chest which, immediately, became infected resulting in five serious days in the hospital cured only by the removal of the newly installed port. Things were not going well. As the chemo was now being administered through the veins in my arms, it became a challenge to find a vein that was not bruised and swollen from the severe chemo drugs flowing through them.

After the fourth monthly session of chemo I was given an MRI, and praise God! The cancer had disappeared totally!

I endured one more precautionary chemo session over the next two months followed by another MRI. I was still totally free of any evidence of cancer. In light of that, my oncologist cancelled my last chemo appointment as well as the two years of planned, low-dose chemo treatments that were scheduled as a precautionary measure.

I was reflecting on the fact that my first encounter with cancer came to me right after I performed the burial of my Vice-president and personal friend from Ohio. My final bout with cancer ended two years later after the burial of our fifty-two year old son Mike who suffered from long-term illness with what would eventually become failed lung transplants. I performed the memorial service and burial of our son Mike while still under the strain and weakness from chemo treatments. Mike died without knowing that I had become healed from cancer. Actually I performed his memorial service and burial without any knowledge that I myself was cancer free. Let me add one more thing; the very day that I was pronounced free from cancer my wife suffered a pelvic fracture on the right side, followed by another one on the left side two weeks later. At this time, we are facing a three-month recovery filled with excruciating pain which even Morphine does not alleviate fully. She was there for me, and now I am there for her. Remember:

**“TWO ARE BETTER THAN ONE, BECAUSE THEY HAVE A GOOD REWARD FOR THEIR LABOR.
FOR IF THEY FALL, ONE WILL LIFT UP HIS COMPANION...
THOUGH ONE MAY BE OVERPOWERED BY ANOTHER, TWO CAN WITHSTAND HIM.
AND A THREEFOLD CORD IS NOT QUICKLY BROKEN.”** Eccl. 4:9-12

Why have I shared all this personal experience with you? First of all, because it is how God encourages the saints:

“BLESSED BE THE GOD AND FATHER OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST, THE FATHER OF MERCIES AND GOD OF ALL COMFORT, WHO COMFORTS US IN ALL OUR TRIBULATION, THAT WE MAY BE ABLE TO COMFORT THOSE WHO ARE IN ANY TROUBLE, WITH THE COMFORT WITH WHICH WE OURSELVES ARE COMFORTED BY GOD.” 2 Cor. 1:3-5

Jesus told Peter to strengthen his brethren. My wife and I labored in the midst of our trial to send out weekly, and sometimes of necessity bi-weekly updates of our on-going trials to all our fellow brethren and family. We shared our heartaches, our fears, our concerns and eventually, our victories. The trial of physical infirmity is the highest form of adversity which Satan can subject God's people. It comes with God's permission, but under His watchful restrictive eye. God governs our trials-period! Even if our infirmities end in physical death, know that they will be finally resolved by the resurrection of the body from the dead. Death still leads to ultimate healing through the resurrection. You just have to wait a little longer.

I wanted to share the depth of our own battles with physical infirmity to give glory to God for what these trials have been working in us. Just prior to our son's death, my wife celebrated her 80th birthday. I turned 73 just prior to the end of this second battle with cancer. Mentally I was somewhat murmuring to God about the ongoing severity of these trials upon two "old people" when He impressed me with the fact that Moses was given the commission to lead three million people out of Egypt when he was eighty years old. He led God's people through the "great and terrible wilderness" forty years, until he was 120 years old. God testified of Moses, "Moses was one hundred and twenty years old when he died. His eyes were not dim nor his natural vigor diminished" (Deut 34:7-8). I decided I had nothing to complain about concerning the severity of our trials in our old age. Retirement to enjoy our "golden years" is a worldly concept. God has no intention of allowing His seasoned veterans to coast into eternity. What God promises His people is to continue to work in them, even by means of satanic adversity, these four ever-increasing qualities of character: **"BE SOBER, BE VIGILANT; BECAUSE YOUR ADVERSARY THE DEVIL WALKS ABOUT LIKE A ROARING LION, SEEKING WHOM HE MAY DEVOUR. RESIST HIM, STEADFAST IN THE FAITH, KNOWING THAT THE SAME SUFFERINGS ARE EXPERIENCED BY YOUR BROTHERHOOD IN THE WORLD. BUT MAY THE GOD OF ALL GRACE, WHO HAS CALLED US UNTO HIS ETERNAL GLORY BY CHRIST JESUS, AFTER YOU HAVE SUFFERED A WHILE,** (God will)

PERFECT, → ESTABLISH, → STRENGTHEN, → SETTLE you.

("being made complete, reaching a state of maturity, wholeness, flawlessness, reaching full development, a process of refinement, to become polished...")

("to make firm or stable, to bring in check unsteadiness, wavering, agitation, irritation, to assist and support so that stability and continuance are assured...")

("to increase in power, fortify, energize, gird up, build up, to increase vigor, stamina, to gain moral courage, the ability to withstand assault...")

("to calm and solidify, to level out the rough places, to compact, make firm, to change from state of disturbance and agitation to repose and tranquility...")

...THIS IS THE TRUE GRACE OF GOD IN WHICH YOU STAND."

1 Pet. 5:8-12

Truly it can be said that although Satan meant evil against me, I know God meant it for good (Gen. 50:20). Indeed, we can say that all things do work together for good to those who love God, to those who are called according to His purpose which is, to be conformed to the image of His Son (Rom. 8:29). Hallelujah!

1

**“I SENT TO KNOW YOUR FAITH,
LEST BY SOME MEANS
THE TEMPTER HAD TEMPTED YOU,
AND OUR LABOR MIGHT BE IN VAIN.”**

1 Thess. 3:5

2

**“BE SOBER, BE VIGILANT;
BECAUSE YOUR ADVERSARY THE DEVIL
WALKS ABOUT LIKE A ROARING LION,
SEEKING WHOM HE MAY DEVOUR.”**

1 Pet. 5:8



3

**“...FOR SUCH ARE FALSE APOSTLES, DECEITFUL WORKERS,
TRANSFORMING THEMSELVES INTO APOSTLES OF CHRIST.
AND NO WONDER!
FOR SATAN HIMSELF TRANSFORMS HIMSELF INTO AN ANGEL OF LIGHT.
THEREFORE IT IS NO GREAT THING IF
HIS MINISTERS ALSO TRANSFORM THEMSELVES
INTO MINISTERS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS...”**

2 Cor. 11:13-15

We have examined Satan in two of his roles by which he interacts as the enemy of the believer. Initially we examined his role as the tempter. From this behind-your-back position Satan seeks to entice born-again believers to turn around and go backward to the sin-laden life from which Christ once delivered them.

Secondly, we considered Satan in his active role as the adversary of the believer. From this in-your-face confrontational position, he now seeks to hinder the believer from going forward spiritually toward fulfilling the will of God. We considered six types of fiery darts contained in the arsenal of Satan to accomplish his role in discouraging the believer from pursuing the will of God.

Now we shall consider a third role in which Satan seeks to divert the believer from pursuing the true will of God. In this role our enemy functions as a deceiver:

“...THAT SERPENT OF OLD, CALLED THE DEVIL AND SATAN, WHO DECEIVES THE WHOLE WORLD...”

Rev. 12:9

As the deceiver, Satan is not content just with deceiving the whole world. The deceiver also has his gun-sights focused upon the believer. If Satan cannot cause you to turn around and go backward by his role as the tempter, then he will seek to turn you aside by means of his role as the deceiver. He will present you with a deceptive path which you may think leads to performing God's will, but in essence it will turn you aside from the true will of God. Paul prophetically warns the believer of this end-time demonic tactic which will be followed by many of God's people:

“PREACH THE WORD!

BE READY IN SEASON AND OUT OF SEASON. CONVINCe, REBUKE, EXHORT, WITH ALL LONGSUFFERING AND TEACHING. FOR THE TIME WILL COME WHEN THEY WILL NOT ENDURE SOUND DOCTRINE, BUT ACCORDING TO THEIR OWN DESIRES, BECAUSE THEY HAVE ITCHING EARS, THEY WILL HEAP UP FOR THEMSELVES TEACHERS; AND THEY WILL TURN THEIR EARS AWAY FROM THE TRUTH, AND BE TURNED ASIDE TO FABLES...”

2 Tim. 4:2-5

Consider carefully this prophetic warning! Many of God's people will choose not to endure sound doctrine as plainly stated in the Word of God, but will be turned aside to doctrine that will sound good to those who have itching ears. The result will be teachers in the pulpit who will tell the people only what they desire to hear.

However, this prophetic sign is really not new. It is also a historical record of God's people in the past:

“FOR THIS IS A REBELLIOUS PEOPLE, FAITHLESS AND LYING SONS, CHILDREN WHO WILL NOT HEAR THE LAW AND INSTRUCTION OF THE LORD; WHO SAY TO THE SEERS, SEE NOT! AND TO THE PROPHETS, PROPHECY NOT TO US WHAT IS RIGHT! SPEAK TO US SMOOTH THINGS, PROPHECY DECEITFUL ILLUSIONS. GET OUT OF THE TRUE WAY, TURN ASIDE OUT OF THE PATH, CEASE HOLDING UP BEFORE US THE HOLY ONE OF ISRAEL... YOU DESPISE AND SPURN THIS WORD AND TRUST IN CUNNING AND OPPRESSION, IN CROOKEDNESS AND PERVERSENESS, AND RELY ON THEM...” Isa. 30:9-12 Amplified Bible

What God's people wanted from their teachers was to hear smooth things that in their heart of hearts they knew were not right. They wanted to be comfortable enough to get out of the true way and to turn aside out of the path. It would take a different kind of teacher to make them feel at ease, those who would be willing to change the image of God to something more palatable. Note the key thing that they wanted their spiritual instructors to do: cease holding up before them the Holy One of Israel. However, the scriptures continually hold up before God's people the image of the Holy One of Israel, the very image into which God's people are to be progressively transformed:

“BUT WE ALL, WITH UNVEILED FACE, BEHOLDING AS IN A MIRROR THE GLORY OF THE LORD, ARE BEING TRANSFORMED INTO THE SAME IMAGE FROM GLORY TO GLORY, JUST AS BY THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD.”

2 Cor. 3:18

“...CALLED ACCORDING TO HIS PURPOSE...TO BE CONFORMED TO THE IMAGE OF HIS SON, THAT HE (Jesus) MIGHT BE THE FIRSTBORN AMONG MANY BRETHREN.”

Rom. 8:28-30



Leonard Ravenhill

“I suspect that far too many of God's people are content with changing the image of God rather than becoming changed into the image of God.”

Making the image of God more comfortable in the eyes of the believer is far more palatable than embracing a call to make change in the believer. Change what we hear, change what we see, but don't ask the believer to be the one who needs to change! Changing the contents of truth is where deception really thrives.

**“...FOR THE TIME WILL COME WHEN
THEY WILL NOT ENDURE SOUND DOCTRINE,
BUT ACCORDING TO THEIR OWN DESIRES,
BECAUSE THEY HAVE ITCHING EARS,
THEY WILL HEAP UP
FOR THEMSELVES TEACHERS;
AND THEY WILL TURN THEIR EARS AWAY
FROM THE TRUTH, AND BE TURNED ASIDE
TO FABLES...”**

2 Tim 4:2-5



**“...FOR SUCH ARE FALSE APOSTLES,
DECEITFUL WORKERS, TRANSFORMING
THEMSELVES INTO APOSTLES OF CHRIST.
AND NO WONDER! FOR SATAN HIMSELF
TRANSFORMS HIMSELF INTO AN ANGEL
OF LIGHT. THEREFORE IT IS NO GREAT
THING IF HIS MINISTERS ALSO
TRANSFORM THEMSELVES INTO
MINISTERS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS...”**

2 Cor 11:13-15

The above prophetic warnings from the apostle Paul sets the stage for Satan to induce an acceptable, subtle substitute for the truth. He can now meet the desires of the deceived heart with a unique brand of deception. He does not appear openly as the prince of darkness, nor does he appear plainly as the adversary, but rather he transforms himself into an angel of light, a wolf in sheep's clothing. He appears outwardly to be something that he is not. Note also above that Satan's cohorts also transform themselves into ministers of righteousness.

**“BEWARE OF FALSE PROPHETS,
WHO COME TO YOU IN SHEEP'S CLOTHING,
BUT INWARDLY THEY ARE RAVENOUS WOLVES.”** Matt 7:15-16

**“FOR I KNOW THIS, THAT AFTER MY DEPARTURE SAVAGE WOLVES WILL COME IN AMONG YOU,
NOT SPARING THE FLOCK. ALSO FROM AMONG YOURSELVES MEN WILL RISE UP, SPEAKING PERVERSE THINGS,
TO DRAW AWAY THE DISCIPLES AFTER THEMSELVES.”** Acts 20:29-31

**“BELOVED, DO NOT BELIEVE EVERY SPIRIT, BUT TEST THE SPIRITS, WHETHER THEY ARE OF GOD;
BECAUSE MANY FALSE PROPHETS HAVE GONE OUT INTO THE WORLD...
THIS IS THE SPIRIT OF THE ANTICHRIST, WHICH YOU HAVE HEARD WAS COMING, AND IS NOW ALREADY IN THE WORLD.”**

1 John 4:1-3

**“BUT I FEAR, LEST SOMEHOW, AS THE SERPENT DECEIVED EVE BY HIS CRAFTINESS,
SO YOUR MINDS MAY BE CORRUPTED FROM THE SIMPLICITY (“WHOLE-HEARTED DEVOTION” Amp.) THAT IS IN CHRIST.**

**FOR IF HE WHO COMES PREACHES ANOTHER JESUS WHOM WE HAVE NOT PREACHED,
OR IF YOU RECEIVE A DIFFERENT SPIRIT WHICH YOU HAVE NOT RECEIVED,
OR A DIFFERENT GOSPEL WHICH YOU HAVE NOT ACCEPTED – (I FEAR) YOU MAY WELL PUT UP WITH IT!”** 2 Cor.11:3-4

THE TIMES IN WHICH WE LIVE:

“BUT THERE WERE ALSO FALSE PROPHETS AMONG THE PEOPLE, EVEN AS THERE WILL BE FALSE TEACHERS AMONG YOU, WHO WILL SECRETLY BRING IN DESTRUCTIVE HERESIES...AND MANY WILL FOLLOW THEIR DESTRUCTIVE WAYS, BECAUSE OF WHOM THE WAY OF TRUTH WILL BE BLASPHEMED. BY COVETOUSNESS THEY WILL EXPLOIT YOU WITH DECEPTIVE WORDS... BEGUILING UNSTABLE SOULS. THEY HAVE A HEART TRAINED IN COVETOUS PRACTICES, AND ARE ACCURSED CHILDREN. THEY HAVE FORSAKEN THE RIGHT WAY AND GONE ASTRAY... THEY SPEAK GREAT SWELLING WORDS OF EMPTINESS... ..WHILE THEY PROMISE THEM LIBERTY, THEY THEMSELVES ARE SLAVES OF CORRUPTION...”
2 Peter 2:1-19 excerpts



“WOE TO THEM! FOR THEY HAVE GONE IN THE WAY OF CAIN, HAVE RUN GREEDILY IN THE ERROR OF BALAAM FOR PROFIT... THESE ARE SPOTS IN YOUR LOVE FEASTS, WHILE THEY FEAST WITH YOU WITHOUT FEAR, SERVING ONLY THEMSELVES. THEY ARE CLOUDS WITHOUT WATER, CARRIED ABOUT BY THE WINDS; LATE AUTUMN TREES WITHOUT FRUIT, TWICE DEAD, PULLED UP BY THE ROOTS; RAGING WAVES OF THE SEA, FOAMING UP THEIR OWN SHAME; WANDERING STARS FOR WHOM IS RESERVED THE BLACKNESS OF DARKNESS FOREVER... THESE ARE GRUMBLERS, COMPLAINERS, WALKING ACCORDING TO THEIR OWN LUSTS; AND THEY MOUTH GREAT SWELLING WORDS, FLATTERING PEOPLE TO GAIN ADVANTAGE.”
Jude excerpts

“...CHILDREN, TOSSED TO AND FRO AND CARRIED ABOUT WITH EVERY WIND OF DOCTRINE, BY THE TRICKERY OF MEN, IN THE CUNNING CRAFTINESS THEY LIE IN WAIT TO DECEIVE...”
Eph. 4:14-15

“...FOR WE ARE NOT, AS SO MANY, PEDDLING (“ADULTERATING FOR GAIN”) THE WORD OF GOD; BUT AS OF SINCERITY, BUT AS FROM GOD, WE SPEAK IN THE SIGHT OF GOD IN CHRIST.”
2 Cor. 2:17

“...WE HAVE RENOUNCED THE HIDDEN THINGS OF SHAME, NOT WALKING IN CRAFTINESS NOR HANDLING THE WORD OF GOD DECEITFULLY...”
2 Cor. 4:2

The previous two pages paint a dismal picture of the infiltration of Satan's counterfeit ministers of righteousness within the professing Body of Christ. Indeed they are wolves in sheep's clothing. Beware to not relegate all those being described as only consisting of cults like the Mormons or Jehovah Witnesses, the more obvious substitutes for true Christianity. These, of which the scriptures speak, are rather teachers who will readily confess righteous things such as "Christ died for my sins" and "by grace we are saved." It is such basic and fundamental confessions that appear to justify clothing them in sheep's clothing as authentic ministers of righteousness. However, it is of such that the apostle Jude warns that they fellowship and function from inside the Body of Christ:

"BELOVED, WHILE I WAS VERY DILIGENT TO WRITE TO YOU CONCERNING OUR COMMON SALVATION, I FOUND IT NECESSARY TO WRITE TO YOU EXHORTING YOU TO CONTEND EARNESTLY FOR THE FAITH WHICH WAS ONCE FOR ALL DELIVERED TO THE SAINTS. FOR CERTAIN MEN HAVE CREPT IN UNNOTICED, WHO LONG AGO WERE MARKED OUT FOR THIS CONDEMNATION, UNGODLY MEN, WHO TURN THE GRACE OF OUR GOD INTO LEWDNESS AND DENY THE ONLY LORD GOD AND OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST... WOE TO THEM! FOR THEY HAVE GONE IN THE WAY OF CAIN, HAVE RUN GREEDILY IN THE ERROR OF BALAAM FOR PROFIT... THESE ARE SPOTS IN YOUR LOVE FEASTS, WHILE THEY FEAST WITH YOU WITHOUT FEAR, SERVING ONLY THEMSELVES...THESE ARE GRUMBLERS, COMPLAINERS, WALKING ACCORDING TO THEIR OWN LUSTS; AND THEY MOUTH GREAT SWELLING WORDS, FLATTERING PEOPLE TO GAIN ADVANTAGE."

Jude 3-16 excerpts

For the most part, none of us travel around the Body of Christ enough to observe the degree to which these things are occurring in Christianity. However, I would suggest if you surf Christian broadcasting, you will find all you can handle of hearts trained in covetous practices. Being inundated with great swelling words of emptiness, so many are peddling ("adulterating for gain") the Word of God, or are exploiting others with deceptive words laced in covetousness. Hard words? Yes they are, but this is a valid barometer of the spiritual condition of a segment of Christianity that has indeed heaped up for themselves teachers to speak what they really want to hear. Where do you suppose these kind of ministries are getting the enormous funds necessary to continue to broadcast week after week? It is from the multitude who have itching ears for doctrine that sounds good, but willingly reject what scripture presents as sound doctrine. Jude exclaimed, "Woe to them!" They are in the pulpits of God for the sake of greedy profits. Woe to them also who presently enable those in the pulpit to so blaspheme the way of truth. Scripture clearly warns that there is a day of reckoning coming for both!

DECEPTION

“CHEATING, HOODWINKING, MISLEADING OR DELUDING, TO BE FOOLED, TRICKED OR SUFFER FRAUD BY MEANS OF BOGUS FACTS, FIGURES AND STATISTICS. TO TAKE UNAWARE, BE ENSNARED BY CUNNING MISREPRESENTATION...”

Webster

**THE
WORD
OF
GOD**



**AS A
TWO-EDGED
SWORD**

“LET NO ONE DECEIVE YOU...” 1 John 3:7

“LET NO ONE DECEIVE YOU WITH EMPTY WORDS...” Eph. 5:6

“...LEST ANYONE SHOULD DECEIVE YOU WITH PERSUASIVE WORDS...” Col. 2:4

“LET NO ONE DECEIVE YOU BY ANY MEANS..” 2 Thess. 2:3

“LET NO ONE DECEIVE YOU”

“LET NO ONE DECEIVE THEMSELVES”

“DO NOT DECEIVE YOURSELVES...” Jer. 37:9

“LET NO ONE DECEIVE HIMSELF...” 1 Cor. 3:18

“...IF WE SAY THAT WE HAVE NO SIN, WE DECEIVE OURSELVES...” 1 John 1:8

**“...BE DOERS OF THE WORD, AND NOT HEARERS ONLY, DECEIVING YOURSELVES...”
James 1:22**

**“FOR THE WORD THAT GOD
SPEAKS IS ALIVE
AND FULL OF POWER –
MAKING IT ACTIVE, OPERATIVE,
ENERGIZING AND EFFECTIVE;
IT IS SHARPER THAN
ANY
TWO-EDGED SWORD,
PENETRATING TO
THE DIVIDING LINE OF
THE BREATH OF LIFE (SOUL)
AND SPIRIT,
AND OF THE JOINTS AND
MARROW
(THAT IS, OF THE DEEPEST
PARTS OF OUR NATURE)
EXPOSING AND SIFTING AND
ANALYZING AND JUDGING
THE VERY THOUGHTS AND
PURPOSES OF THE HEART.”**
Hebrews 4:12 Amplified Bible

**“AND TAKE...
THE SWORD OF THE SPIRIT,
WHICH IS THE WORD OF GOD...”**
Ephesians 6:17



**“EVERY SCRIPTURE
IS GOD-BREATHED –
GIVEN BY HIS INSPIRATION –
AND PROFITABLE
FOR INSTRUCTION,
FOR REPROOF
AND CONVICTION OF SIN,
FOR CORRECTION OF ERROR
AND DISCIPLINE IN OBEDIENCE,
AND FOR TRAINING IN
RIGHTEOUSNESS
(THAT IS, IN HOLY LIVING,
IN CONFORMITY TO GOD’S WILL IN
THOUGHT, PURPOSE AND ACTION)
SO THAT
THE MAN OF GOD
MAY BE COMPLETE AND
PROFICIENT, WELL-FITTED
AND THOROUGHLY EQUIPPED
FOR EVERY GOOD WORK.”**
2 Timothy 3:16 Amplified Bible

The above trinity of scriptures is worth taking time to ponder. There is a progressive revelation contained within them. The first revelation is that which is stated in Ephesians 6:17 identifying the Word of God as being a sword – the sword of the Spirit of the living God. Progressing to Hebrews 4:12, we find a detailed purpose for that sword as being God’s instrument for self-examination of the condition of the hearts of His people. Then we obtain further revelation by considering the contents of 2 Timothy 3:16 in which we find God’s ultimate intention for the scriptures stated as thoroughly equipping God’s people for every good work by means of personal instruction, reproof, conviction and correction that is obtained from meditating in God’s Word.

This is a much higher goal for the Word of God than the basic foundational truth that the holy scriptures are able to make you wise for salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus (2 Tim. 3:15).

“FOR THE WORD OF GOD IS LIVING AND POWERFUL, AND SHARPER THAN ANY TWO-EDGED SWORD, PIERCING EVEN TO THE DIVISION OF SOUL AND SPIRIT, AND OF JOINTS AND MARROW, AND IS A DISCERNER OF THE THOUGHTS AND INTENTS OF THE HEART.”

Heb. 4:12-13

Stunningly contained within the (“S”) word “**SWORD**” is “**Word**.” The Word of God was authored by the Holy Spirit and is God’s armor to defeat all satanic deception aimed toward the believer. Note that it is compared to a two-edged sword. One edge of the sword is introspective examination as it focuses upon the life of the believer compared to the Word of God. This sword edge is to ensure that I do not deceive myself. The other edge of the Spirit’s sword is used to make sure that I do not allow anyone to deceive me with their brand of false doctrine.

Therefore two different interactions with the Word of God are required of the believer:

(1) I must **MEDITATE** in God’s Word. (2) I must **STUDY** God’s Word.

I don’t mean to offend, but “reading through the Bible in a year” programs do not qualify as fulfilling either of these two mandates. As a teacher of God’s Word for over 35 years, I have never read through the Bible as an objective. I open my Bible either for the purpose of meditation for personal introspection, or I intently study my Bible, usually in a topical manner comparing scripture to scripture (1 Cor. 2:13). My underlying purpose is to get so fully acquainted with truth that I will not succumb to self-deception through forgetfulness of what God’s Word contains, nor will I allow anyone to deceive me with false doctrine that is contrary to what is written in God’s Word.

**MEDITATE
IN GOD’S WORD:**

“BUT BE DOERS OF THE WORD, AND NOT HEARERS ONLY, DECEIVING YOURSELVES. FOR IF ANYONE IS A HEARER OF THE WORD AND NOT A DOER, HE IS LIKE A MAN OBSERVING HIS NATURAL FACE IN A MIRROR; FOR HE OBSERVES HIMSELF, GOES AWAY, AND IMMEDIATELY FORGETS WHAT KIND OF MAN HE WAS. BUT HE WHO...IS NOT A FORGETFUL HEARER BUT A DOER OF THE WORK, THIS ONE WILL BE BLESSED IN WHAT HE DOES.” James 1:22-25

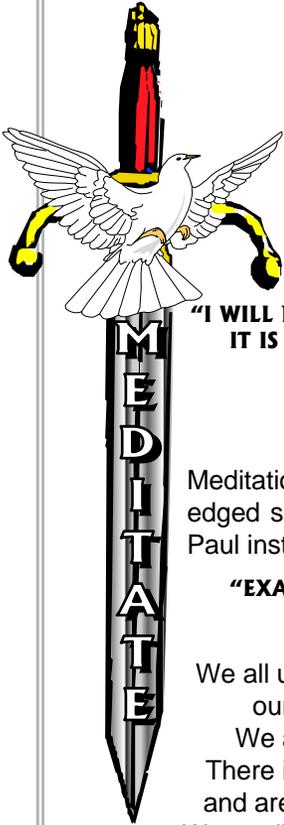
**STUDY
IN GOD’S WORD:**

“THESE WERE MORE FAIR-MINDED THAN THOSE IN THESSALONICA, IN THAT THEY RECEIVED THE WORD WITH ALL READINESS, AND SEARCHED THE SCRIPTURES DAILY TO FIND OUT WHETHER THESE THINGS WERE SO. THEREFORE MANY OF THEM BELIEVED...”

Acts 17:11-12

MEDITATE

“CHEW THE CUD” A PRIVATE DEVOTION OF SPIRITUAL EXERCISE CONSISTING IN DEEP CONTINUED REFLECTION ON A RELIGIOUS THEME...TO MUSE OVER, PONDER, CONTEMPLATE, REFLECT UPON...INTROSPECTION, SELF-EXAMINATION OF ONE’S LIFE IN LIGHT OF THE PATTERN OF THE SCRIPTURES...” Webster



“THIS BOOK OF THE LAW SHALL NOT DEPART FROM YOUR MOUTH BUT YOU SHALL MEDITATE IN IT DAY AND NIGHT, THAT YOU MAY OBSERVE TO DO ACCORDING TO ALL THAT IS WRITTEN IN IT. FOR THEN YOU WILL MAKE YOUR WAY PROSPEROUS, AND THEN YOU WILL HAVE GOOD SUCCESS.” Joshua 1:8

“I WILL MEDITATE ON YOUR PRECEPTS...I WILL MEDITATE ON YOUR STATUTES...OH, HOW I LOVE YOUR LAW! IT IS MY MEDITATION ALL THE DAY... THAT I MAY MEDITATE ON YOUR WORD” Psm. 119:15, 48, 97, 148

“FINALLY BRETHREN, WHATEVER THINGS ARE TRUE...NOBLE...JUST...PURE...LOVELY... OF GOOD REPORT... VIRTUE...PRAISEWORTHY...MEDITATE ON THESE THINGS... AND THE GOD OF PEACE WILL BE WITH YOU.” Phil. 4:8-9

Meditation is used for introspection of oneself. The process of meditation makes this edge of God's two-edged sword to be like a skilled surgeon's knife which often must wound in order to bring forth healing. Paul instructs the believer of the need to be **VERY** introspective:

“EXAMINE AND TEST AND EVALUATE YOUR OWN SELVES, TO SEE WHETHER YOU ARE HOLDING TO YOUR FAITH AND SHOWING THE PROPER FRUITS OF IT. TEST AND PROVE YOURSELVES.”

2 Cor. 13:5 Amplified Bible

We all use mirrors every day to examine our physical appearance. God's Word is a mirror that examines our spiritual appearance. Meditation looks hard and long at what God's Word reveals about us.

We are to embrace change of what we are shown that is not according to God's Word (Jas. 1:22-25).

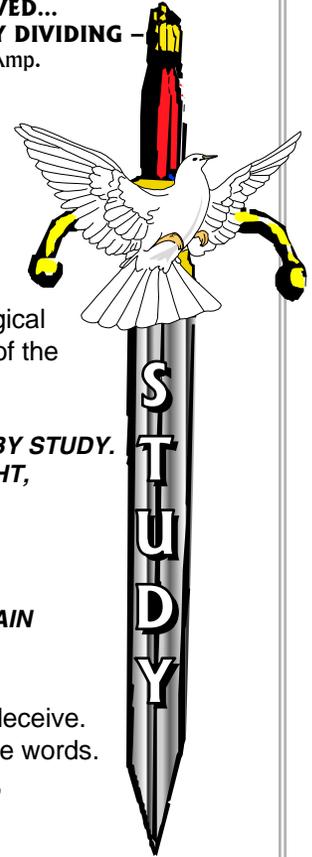
There is another passage that depicts the Word of God as a mirror. In it we are shown the glory of God and are called to be ever-changing into that very image from one degree of glory to another (2 Cor. 3:18).

We meditate on the image of Jesus in the mirror in Corinthians, but we look at our own image in the mirror found in James. Careful comparative meditation is the key to narrowing the gap that exists between the two.

**“STUDY AND BE EAGER AND DO YOUR UTMOST TO PRESENT YOURSELF TO GOD APPROVED...
A WORKMAN WHO HAS NO CAUSE TO BE ASHAMED, CORRECTLY ANALYZING AND ACCURATELY DIVIDING –
RIGHTLY HANDLING AND SKILLFULLY TEACHING –THE WORD OF TRUTH.” 2 Tim. 2:15 Amp.**

STUDY

**“APPLICATION OF THE MIND TO THE ACQUIREMENT OF KNOWLEDGE..
A STATE OF ABSORBED CONCENTRATION...GIVEN TO STUDY, SCRUTINIZE, ANALYZE...
DETAILED STUDY OF A SUBJECT WITH THE INTENT TO MASTER,
ABLE TO ARTICULATE, BE MASTERFUL, BE SKILLFUL” Webster**

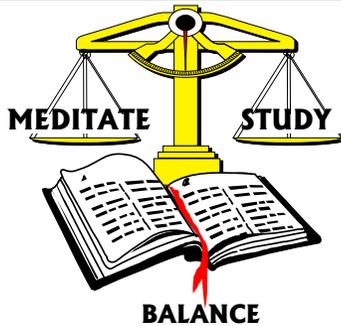


The truth is that we all diligently apply ourselves to whatever is important to us. We navigate the internet with acquired skill, but get easily lost in the scriptures. We master the immense technological lingo of cell phones, I-pod's and computers and at the same time complain about the complexity of the Bible as being too difficult, too hard, and too deep. Listen to the advice of Charles Finney:



**“...MY BROTHER, SISTER FRIEND- READ, STUDY, THINK; TO DEVELOP YOUR POWERS BY STUDY.
GOD DESIGNED THAT RELIGION SHOULD REQUIRE THOUGHT, INTENSE THOUGHT,
AND SHOULD THOROUGHLY DEVELOP OUR POWERS OF THOUGHT.
THE BIBLE ITSELF IS WRITTEN IN A STYLE SO CONDENSED
AS TO REQUIRE MUCH INTENSE STUDY.
MANY KNOW NOTHING OF THE BIBLE OR OF RELIGION,
BECAUSE THEY WILL NOT THINK AND STUDY. I DO NOT PRETEND TO SO EXPLAIN
THEOLOGY AS TO DISPENSE WITH THE LABOR OF THINKING.”
(SYSTEMATIC THEOLOGY- PREFACE, PAGE 9- CHARLES FINNEY)**

There is only one way to avoid the cunning craftiness by which false teachers lie in wait to deceive.
There is only one way for you not to be exploited by their covetous, misapplied, and deceptive words.
You must diligently apply yourself to become a believer who is able to teach, patient,
in humility correcting those who are in opposition (2 Tim. 2:24-25).
Simply put, you are going to have to become skilled in a proper interpretation
of the Word of God in order that no one deceives you!



BALANCE

This is the need of the hour for God's people when it comes to knowing how to approach the Word of God.

The information age in which we live reminds me of the warning Solomon issued to God's people:



FOR GOD WILL BRING EVERY WORK INTO JUDGMENT, INCLUDING EVERY SECRET THING, WHETHER IT IS GOOD OR WHETHER IT IS EVIL."

Ecc. 12:12-14

Certainly over the years of my ministry I have contributed my share in fulfilling the saying, "of the making of many books there is no end." I do not apologize for being prolific, a teacher must teach. Solomon is not condemning books or studying. He is merely pointing out that it is possible to overdose in this area of doctrinal study. What is needed is balance. I think of the Pharisees and the Sadducees whom Jesus condemned as being those who were blind guides, straining out gnats and swallowing camels (Matt. 23:24). He charged them with having neglected the weightier matters of law; justice, mercy and faith and leaving the others undone (Matt. 23:23). What was their deficiency? They lacked a proper emphasis and balance pertaining to the Word of God. This danger exists for us as well. Paul warns that the last days would be marked by a people that were always learning and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth (2 Tim. 3:7). It is important **WHAT WE STUDY** and **HOW WE STUDY**. It is important **WHAT WE MEDITATE IN** and **HOW WE MEDIATE** upon it. It is my conviction that the Christian life was meant to be simple. We must avoid the trap of intellectualism by which the Christian life grows more difficult due to following an elaborate system of learning that appeals to the pride of intellect. Hear Solomon well when he stresses what is the simple conclusion to the dual dilemma we face of (too) many books and (too) much study.

Just learn to focus your attention on the two objectives that Solomon states simply as the whole duty of man: (1) Fear God (2) Keep His commandments. Direct all your study and all your meditation toward achieving these two objectives. Keep in mind your day in court with the Righteous Judge in which He will bring every work into judgment, including every secret thing, whether it is good or evil (Ecc. 12:14).

SATAN AS THE ACCUSER OF THE BRETHREN

**“...THAT SERPENT OF OLD,
CALLED THE DEVIL AND SATAN...
THE ACCUSER
OF OUR BRETHREN,
WHO ACCUSED THEM BEFORE
OUR GOD DAY AND NIGHT...”**

Rev. 12:9-10



One last aspect of Satan that we want to consider briefly before moving on to the world in which we live, is examining his title as the accuser of the brethren. Let us consider an Old Testament account of Satan functioning in this capacity against one of God's covenant people, the High Priest himself:

“THEN HE SHOWED ME JOSHUA THE HIGH PRIEST STANDING BEFORE THE ANGEL OF THE LORD, AND SATAN STANDING AT HIS RIGHT HAND TO OPPOSE HIM. AND THE LORD SAID TO SATAN, ‘THE LORD REBUKE YOU, SATAN! THE LORD WHO HAS CHOSEN JERUSALEM REBUKE YOU! IS THIS NOT A BRAND PLUCKED FROM THE FIRE?’ NOW JOSHUA WAS CLOTHED WITH FILTHY GARMENTS, AND WAS STANDING BEFORE THE ANGEL. THEN HE ANSWERED AND SPOKE TO THOSE WHO STOOD BEFORE HIM, SAYING, ‘TAKE AWAY THE FILTHY GARMENTS FROM HIM.’ AND TO HIM HE SAID, ‘SEE, I HAVE REMOVED YOUR INIQUITY FROM YOU, AND I WILL CLOTHE YOU WITH RICH ROBES.’ AND I SAID, ‘LET THEM PUT A CLEAN TURBAN ON HIS HEAD.’ SO THEY PUT A CLEAN TURBAN ON HIS HEAD, AND THEY PUT THE CLOTHES ON HIM. AND THE ANGEL OF THE LORD STOOD BY.

THEN THE ANGEL OF THE LORD ADMONISHED JOSHUA, SAYING, ‘THUS SAYS THE LORD OF HOSTS: “IF YOU WILL WALK IN MY WAYS, AND IF YOU WILL KEEP MY COMMAND, THEN YOU SHALL ALSO JUDGE MY HOUSE, AND LIKEWISE HAVE CHARGE OF MY COURTS; I WILL GIVE YOU PLACES TO WALK AMONG THESE WHO STAND HERE.”

Zech. 3:1-7

There is a twofold message for every believer in this story: (1) the rebuking of Satan by the Lord on behalf of a sin-laden High Priest, and (2) the needful corrective admonishment to Joshua by the Lord. Joshua belongs to the Lord. He is the High Priest representing the people before their God. However, he is now being accused by the devil before the throne of God for being found in a sinful state as signified by his filthy garments. The wonderful message in this story is summed up by the Lord saying to Satan as Joshua's accuser, "The Lord rebuke you Satan...Is this not a brand plucked from the fire?" Then the Lord removes Joshua's iniquity by clothing him with clean garments just as the Lord has done for us as New Covenant believers! What is being conveyed in this story is the on-going covenant commitment God has with His people. Covenant blood is always available to cover our filthy garments defiled by sin. John the apostle writes to blood-washed believers in stating the needful aspect of maintaining covenant relationship:

“IF WE CONFESS OUR SINS, HE IS FAITHFUL AND JUST TO FORGIVE US OUR SINS AND TO CLEANSE US FROM ALL UNRIGHTEOUSNESS...MY LITTLE CHILDREN, THESE THINGS I WRITE TO YOU, SO THAT YOU MAY NOT SIN. AND IF ANYONE SINS, WE HAVE AN ADVOCATE WITH THE FATHER, JESUS CHRIST THE RIGHTEOUS. AND HE HIMSELF IS THE PROPITIATION (lit. “mercy-seat”) FOR OUR SINS...” 1 Jn. 1:9, 2:1-2

Yes, God will continue to be merciful to our unrighteousness. Yes, God will also rebuke Satan, the accuser of the brethren even when his accusations have merit. Yes, God will continue to consider us as a brand plucked out of the fire. Yes, God will continue to remove the consequences of iniquity from His people as they, in contriteness of heart, confess their sins before God. However, there is more to the story. God now admonished not only Joshua, but also every born-again believer that He has plucked out of the fire:

**“ ‘SEE, I HAVE REMOVED YOUR INIQUITY FROM YOU, AND I WILL CLOTHE YOU WITH RICH ROBES’...
SO THEY PUT A CLEAN TURBAN ON HIS HEAD, AND THEY PUT THE CLOTHES ON HIM...
THEN THE ANGEL OF THE LORD ADMONISHED JOSHUA, SAYING, ‘THUS SAYS THE LORD OF HOSTS:
‘IF YOU WILL WALK IN MY WAYS, AND IF YOU WILL KEEP MY COMMAND, THEN YOU SHALL ALSO JUDGE MY HOUSE,
AND LIKewise HAVE CHARGE OF MY COURTS; I WILL GIVE YOU PLACES TO WALK AMONG THESE WHO STAND HERE.’ ”**

Zech. 3:4-7

God has a higher calling for His people than just cleansing them from their sins. He also calls them to walk in His ways and to keep His commandments. Then follows what He has in mind for them, “Then you shall also judge My house, and likewise have charge of My courts, I will give you places to walk among those who stand here.”

Let us not forget that God is speaking these words to Joshua (and to us) in the very presence of Satan who, in times past as Lucifer, the archangel of archangels, judged God’s house, had charge of God’s courts, and walked among those who stood in the presence of God:

**“YOU WERE THE ANOINTED CHERUB WHO COVERS; I ESTABLISHED YOU;
YOU WERE ON THE HOLY MOUNTAIN OF GOD;
YOU WALKED BACK AND FORTH IN THE MIDST OF FIERY STONES.
YOU WERE PERFECT IN YOUR WAYS FROM THE DAY YOU WERE CREATED, TILL INIQUITY WAS FOUND IN YOU.”**

Ezek. 28:14-15

Get this point: God offers to His people a high position that was once held by Satan prior to his fall. Perhaps we can begin to see why he is now functioning as the accuser of the brethren. Satan does not want God’s people to respond to the vision of a higher calling than forgiveness of sins. He is out to make sure that you are not among those who will replace him at the throne of God. He hates the Body of Christ. He hates the Bride of Christ even more.

CHAPTER FIVE

"THE ENEMY IN WHICH WE LIVE"

**"...YOU ONCE WALKED
ACCORDING TO
THE COURSE
OF THIS WORLD,
ACCORDING TO
THE PRINCE OF
THE POWER OF THE AIR..."**

Eph. 2:2



**"...WE DO NOT WRESTLE AGAINST FLESH AND
BLOOD, BUT AGAINST
PRINCIPALITIES,
AGAINST POWERS,
AGAINST
THE RULERS OF THE DARKNESS
OF THIS AGE,
AGAINST SPIRITUAL HOSTS
OF WICKEDNESS
IN THE HEAVENLY PLACES."**

Eph. 6:12

**"...WE KNOW THAT WE ARE OF GOD,
AND THE WHOLE WORLD LIES UNDER THE SWAY OF THE WICKED ONE."**

1 Jn. 5:19

If you are convinced that Satan himself is firmly set against every follower of Christ in his role as the tempter, as our adversary, as the deceiver, and as the accuser of the brethren, let us see whether we also believe this truth: that the whole world lies under the sway of the wicked one. The reason this statement is true lies in the fact that Satan, as the prince of the power of the air, has arrayed a whole host of spiritual wickedness in high or heavenly places that consist of strong demonic spirits defined as principalities, powers, and the rulers of the darkness of this age. This immense army of evil under Satan's control is strategically placed in and over geographical spheres of the world in which we live. Consider what opposition Daniel was shown existed behind the scenes: _____➔

**“...DO NOT FEAR, DANIEL,
FOR FROM THE FIRST DAY
THAT YOU SET YOUR HEART TO UNDERSTAND,
AND TO HUMBLE YOURSELF BEFORE YOUR GOD,
YOUR WORDS WERE HEARD;
AND I HAVE COME BECAUSE OF YOUR WORDS.
BUT
THE PRINCE OF THE KINGDOM OF PERSIA
WITHSTOOD ME TWENTY-ONE DAYS;
AND BEHOLD,
MICHAEL, ONE OF THE CHIEF PRINCES,
CAME TO HELP ME,
FOR I HAD BEEN LEFT ALONE THERE WITH
THE KINGS OF PERSIA...
AND NOW I MUST RETURN
TO FIGHT WITH
THE PRINCE OF PERSIA;
AND WHEN I HAVE GONE FORTH,
INDEED
THE PRINCE OF GREECE
WILL COME...
NO ONE UPHOLDS ME
AGAINST THESE,
EXCEPT
MICHAEL YOUR PRINCE.”**

Dan. 10:12-14, 10:20-21



Notice the great emphasis scripture places upon opposing spiritual forces on the opposite page. There are five references in Chapter Ten to princes being at war with each other, princes of darkness and princes of light. The opening words of Daniel Chapter Ten set the stage for what is to unfold:

“IN THE THIRD YEAR OF CYRUS KING OF PERSIA A MESSAGE WAS REVEALED TO DANIEL...” Dan. 10:1

Daniel is in captivity under the dominion of Cyrus the king of Persia. The importance of his location will be understood in a moment. Tremendous revelation and insight is given in this chapter from the book of Daniel pertaining to the hierarchy of the forces of darkness at work behind the scenes when Daniel, in captivity in Persia, prays to God for understanding. Note this angelic being, sent from God to Daniel, conveys that from the first day Daniel set his heart to understand, and to humble himself before his God, his words were heard, and this angel has been sent because of his words. Daniel prays and God hears and immediately dispatches an answer to his prayer.

However, the scripture states that twenty-one days elapse before this angel sent from God arrives to his destination. Why so great a delay? It isn't the distance he must travel, but rather it is the satanic opposition strategically placed between God in heaven and Daniel on earth. So great is this demonic power, scripture identifies as the prince of the kingdom of Persia and other kings of Persia, that the angelic messenger conveys to Daniel that he must call upon Michael, one of the chief princes to enable him to get past this great force of opposition. After delivering his prophetic revelation about the destiny of Israel, this angelic messenger states that he must return to fight with the prince of Persia; and indeed, the prince of Greece will come to aid him. No one can uphold God's messenger to Daniel against these two evil princes, except Michael, Daniel's prince. Physically Daniel is in captivity under the domain of Cyrus king of Persia. However, Cyrus, the literal king of Persia is not the opposing force this angel from God encounters on the way to Daniel, but rather it is spiritual princes identified as the prince of the kingdom of Persia and other kings of Persia. Later he will be aided in battle by the prince of Greece. Only when this angelic messenger calls upon Michael, one of the chief princes, is he able to prevail against these wicked princes. archangel Michael is later identified as "Michael your prince" which implies that he is the prince over Israel, Daniel's people held in captivity in Persia. The needful revelation is this:

All earthly kingdoms have princes assigned to them by Satan who is called the prince of the power of the air (Eph. 2:2). These demonic angels of opposition are princes under their supreme prince, Satan!

SUPREME
THE PRINCE



AUTHORITY:
THE POWER

OF

LESSER PRINCES:
PRINCIPALITIES
"PRINCE OF PERSIA - PRINCE OF GREECE"

OF THE AIR
Eph. 2:2

OF

LESSER POWERS:
POWERS
HOMOSEXUALITY - PORNOGRAPHY

"PRINCE"
(AUTHORITY)

ARE

"PALITIES"
(PLACES)

GEOGRAPHICAL
(DEMONIC AUTHORITY OVER
"PLACES")

"POWERS

ARE

"ON PEOPLE"

DEMOGRAPHICAL
(DEMONIC INFLUENCE OVER
"PEOPLES")



"THE WHOLE WORLD LIES UNDER THE SWAY OF THE WICKED ONE"

SATAN'S "FOOT SOLDIERS"
DEMON SPIRITS:

"RULERS OF THE DARKNESS"

Study carefully the structure of the diagram on the opposite page and you will understand why the apostle John states that the whole world lies under the sway of the wicked one (1Jn. 5:19). Not only are there hordes of demon spirits roaming the earth looking for human bodies to possess, but also inhabit the air. Satan has placed the whole world geographically under his designated principalities such as we saw in Daniel Chapter 10 (prince of Persia and prince of Greece). More than likely, every nation in the world has it's corresponding prince assigned to it including America as we shall consider in a moment. Not only are there geographical principalities governing the perverse world that Satan has re-created, but there are also demographical powers at work on earth. Satan's host of powers are also functioning in the air. These fallen angels of Satan manifest a great variety of influence over the peoples of the earth in areas of bondage such as:

COVETOUSNESS...	PORNOGRAPHY...	SEXUAL ASSAULT...	HOMOSEXUALITY...	MURDER...	RAGE...
MATERIALISM...	DRUNKENNESS...	CHILD MOLESTATION...	LESBIANISM...	DIVORCE...	HATRED...
HEDONISM...	DRUG ADDICTION...	ABORTION...	FEMINISM...	SUICIDE...	RACISM...

The scriptures abound with prophetic, descriptive pictures of such concentrated cesspools of satanic activity such as:

**“BABYLON THE GREAT...
HAS BECOME A HABITATION OF DEMONS,
A PRISON FOR EVERY FOUL SPIRIT,
AND A CAGE FOR EVERY UNCLEAN AND HATED BIRD!
FOR ALL THE NATIONS HAVE DRUNK OF THE WINE OF THE WRATH OF HER FORNICATION,
THE KINGS OF THE EARTH HAVE COMMITTED FORNICATION WITH HER,
AND THE MERCHANTS OF THE EARTH HAVE BECOME RICH THROUGH THE ABUNDANCE OF HER LUXURY.”**

Rev. 18:2-3

Why is there a unified movement all over the world to recognize gay marriage as an approved alternate lifestyle?

Why do certain cities like San Francisco and Denver have the highest population of gays and lesbians?

Why are these two cities also the number one and number two cities in the nation for witch covens?

Why is the city of Chicago consistently the murder capitol of the United States?

It is because of the joint activity of satanic principalities and powers at work along with a host of demon spirits on earth that contribute to bringing the whole world under the sway of the wicked one.

**IN AMERICA, THE (NOT SO) BEAUTIFUL
FROM SEA TO (NOT SO) SHINING SEA,**

SATAN'S PRINCIPALITIES

AND POWERS

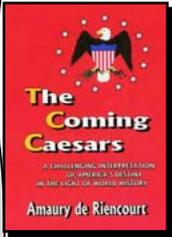
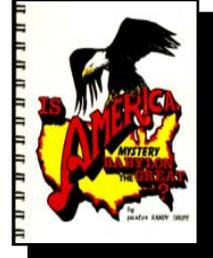
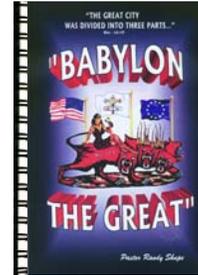
ARE AT WORK:



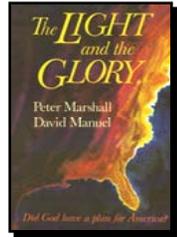
If there exists a prince over Persia and a prince over Greece, then we must accept that there exists a prince over America as well! America's prince may just be among Satan's chief princes when we consider the abundance of perversion that permeates this country, some of which I have highlighted on the opposite page.

I have long held the unpopular view that America, rather than being the cherished One Nation Under God, is rather a part of the Book of Revelation's prophetic depiction of Babylon the Great, the mother of harlots and of the abominations of the earth (Rev. 17:5). I have written several books on this premise and list them here as suggested reading for those who have been inundated with the more popular view of America being God's new chosen nation to carry out His purposes on earth.

(You can order these books from our website: PastorRandyShupe.com.)



Along these lines, a secular historical book that I highly recommend is *"The Coming Caesars"* by French historian, Amaury de Riencourt. It too, is available from our ministry. This author systematically and historically establishes that America is a mirror image of the ancient Roman Empire rather than what the Puritans believed America to be, God's New Israel on earth. Contrasted to Amaury de Riencourt's view of America as the new Roman empire is the more popular presentation of the erroneous Puritan view of America as God's New Israel (*"The Light and the Glory"*)



"SO IT WAS, TRANSLATING LONG-MEDITATED THOUGHTS INTO ACTION, THAT THE STERN PURITANS FOUNDED ON THE COAST OF NEW ENGLAND WHAT THEY THOUGHT WOULD BE THE LAND OF CANAAN, THE NEW JERUSALEM OF THEIR DREAMS, AND WHAT WE CAN NOW LABEL FAR MORE ACCURATELY THE NEW ROME... THE PURITANS WERE THE HUMAN SEED FROM WHICH THE NEW ROME OF WESTERN CIVILIZATION WAS TO SPRING ACROSS THE ATLANTIC OCEAN."

Only one of these two views is according to what scripture prophetically depicts. There will never be a New Israel, but there definitely is a New Rome depicted as the final kingdom on the earth prior to the return of Jesus Christ.

"THEY SAW THEMSELVES AS CALLED TO A NEW PROMISE LAND IN ORDER TO FOUND A NEW ISRAEL.... GOD WAS MAKING HIS MOST SIGNIFICANT ATTEMPT SINCE ANCIENT ISRAEL TO CREATE A NEW ISRAEL OF PEOPLE LIVING IN OBEDIENCE TO THE LAWS OF GOD, THROUGH FAITH IN JESUS CHRIST... IF GOD WAS TRYING TO BUILD A NEW ISRAEL IN AMERICA, SATAN WAS DOING EVERYTHING TO THWART IT THE PROMISES GOD MADE TO HIS NEW ISRAEL REMAIN INTACT AND UNMODIFIED..."

**MYSTERY BABYLON IS ROMAN TO THE CORE...
IT IS THIS COMMON DENOMINATOR THAT LINKS
AMERICA, CATHOLICISM AND THE EUROPEAN UNION
TOGETHER AS ONE IDENTITY NAMELY, MYSTERY BABYLON.**

THE KEY TO UNLOCKING

MYSTERY BABYLON

ALL ROADS LEAD TO

ROME

It has
ALREADY BEEN
in ANCIENT TIMES
before us."
Ecc. 1:9-10

"That which
HAS BEEN
is what WILL BE,
that which
IS DONE is what
WILL BE DONE


THE
UNITED STATES:
("NEW ROME")


THE
EUROPEAN UNION:
("REVIVED ROME")


THE
ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH
("PAPAL ROME")

**"...EVERY GOOD TREE BEARS GOOD FRUIT,
BUT A BAD TREE BEARS BAD FRUIT.
A GOOD TREE CANNOT BEAR BAD FRUIT,
NOR CAN A BAD TREE BEAR GOOD FRUIT...
THEREFORE BY THEIR FRUITS YOU WILL KNOW THEM."**

Matt. 7:17-20

"...THE DEVIL, TAKING HIM UP ON A HIGH MOUNTAIN, SHOWED HIM ALL THE KINGDOMS OF THE WORLD IN A MOMENT OF TIME...

**'ALL THIS AUTHORITY
I WILL GIVE YOU, AND THEIR GLORY;
FOR THIS HAS BEEN DELIVERED TO ME,
AND I GIVE IT TO WHOMEVER I WISH.**

**THEREFORE,
IF YOU WILL WORSHIP BEFORE ME,
ALL WILL BE YOURS.' "**

Luke 4:5-7, Matt. 4:8-9



**"MY KINGDOM
IS NOT OF THIS WORLD.
IF MY KINGDOM
WERE OF THIS WORLD,
MY SERVANTS
WOULD FIGHT...
BUT NOW MY KINGDOM
IS NOT FROM HERE."**

John 18:36

**"NOW WHEN HE WAS ASKED BY
THE PHARISEES WHEN
THE KINGDOM OF GOD WOULD
COME, HE ANSWERED...**

**"THE KINGDOM OF GOD DOES
NOT COME WITH OBSERVATION;
NOR WILL THEY SAY,
"SEE HERE!" OR "SEE THERE!"**

**FOR INDEED
THE KINGDOM OF GOD
IS WITHIN YOU."**

Luke 17:20-21

The principle Jesus states about trees and fruit (Matt.7:17-20), is applicable for identifying what is Mystery (hidden truth) Babylon in our present-day society. If it bears all the markings of the Roman Empire, then it is of Roman origin, for a tree (or even a nation) will be known by the fruit it produces even if it is adorned with deceptive religious clichés like, “One Nation Under God” and “In God We Trust.” Look at the fruit it produces, and you will know what kind of tree it really is. Just as a leopard cannot change its spots nor can a nation produce fruit contrary to its nature. It will manifest what it is by design. It will reflect it’s designer. Satan was the originator of the original Roman Empire that persecuted Jews and Christians alike as well as crucifying the Lord Jesus Christ. It is ludicrous to think God would use the pattern of the Roman Empire as a template for His so-called New Israel. The Roman Empire was in its heyday at Christ’s first coming, and it will be in full swing in a greater scope at His second coming. The point I want to stress especially to us, as Christians, here in America, is this:

IT IS FOLLY TO CONTINUE TO EMBRACE THIS NATION AS BEING DIVINELY CREATED AS “ONE NATION UNDER GOD” IF IT HEAVILY BEARS THE FRUIT OF THE ORIGINAL ROMAN EMPIRE. GOD WOULD NOT PATTERN A NEW CHOSEN NATION TO REPLACE ISRAEL AFTER THE PATTERN OF THE EVIL AND PAGAN ANCIENT ROMAN EMPIRE.

The reason I have shared these selected thoughts with you at this time is so that you, the reader, may develop a proper view of the world in which we live, the world which we are called to overcome. That world includes America. Satan showed Jesus **ALL** the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time, America included. There is no earthly, physical, visible kingdom that constitutes the kingdom of God. The Puritans were in error pertaining to America becoming God’s New Israel on earth. Christianity is in error pertaining to the idea that God created this nation for becoming a visible expression of One Nation Under God. As long as American Christians hold America as excluded from among the rest of the nations Satan said were under his authority, then a proper view of America cannot be cultivated. The whole thrust of returning America to its godly foundations is delusional thinking. God’s counsel to His people pertaining to Mystery Babylon is not centered upon laboring to return it to its godly foundations but rather:

**“AND I HEARD ANOTHER VOICE FROM HEAVEN SAYING,
‘COME OUT OF HER, MY PEOPLE, LEST YOU SHARE IN HER SINS,
AND LEST YOU RECEIVE OF HER PLAGUES.
FOR HER SINS HAVE REACHED TO HEAVEN, AND GOD HAS REMEMBERED HER INIQUITIES.’”**

Rev. 18:4-6

**“AND I HEARD ANOTHER VOICE FROM HEAVEN SAYING,
‘COME OUT OF HER, MY PEOPLE,’
LEST YOU SHARE IN HER SINS,
AND LEST YOU RECEIVE OF HER PLAGUES.
FOR HER SINS HAVE REACHED TO HEAVEN, AND GOD HAS REMEMBERED HER INIQUITIES.”**

Rev. 18:4-6



**“THEREFORE
‘COME OUT FROM AMONG THEM
AND BE SEPARATE’ ,**

SAYS THE LORD.

**‘DO NOT TOUCH WHAT IS UNCLEAN, AND I WILL RECEIVE YOU.
I WILL BE A FATHER TO YOU, AND YOU SHALL BE MY SONS AND DAUGHTERS’,**

SAYS THE LORD ALMIGHTY....

**THEREFORE, HAVING THESE PROMISES, BELOVED,
LET US CLEANSE OURSELVES FROM ALL FILTHINESS OF THE FLESH AND SPIRIT,
PERFECTING HOLINESS IN THE FEAR OF GOD.”**

2 Cor. 6:17, 7:1

COME OUT FROM HER, MY PEOPLE and COME OUT FROM AMONG THEM AND BE SEPARATE

is God's call to His people throughout the entire world, no exception!

This unchanging mandate of God is applicable to those of His people who live in America.

Perhaps I should say, **ESPECIALLY** to those who live in America as more and more it manifests the image of the end-time revived Roman Empire destined to dominate the whole earth as did the original Roman Empire.

I plead with you dear reader to consider the magnitude of Roman imagery that has been hand-picked by our founding fathers as best representing what this country is all about (see my book, *Babylon the Great*.)

Here are several excerpts to entice you to consider reading it in its entirety:

"I don't need to inform you that America's capitol is commonly referred to as "the Capitol on the Hill."

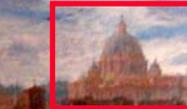
This name is not based on the fact that it is the capitol of the US government and that it sits on an ever-so slight hill. Rather, we find that both the word "Capitol" and "Hill" have its origins steeped in ancient Rome.

The nickname "Hill" given to our nation's capitol is derived directly from the Capitoline Hill of ancient Rome. We must assume that this was a purposeful pattern chosen by the founding fathers of America in 1793 to best represent their One Nation Under God even though it was common historical knowledge that its origins stemmed from ancient Rome's supreme worship of the god Jupiter. We must ask, was this nation's god built around the sacred worship of the biblical Jesus, as some claim, or is it the continuance of the Roman's pagan worship of Jupiter by the New Roman Empire, America?" (pages 22-23- *Babylon the Great*)

"THIS TEMPLE TO JUPITER WAS CALLED THE CAPITOLIUM, AND FROM IT WE GET OUR WORD CAPITOL. IT WAS LOOKED UPON AS THE CENTER OF ROMAN RELIGION AND AUTHORITY, AND AT TIMES THE ROMAN SENATE WAS CONVENED IN IT"

(a History of Rome- Robert F. Pennell)

**"JUPITER CAPITOLINUS"
ON THE CAPITOLINE HILL
IN ANCIENT ROME**



THE CAPITOLIUM ON THE CAPITOLINE HILL



THE CAPITOL ON "THE HILL"

IS THIS A "CAPITOL" THAT GLORIFIES JUPITER OR JESUS?

**JUPITER-
IN ROMAN MYTHOLOGY WAS CALLED
"KING OF HEAVEN AND EARTH"
"GOD OF ALL THE GODS"
"THE GOD OF JUSTICE"**

ROMAN FASCES ON THE WALL BEHIND THE SPEAKER'S PODIUM, UNITED STATES HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES CHAMBER, UNITED STATES CAPITOL.



The Romans used the fasces as a symbol of their stated goal of forcible world conquest, the binding of many (nations) into one (Rome). The Latin phrase "E PLURIBUS UNUM" ("many into one") was chosen by our founding fathers as an expression of the interests of this country. This is not a reference to America becoming the melting pot of peoples from all nations for at its inception there were only 13 colonies. Rather it is yet another ancient Roman expression of world conquest willingly embraced by our founding fathers.

Breen's Encyclopedia goes into detail on the subject of Roman fasces. As a symbol of state authority, the fasces offered a choice of death, by the rod or by the ax:

ROMAN FASCES
SYMBOL OF ROMAN TOTALITARINISM

A BUNDLE OF RODS TIGHTLY WRAPPED AROUND A BEHEADING AX. THE ROMAN SYMBOL OF STATE AUTHORITY. PRIMARY FORM OF EXECUTION WAS "BY THE RODS OR BY THE AX."

FASCES ALSO REPRESENTED THE ROMAN EMPIRE'S GOAL OF WORLD CONQUEST, BINDING MANY INTO ONE.

WREATH: RULE OF CAESAR
AX HEAD
RODS
BINDING



On the reverse side of this issue of the US dime, we find once more the union of the Roman conquering symbol of the fasces with the phrase "E PLURIBUS UNUM" (many into one).

The theme being conveyed here is one of conquest by force.



What is that huge, over-powering statue sitting on top of the US Capitol?
It is not the cherished Indian maiden, Pocahontas.

Rather, this is yet another pagan Roman image chosen by our founding fathers to adorn a newly formed Roman nation:

**“THE
GODDESS MINERVA
(THE DAUGHTER OF JUPITER)
THE GODDESS
OF WAR
AND PROTECTOR
OF
CIVILIZED LIFE.”**



**AT THE BASE OF THE
“E PLURIBUS UNUM”
(MANY INTO ONE)
WE FIND
12 ROMAN FASCES
CONNECTED TO
12 CAESAR'S WREATHS.
WHY SO?
BECAUSE HISTORICALLY,
ROME HAD A SUCCESSION
OF 12 CAESARS.**



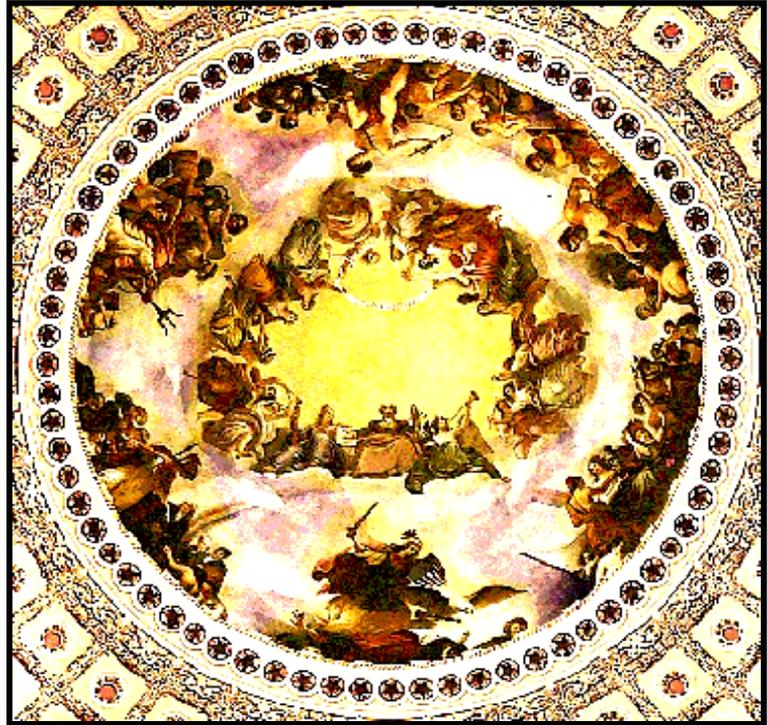
**NOTE
THE EAGLE
HEADDRESS
ON JUPITER'S
DAUGHTER.
“WAR-EAGLE”
WAS JUPITER'S
MASCOT.
THE EAGLE
WAS
ROME'S
INSIGNIA.
IT IS
ALSO
AMERICA'S
CHOICE.**

The use of “E PLURIBUS UNUM” on the pedestal of this Roman goddess statue with its 12 Roman fasces and 12 Caesar wreaths ties the intention of this chosen phrase to the ancient Roman goal of world conquest. Note this Roman goddess holds in her hand a **13TH WREATH** as if she is ready to crown the next world Caesar! Her sword, shield and War-Eagle headdress also are images of conquest by forcible means. (One Nation Under (which) God?)

Let us now take a peek at what our founding fathers chose to place under the dome of this Capitol dedicated (in reality) to the mythical supreme pagan god of the Roman Empire, Jupiter. You will not find any Bible characters being given honor in the Capitol of this One Nation Under God, but rather numerous mythical Greek and Roman gods are proudly displayed as having inspired the building of this seat of government:

MINERVA – GODDESS OF WISDOM
PERSEPHONE– GODDESS OF WAR
WAR EAGLE- MASCOT OF JUPITER
MERCURY – GOD OF COMMERCE
VULCAN – GOD OF FORGES
CERES –GODDESS OF AGRICULTURE
NEPTUNE – GOD OF THE SEA
VENUS – GODDESS OF LOVE
THE GODDESS VICTORY
THE GODDESS LIBERTY
A DEIFIED GEORGE WASHINGTON
AS THE NEW CAESAR OF HEAVEN

How incredible! These 11 pagan Roman gods are blatantly given the supreme place of preeminence in the Capitol, the seat of government of this nation. Detailed original plaques on display (they are in my book) unfold the fictitious place these false gods are given in the foundation of this country. For instance, when the trans-Atlantic cable was laid on the ocean floor, it was done so with the help of Neptune, the god of the sea! As a Christian parent, how would you like to explain to your children all this pagan Roman imagery as part of America being one nation under the God of the Bible?





**DOME
OF
THE
CAPITOL**

AMERICA'S ENSIGN – THE ROMAN EAGLE



(modern-day American
flagpole design)



(ancient-day Roman
flagpole design)

We have already seen in our look at the mural under the US Capitol that Jupiter's mascot, War-Eagle, appears next to Jupiter's daughter, Minerva/Persephone, the goddess of war, who also occupies the highest pinnacle atop the US Capitol with War-Eagle adorned upon her head.

The silver eagle was the ensign of the Roman Legion and the symbol of its power. At the top of the standard above the eagle is a gold bar with the inscription SPQR - "Senatus Populus Romanus" (in honor of the Senate and the people).



Julius Caesar personally sanctified the eagle when the legion was brought forth. On one of the legion standards, the powerful talons of the eagle are gripping golden thunderbolts as the eagle stands ready for flight against all enemies of Rome.



This ancient
Roman coin
displays the eagle
with thunderbolts
in its grip.
Look familiar?



Let us consider the official seal of the Department of Justice. Note the Latin phrase under the flying eagle. “QUI PRO DOMINA JUSTITIA SEQUITUR.” It blatantly translates as:

“HE WHO FOLLOWS THE GODDESS JUSTICA”



According to ancient beliefs, Persephone, or Minerva, also held the title of “the goddess Justica” who is “judge of the sinful dead in Hades.” The “he” who follows the goddess Justica (in the Justice Department’s motto) identifies the eagle, symbol of ancient Rome.

Remember, this is the mascot of Jupiter, America’s preferred symbol, chosen to best represent this “One Nation Under God”. The emblem of the eagle first belonged to the pagan Roman gods and goddesses and was the chosen emblem of the antichrist Roman Empire that slaughtered God’s people. Can we really say with authority, “God Bless America” when its founding fathers were so infatuated with pagan gods and goddesses of the Roman Empire?



(War-eagle under the Capitol Dome)



(War-eagle atop the Capitol Dome)

War-Eagle (Jupiter’s mascot) and the multiple personality goddess, Persephone, Minerva, and Justica (the daughter of Jupiter) are inseparable. War-Eagle is in hot pursuit beside his goddess companion to carry out her fierce judgments against all who stand in her way.

Sounds “religiously” patriotic, doesn’t it? Problem is, it is not the religion upon which the Bible was based, is it?



**ROMAN GODDESS JUNO,
WIFE OF JUPITER**



**WOMAN
IN A
ROMAN
TOGA**

**ROMAN GODDESS OF
LIBERTY, "LADY LIBERTY"**

Considering the track record of American imagery chosen by our founding fathers so far, we should not be surprised at the immense similarities between this ancient statue of the goddess Juno, the wife of Jupiter, and the goddess of Liberty, the Statue of Liberty.

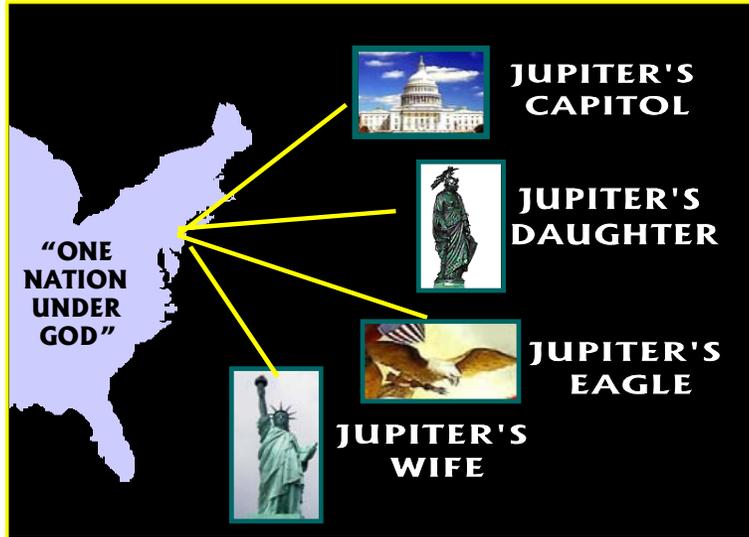
Statue of Liberty:
The Statue of Liberty, more formally known as Liberty Enlightening the World...
the statue showing the goddess of Liberty was a present by France ...The Statue of Liberty is often used as a symbol that personifies the entire nation of America.
(From Wikipedia Encyclopedia.)

Why didn't our "One Nation Under God" founding fathers chose a statue of Christ like this one in Rio de Janeiro's harbor instead of another pagan Roman goddess? Because America is a Roman-based nation!



**"...THEY PROVOKED HIM TO ANGER WITH THEIR HIGH PLACES,
AND MOVED HIM TO JEALOUSY WITH THEIR CARVED IMAGES."**

Psm. 78:58



**"...EVERY GOOD TREE BEARS GOOD FRUIT,
BUT A BAD TREE BEARS BAD FRUIT.
A GOOD TREE CANNOT BEAR BAD FRUIT,
NOR CAN A BAD TREE BEAR GOOD FRUIT...
THEREFORE BY THEIR FRUITS
YOU WILL KNOW THEM."**

Matt. 7:17-20

← What God recorded of Israel can be applied to what some mistakenly think is the New Israel of God, America.

Rather, we are a land of pagan images. The proverbial evidence of a smoking gun tells us that this One Nation Under God, is not under the God of the Bible, but depicts another "god" altogether. Christians are taught this is a Christ-centered heritage laid by our "Christian" founding fathers. The problem is that these are not things that belong to **JESUS** that they have chosen to mark this nation's important places, but rather it is the choosing of those things that belong to Rome's **JUPITER** that permeate our landmarks.

It isn't the God revealed in the Word that is being exalted, but rather it is the pagan gods of the ancient world of the Greek and Roman Empires that have been purposely given the place of honor and recognition by our founding fathers. We have bad fruit which means the tree is also bad!



Neither is it just the pagan Roman imagery that our founding fathers chose to adorn this nation that should concern us as to the validity of being One Nation Under God, but also with the structural foundations of the government itself, for it too, is Roman to the core. This country was not founded on the moral laws of the Bible, namely the Ten Commandments, but rather on Roman law that originated with the pagan Roman Empire. If God inspired the founding fathers to write the Declaration of Independence and the Constitution of the United States, then He is guilty of pagan plagiarism. These are not new concepts. These very cherished American concepts were not conceived by God, but originated in the pagan-based Roman Empire!

God's Word records that God is light, and in Him there is no darkness at all (1Jn. 1:5). It is impossible to believe that He would pattern His new One Nation Under God after the evil darkness of the Roman Empire that slaughtered and enslaved God's chosen people, the Jews. If God tells us not be conformed to this world (Rom.12:2), you can be sure that He does not practice such conformity Himself by borrowing unrighteous foundational principles from the heathen. If we can establish that those parallels exist, we can dismiss the folly of divine inspiration of America being One Nation Under God, for He doesn't copycat pagan ideologies and then sanctify them for the use of His people!

**ANCIENT
ROMAN EMPIRE**



Let's consider a few parallels:

**“ALL MEN ARE
CREATED EQUAL”**



**AMERICA'S
ROMAN EMPIRE**

This noble phrase found in the Declaration of Independence did not originate with our “Christian” founding fathers being under the divine inspiration of God. This very phrase was first penned by the famous Roman jurist Ulpian, and became the highest legal code of the Roman Empire providing equal rights and freedom of speech for all (The Coming Caesars, pg. 316-317). Historically we know that both in ancient Rome as well as in America, the application of this equality principle functioned in absolute hypocrisy since it only applied to male, free citizens. Women and slaves were excluded from being equal. Sound familiar? Slavery was the legal institution in America from its inception in 1776 to 1850. Likewise women in America, although they were US citizens, were prevented from voting from 1776 until 1920!

The hypocrisy of both ancient Rome and America's interpretation of "All Men Are Created Equal," leads us to another parallel between this kingdom of darkness (Rome) and the supposedly divinely-inspired kingdom of light (America) namely,

**ANCIENT
ROMAN EMPIRE**



BOTH EMPIRES WERE BUILT ON SLAVERY



**AMERICA'S
ROMAN EMPIRE**

Because history deemed it to have been an evil empire, we have no real opposition to condemning the horrible history of the brutal Roman Empire enslaving the nations of the world and using them as slave labor to build the notorious Roman roads. You have heard the saying, "All roads lead to Rome." They were built on the sweat and blood of unwilling slaves. We should, however, be concerned about the equally horrible and shameful history of America, that also came to power on the sweat and blood of forced (Negro) slavery. The third President of the United States, Thomas Jefferson, one of the key founding fathers, was reported to be a Christian. Are acts of slavery, rape, and bastardy fornication acceptable Christian virtues? Consider the behavior of this "Christian" President:

"Thomas Jefferson had 187 slaves. We know that because he kept meticulous hand-written records, which we still have. On January 14, 1774, after he inherited slaves from first his mother and then his father-in-law, Thomas Jefferson wrote his inventory of 187 slaves. In his last inventory, taken 50 years later in 1824, Thomas Jefferson also had 187 slaves. In October, 1802, while he was president, the story was published in the newspapers that Thomas Jefferson, whose wife had died in 1782, was keeping his wife's slave half-sister, Sally Hemings, as a concubine and was producing children from her. Jefferson, who lived for 44 years after the death of his wife and who never remarried, never denied the story..."

THE SLAVE CHILDREN OF THOMAS JEFFERSON
by Samuel H. Sloan, published by Kiseido,

"God is light, and in Him is no darkness at all" (1Jn.1:5). If we have such examples of darkness demonstrated by the President of the United States, one of the key founding fathers, one of the authors of the Declaration of Independence, it is no wonder that the whole nation continued to condone and practice slavery for nearly half of the years of existence of this "Christian" nation!

**ANCIENT
ROMAN EMPIRE**



**BOTH EMPIRES WERE
BUILT ON A TWO-PARTY
DEMOCRATIC SYSTEM
OF GOVERNMENT
WITH SENATES AND
APPOINTED SENATORS**



**AMERICA'S
ROMAN EMPIRE**

**A DEMOCRACY
BASED ON A
TWO-PARTY SYSTEM,
"THE OPTIMATES"
AND
"THE POPULARS"**

**A DEMOCRACY BASED
ON A
TWO-PARTY SYSTEM,
"THE REPUBLICANS"
AND
"THE DEMOCRATS"**

"The Optimates and Populares fought each other as do America's Republicans and Democrats. Rome had its political machines, its Tammany bosses – men like Publius Cethegus who knew how to manipulate elections and made full use of caucuses, patronage, and the spoils system."

(The Coming Caesars" pg. 152)

Dear reader, is democracy therefore to be embraced as the form of government divinely inspired by God? Was it uniquely given to our "Christian" founding fathers, or is this form of government taken directly from the ancient pagan-based and evil Roman Empire? And if so, are we to believe that God Himself borrowed this style of government from pagan ancient Rome, and then sanctified it by giving it to our "Christian" founding fathers (like Thomas Jefferson) as a form of government best representing the creation of a new, "One Nation Under God?" Is this really sound logic that we, as followers of Christ, should embrace?



**ANCIENT
ROMAN EMPIRE**



**BOTH GOVERNMENTS
WERE BASED ON
ABSTRACT PRINCIPLES
OF LAW**



**AMERICA'S
ROMAN EMPIRE**



“The rule of abstract principles – the rule of law – Rome’s Twelve Tables, and America’s Constitution are the major premises on which Roman and American politics were built.

Political conflicts took place within the framework of these accepted institutions (Rome’s Twelve Tables, America’s Constitution)... Interpretation of these principles of law were hotly debated in the higher courts of law...(the Roman Senate and the Supreme Court) ...(*The Coming Caesars*” pg. 78)

“The Roman citizen had certain rights and privileges guaranteed under Roman law...if he was not satisfied with the verdict of a lesser judge, he had the right of appeal all the way up to Caesar’s throne. Likewise, five amendments were added to the US Constitution to protect and define the rights of citizenship in America.”
(The Romans and Their Empire, pg. 53)

God gave His people His Law as expressed in the Ten Commandments. They were not laws open to interpretation or debate. They were basic moral laws to govern the lives of God’s people. They were not a Bill of Rights, nor were they subject to interpretation by a higher court such as both ancient Rome established in the Roman Senate or America with its Supreme Court. The majority of God’s Ten Commandments begin with “You shall not...” Such clear language is in need of no interpretation by higher courts.

**ANCIENT
ROMAN EMPIRE**



**BOTH EMPIRES WERE BUILT ON
THE PRINCIPLES OF
“WALL STREET” CAPITALISM**



**AMERICA'S
ROMAN EMPIRE**

“The North side of Rome’s Forum had become the Classical world’s Wall Street, with its tremendous accumulation of banks, stock exchanges, brokerage houses, and innumerable offices of financial corporations and joint-stock companies. Rome had become, like London and New York, the clearinghouse and banking center of the civilized world.”
(The Coming Caesars” pg. 244)

**ANCIENT
ROMAN EMPIRE**



**LAWSUITS CAME TO BE
A THRIVING BUSINESS
IN BOTH EMPIRES**



**AMERICA'S
ROMAN EMPIRE**

“...legal business kept many distinguished Romans hard at work. Lawsuits were heard in Roman courts before a panel of 50 to 60 judges...We see the most violent and rapacious classes of men, besieging the houses of the rich, cunningly creating lawsuits... Ammianus Marcellinus could find nothing good to say about the majority of the lawyers of his day.”
(Life in Ancient Rome, F.R. Cowell, pq. 128-130)

**ANCIENT
ROMAN EMPIRE**



**WELFARE PROGRAMS
FUNDED BY TAXING
ITS CITIZENS**



**AMERICA'S
ROMAN EMPIRE**

“Thousands, perhaps hundreds of thousands, of Romans were so dangerously near the poverty line that merely to get enough bread each day was the major ambition in life. Despite the great power and wealth of Rome during the Empire, this canker of chronic poverty remained to plague its rulers and to diminish the luster of the Imperial glory...

The State could easily afford such a scheme (supply free bread) which was financed not at the expense of the richer Romans, but by the provinces, who were taxed...

The result was two distinct classes of Roman citizens, those with a right to free corn, and those without it.”

(Life in Ancient Rome, F.R. Cowell, pg. 136-139)

**ANCIENT
ROMAN EMPIRE**



**BOTH EMPIRES BECAME
THE “MELTING POT”
OF THE WORLD**



**AMERICA'S
ROMAN EMPIRE**

Ancient Rome, as well as its modern-day pattern (America), held the distinction of becoming the melting pot of the world. Ancient Rome became so by means of military conquest and slavery while America fulfilled that role by allowing mass immigration into its borders from the outside world. “This was their problem. Inside the Empire there were all sorts of people, of all races, colors, languages, religions, customs and laws...yet they all had to live together in peace. That meant that they all had to obey one law...they had to become a nation comprised of many races and cultures, but still maintain a single national identity.” (The Romans and Their Empire, T. Cairns, page 53)

“Today America is a microcosm of the world. History suggests that sustaining a truly multiracial society is difficult, or at least unusual...Rome, most notably – managed to maintain a distinct national identity while embracing, and being ruled by, an ethnic mélange.” (Time, April, 1990)

**ANCIENT
ROMAN EMPIRE**



**BOTH EMPIRES
IDOLIZED THE GAMES
IN THE COLISEUMS**



**AMERICA'S
ROMAN EMPIRE**

**A ROMAN
GLADIATOR
CELEBRATES
VICTORY OVER
HIS FOE**



The Roman Coliseum
(sat 50,000)



The L.A. Coliseum
(seats 75,000)



**A MODERN
"GLADIATOR"
CELEBRATES VICTORY
OVER HIS FOE**

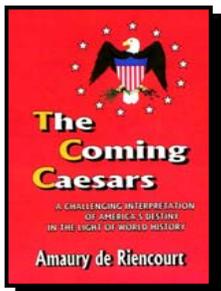


I believe we would all admit that America's passion for the games in today's coliseums is parallel to that of the fans in Ancient Rome. The Roman fans so idolized their favorite gladiators that they placed their names around the stadium's inner walls. As you know, the same idolatrous practice is done today.

Although I like the sport of football very much, I realize that it is more than a sport to many people.

Seeing the over-reaction of zeal of many devout fans reveals that this sport can easily become a serious form of idolatry. There is much money to be made in the selling of memorabilia such as jerseys bearing the name and number of favorite players, championship plaques, cups and such cherished souvenirs of the accomplishments of our chosen teams. However, it is the obsessive accumulation and adoration of such expensive treasure that is a tip-off that we are too involved in what we label as entertainment.

I must say that to spend \$100.00 for a jersey with some player's name and number on it would (and should) keep me awake at night. If we must own all that kind of stuff, then we must confess-it owns us.



“OUR WESTERN WORLD, AMERICA AND EUROPE,
IS THREATENED WITH CAESARISM ON A SCALE UNKNOWN SINCE THE DAWN OF THE
ROMAN EMPIRE (PG.5)...
IT IS IN WASHINGTON AND NOT IN LONDON, PARIS, OR BERLIN THAT THE CAESARS OF
THE FUTURE WILL ARISE (PG.6)... POLITICAL POWER IN THE WESTERN WORLD HAS
BECOME INCREASINGLY CONCENTRATED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA,
AND IN THE OFFICE OF THE PRESIDENT WITHIN AMERICA.
THE POWER AND PRESTIGE OF THE PRESIDENT HAS GROWN WITH THE GROWTH OF
AMERICA AND OF DEMOCRACY WITHIN AMERICA, WITH THE MULTIPLICATION OF
ECONOMIC, POLITICAL, AND MILITARY EMERGENCIES, WITH THE NECESSITY OF RULING
WHAT IS VIRTUALLY BECOMING AN AMERICAN EMPIRE...



Amaury de Riencourt

WE MUST SEE IN THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES NOT MERELY THE CHIEF EXECUTIVE OF ONE OF THE WESTERN DEMOCRACIES, BUT ONE ALREADY ENDOWED WITH POWERS OF TRULY CAESARIAN MAGNITUDE. TODAY, ONE MAN IS DIRECTLY IN COMMAND, EITHER AS PEACETIME PRESIDENT OR WARTIME COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF OF MORE THAN HALF OF THE GLOBE'S ECONOMIC AND TECHNICAL POWER..... EVERYWHERE, ON THE EUROPEAN CONTINENT, IN WESTERN HEMISPHERE, AND IN THE FAR EAST, HE CAN MAKE THE WEIGHT OF HIS INCALCULABLE POWER FELT WITH IMMEDIATE AND CRUSHING SPEED....IT IS THIS GROWING “FATHER COMPLEX” THAT IS INCREASINGLY EVIDENT IN AMERICA, THE WILLINGNESS TO FOLLOW IN ANY EMERGENCY, ECONOMIC OR MILITARY, THE LEADERSHIP OF ONE MAN...(PAGES 6-7)

...WITH THE POWER TO INITIATE AND THE POWER TO CONSUMMATE LEGISLATION, TO GIVE VITALITY AND VIGOR TO EVERY LAW, OR TO STRIKE IT DEAD AT HIS PLEASURE, THE PRESIDENT MUST ULTIMATELY BECOME THE RULER OF THE NATION...
THE GOVERNMENT WILL HAVE BEEN TRANSFORMED INTO AN ELECTIVE MONARCHY.

HISTORICAL EVIDENCE THUS SHOWS THAT EACH NEW WAR ADDS TO THE ALREADY TREMENDOUS POWERS OF A PRESIDENT, WHO IS SIMULTANEOUSLY CHIEF OF STATE, PRIME MINISTER IN CHARGE OF ALL EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENTS, AND COMMANDER IN CHIEF OF THE ARMED FORCES...ONE MAN WAS ALREADY LARGELY IN CONTROL OF THE WORLD'S GREATEST POWER
...ROOSEVELT'S FULL USE OF POWERS WERE TRULY CAESARIAN IN MAGNITUDE. IT WAS THE AMERICAN PEOPLE'S FULL ACCEPTANCE OF THIS CONCENTRATION OF IMMENSE POWERS IN THE HAND OF ONE MAN AND THEIR FIRM BELIEF THAT IT SHOULD REMAIN THERE IN SPITE OF TRADITIONS AGAINST A THIRD, FOURTH OR MORE TERMS....THE FIRST GHOSTLY CONTOURS OF CAESARISM WERE APPEARING, AND AS ALWAYS, WELLING UP FROM THE PEOPLE THEMSELVES... (PAGES 252-253).

IN NATO, THE AUTHORITY AND POWER OF AMERICA STAND SUPREME...ULTIMATELY, THE PROBLEM IS THE SAME ANCIENT ROME AND AMERICA, HAVING CONTRIBUTED SUBSTANTIALLY TO CREATE WORLD ECONOMY, ARE COMPELLED TO POLICE THE WORLD ECONOMICALLY- AND SOONER OR LATER POLITICALLY AS WELL...” (PG.295)

"AND I HEARD ANOTHER VOICE FROM HEAVEN SAYING, 'COME OUT OF HER, MY PEOPLE, LEST YOU SHARE IN HER SINS, AND LEST YOU RECEIVE OF HER PLAGUES. FOR HER SINS HAVE REACHED TO HEAVEN, AND GOD HAS REMEMBERED HER INIQUITIES.'"

Rev. 18:4-6



"THEREFORE

'COME OUT FROM AMONG THEM

AND BE SEPARATE',
SAYS THE LORD.

'DO NOT TOUCH
WHAT IS UNCLEAN,
AND I WILL RECEIVE YOU.
I WILL BE A FATHER TO YOU,
AND YOU SHALL BE
MY SONS AND DAUGHTERS'

....HAVING THESE PROMISES,
...LET US CLEANSE OURSELVES FROM
ALL FILTHINESS OF
THE FLESH AND SPIRIT,
PERFECTING HOLINESS
IN THE FEAR OF GOD."

2 Cor. 6:17, 7:1

Over the last 18 pages I have given you a heavy dose of what is written in my previous book, *Babylon the Great*. America, where you and I live and work, is a big part of the last-day revived Roman empire that will conquer and dominate the whole world right up until the Second Coming of Jesus Christ.

On the opposite page is the secular perspective painted by French historian, Amaury de Riencourt of the rise to power of the next Caesar of the world. From a scriptural perspective, he will be the dreaded Roman prince depicted in the book of Daniel (Dan. 9:26). He will be the Antichrist. He will occupy the office of the Presidency because this is the position of power from which the new Roman empire must function.

This last-day Roman empire is the sole creation of Satan along with principalities, powers and the rulers of the darkness working under his domain. It is not One Nation Under God. This is a great deception of Satan upon God's people.

The message from God to His people is clear:

**"COME OUT OF HER MY PEOPLE, "COME OUT FROM AMONG THEM
 LEST YOU PARTAKE OF HER SINS" AND BE SEPARATE"**

Rev. 18:4

2 Cor. 6:17

It is not a call to return America to its Godly foundations because it was never a creation of God to begin with.

It is not a call to labor to elect a Christian President because it cannot be a true Christian nation. It is Roman to the core, and Rome was the arch-enemy of Christianity.

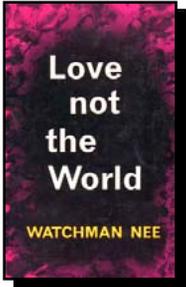
It is not a call for Christians to dominate the Republican Party or to form a new rebellious Tea Party to enforce its protests.

It is not a call to legislate morality or to establish a list of family values upon it.

IT IS A CALL TO GOD'S PEOPLE TO COME OUT OF HER AND TO BE SEPARATE.

This is a leopard that cannot change it's spots.

This is a nation that has been before on the face of the earth and it bears the same imagery, government, and cultural values as it's predecessor. It can be nothing else.



"EVERY TIME YOU AND I TOUCH THE WORLD THROUGH THE THINGS OF THE WORLD (AND WE MUST DO SO REPEATEDLY), WE SHOULD FEEL MUCH AS WOULD FEEL ABOUT TAKING MORPHINE, FOR THERE ARE DEMONS AT THE BACK OF EVERYTHING THAT BELONGS TO THE WORLD. BECAUSE I AM STILL IN THE WORLD, I HAVE TO DO BUSINESS WITH THE WORLD, FOLLOW SOME TRADE, EARN MY LIVELIHOOD. BUT HOW MUCH TREATMENT WITH DANGEROUS DRUGS CAN I SAFELY TAKE WITHOUT FALLING PREY TO THE CRAVING? HOW MANY THINGS CAN I BUY, OR HOW MUCH MONEY CAN I MAKE, OR HOW CLOSE CAN BUSINESS ASSOCIATIONS BE WITHOUT MY BECOMING HOOKED? HOW VITAL IT IS FOR EVERY CHRISTIAN TO HAVE A CLEAR REVELATION OF THIS PRESENT WORLD THAT IS UNDER SATAN'S CONTROL...OH, THAT GOD WOULD OPEN OUR EYES TO SEE CLEARLY WHAT THE WORLD IS! NOT ONLY THE OBVIOUS EVIL THINGS THAT IT CONTAINS, BUT ALSO THE SUBTLE THINGS THAT CAN DRAW US AWAY FROM GOD, MAKING US MORE AND MORE ATTACHED TO THIS PRESENT WORLD...



Watchman Nee

OUR DELIVERANCE FROM THE WORLD BEGINS SEEING THE WORLD AS GOD SEES IT, A WORLD THAT IS UNDER THE SENTENCE OF DEATH. A PERSON UNDER THE SENTENCE OF DEATH HAS NO FUTURE BEYOND THE CELL THAT CONFINES HIM.

HE AWAITS THE INEVITABLE CONCLUSION. LIKEWISE THE WORLD, BEING UNDER GOD'S PRONOUNCED SENTENCE OF DEATH, HAS NO FUTURE. IT MAKES ALL THE DIFFERENCE TO US THAT WE SEE THIS...SEPARATION TO GOD, SEPARATION FROM THE WORLD, IS THE FIRST PRINCIPLE OF CHRISTIAN LIVING. JOHN, IN HIS REVELATION OF JESUS CHRIST, WAS SHOWN TWO IRRECONCILABLE EXTREMES, TWO WORLDS THAT MORALLY WERE POLES APART. HE WAS FIRST CARRIED AWAY IN THE SPIRIT INTO A WILDERNESS TO SEE BABYLON, MOTHER OF THE HARLOTS AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH (17:3). THEN HE WAS CARRIED IN THE SAME SPIRIT TO A GREAT AND HIGH MOUNTAIN, FROM WHENCE TO VIEW JERUSALEM, THE BRIDE, THE LAMB'S WIFE (21:10). THE CONTRAST IS CLEAR AND COULD HARDLY BE MORE EXPLICITLY STATED... THE HARLOT BABYLON IS ALWAYS "THE GREAT CITY" (16:19, ETC.) WITH THE EMPHASIS ON HER ATTAINMENT OF GREATNESS. THE BRIDE JERUSALEM IS BY CONTRAST "THE HOLY CITY" (21:2, 10) WITH THE ACCENT CORRESPONDINGLY ON HER SEPARATION TO GOD. SHE IS "FROM GOD," AND IS PREPARED "FOR HER HUSBAND." FOR THIS REASON SHE POSSESSES THE GLORY OF GOD. THIS IS A MATTER OF EXPERIENCE FOR US ALL. HOLINESS IN US IS WHAT IS OF GOD, WHAT IS WHOLLY SET APART TO CHRIST. ...ALL THAT IS IN THE WORLD, THE LUST OF THE FLESH, AND THE LUST OF THE EYES, AND THE VAINGLORY OF LIFE, IS NOT OF THE FATHER, BUT IS OF THE WORLD" (2:16) ...JOHN DEFINES THE THINGS OF THE WORLD.

ALL THAT CAN BE INCLUDED UNDER LUST OR PRIMITIVE DESIRE, ALL THAT EXCITES GREEDY AMBITION, AND ALL THAT AROUSES IN US THE PRIDE OR GLAMOR OF LIFE, ALL SUCH THINGS ARE PART OF THE SATANIC SYSTEM...

...THE BOOK OF REVELATION REVEALS THAT SATAN WILL SET UP HIS FINAL KINGDOM UNDER ANTICHRIST IN THREE REALMS: THE POLITICAL WORLD, THE RELIGIOUS WORLD, AND THE WORLD OF COMMERCE.

ON THIS THREEFOLD BASIS OF POLITICS, COMMERCE AND RELIGION, SATAN'S REIGN WILL FIND ITS LAST AND ULTIMATE VIOLENT EXPRESSION."

Read Amaury de Riencourt's secular account of America, *The Coming Caesars* and it will historically confirm that America is the New Roman empire and will produce the next ruling Caesar. Read Watchman Nee's book, *Love Not the World* and you will sense the strong warning to every believer about the inherent dangers this world poses under such satanic influence. Or you could just take a concordance and look up in God's Word every reference to a believer's interaction with the world. The undeniable conclusion would also be just as loud and clear:

**"COME OUT OF HER MY PEOPLE,
LEST YOU PARTAKE OF HER SINS"** Rev. 18:4

**"COME OUT FROM AMONG THEM
AND BE SEPARATE"** 2 Cor. 6:17

To drill home a point the apostle Paul would say, "For what does the scripture say?" (Rom. 4:3). The scriptures are the final authority in all things, so let us begin a journey of considering exactly what God's Word does say pertaining to a believer's relationship to the world. Will we find scriptural justification for the methods presently being used by Christians for political involvement in the affairs of an earthly kingdom such as America? The answer can be expressed by another phrase Paul would often use, "Certainly not!" (Rom. 3:4). All such activity is rather driven by man-made principles written in the Constitution and the Declaration of Independence, not the Word of God. In this area, Christians who lump all these together as if they were all written by the same author, namely God, are just as guilty as the Mormons who embrace not only the Bible, but also the Book of Mormon and the Pearl of Great Price as also being divinely inspired by God. The end result for the Mormon is doctrinal confusion just as it will be for the Christian who mixes together what is God-inspired with what is man-made. The scripture states of itself:

**"YOU SHALL NOT ADD TO THE WORD WHICH I COMMAND YOU, NOR TAKE FROM IT,
THAT YOU MAY KEEP THE COMMANDMENTS OF THE LORD YOUR GOD WHICH I COMMAND YOU."** Deut. 4:2-3

**"ALL SCRIPTURE IS GIVEN BY INSPIRATION OF GOD,
AND IS PROFITABLE FOR DOCTRINE, FOR REPROOF, FOR CORRECTION, FOR INSTRUCTION IN RIGHTEOUSNESS,
THAT THE MAN OF GOD MAY BE COMPLETE, THOROUGHLY EQUIPPED FOR EVERY GOOD WORK."** 2 Tim. 3:16-17

The warning is clear, the scriptures alone are sufficient for us to know and obey God's perfect will.

The scriptures will thoroughly equip God's people for what God deems to be every good work. However, add to the Word of God the likes of man-centered principles from the Constitution and the Declaration of Independence, and our works, functioning under such mixture, may not be found as pleasing to God as we think they are.

THE DIRECTIONAL WORDS OF JESUS CHRIST TO HIS PEOPLE PERTAINING TO

THE WORLD



**"MY KINGDOM IS NOT OF THIS WORLD.
IF MY KINGDOM
WERE OF THIS WORLD,
MY SERVANTS WOULD FIGHT...
BUT NOW MY KINGDOM IS NOT FROM HERE."**

John 18:36

**"NOW WHEN HE WAS ASKED BY THE PHARISEES
WHEN THE KINGDOM OF GOD WOULD COME,
HE ANSWERED THEM AND SAID,
"THE KINGDOM OF GOD DOES NOT COME WITH OBSERVATION;
NOR WILL THEY SAY,
'SEE HERE!' OR 'SEE THERE!'
FOR INDEED,
THE KINGDOM OF GOD IS WITHIN YOU."**

Luke 17:20-21

The two statements Jesus makes on the opposite page should be sufficient to dispel the notion of America (or any other nation) being ordained by God to be a visible, tangible expression of One Nation Under God. Jesus is quite explicit in stating that His kingdom is not of this world, that now His kingdom is not from here. When challenged as to when God's kingdom would come, His answer is even more definitive in stating that the kingdom of God does not come with observation, nor will they be able to say see here, or see there, for the kingdom of God will be within you. It is astounding to me that these words Jesus spoke were also printed on the pages of every Bible-loving Puritan that came to the shores of America espousing goals just the opposite of Jesus' words.

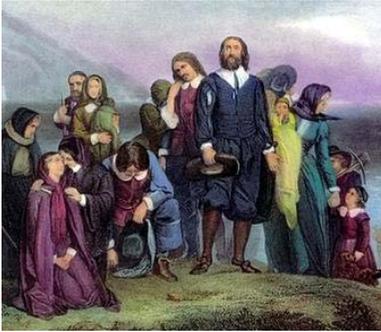
Here are quotes from their own leaders based solely on recorded Puritan beliefs, as stated in Peter Marshall's book, *The Light and the Glory*:

"THEY SAW THEMSELVES AS CALLED TO A NEW PROMISE LAND IN ORDER TO FOUND A NEW ISRAEL..." (pg..20)
"GOD WAS MAKING HIS MOST SIGNIFICANT ATTEMPT SINCE ANCIENT ISRAEL TO CREATE A NEW ISRAEL OF PEOPLE LIVING IN OBEDIENCE TO THE LAWS OF GOD, THROUGH FAITH IN JESUS CHRIST" (pg. 22-23)
...IF GOD WAS TRYING TO BUILD A NEW ISRAEL IN AMERICA, SATAN WAS DOING EVERYTHING TO THWART IT" (pg.234)
"THE PROMISES GOD MADE TO... HIS NEW ISRAEL REMAIN INTACT AND UNMODIFIED..." (pg.355)
"THE FIRST SETTLERS CONSCIOUSLY THOUGHT OF THEMSELVES AS A PEOPLE CALLED INTO A CONTINUATION OF THE COVENANT RELATIONSHIP WITH GOD...WHICH ISRAEL HAD ENTERED INTO...FURTHERMORE THEY SAW THEMSELVES AS CALLED INTO THEIR NEW PROMISE LAND IN ORDER TO FOUND A NEW ISRAEL, WHICH WOULD BE A LIGHT TO THE WHOLE WORLD. A CITY SET UPON A HILL..."
"THE LORD BROUGHT HIS SERVANTS INTO A DESERT LAND OF AMERICA...IN THE WAY OF SEEKING FIRST THE KINGDOM OF GOD FOR THE PURPOSE OF "FULLER AND BETTER REFORMATION OF THE CHURCH OF GOD, THAN IT HATH YET APPEARED IN THE WORLD"
"IN THE VIRGIN WILDERNESS OF AMERICA GOD WAS MAKING HIS MOST SIGNIFICANT ATTEMPT SINCE ANCIENT ISRAEL TO CREATE A NEW ISRAEL...THE PURITANS UNDERSTOOD NEW ENGLAND TO BE A TYPE AND EMBLEM OF NEW JERUSALEM."
"WHAT IF, IN PARTICULAR, HE HAD A PLAN FOR THOSE HE WOULD BRING TO AMERICA, A PLAN WHICH SAW THIS CONTINENT AS THE STAGE FOR A NEW ACT IN THE DRAMA OF MANKIND'S REDEMPTION? COULD IT BE THAT WE AMERICANS, AS A PEOPLE, WERE MEANT TO BE A "LIGHT TO ENLIGHTEN THE GENTILES" (LUKE 2:32)- A DEMONSTRATION TO THE WORLD OF HOW GOD INTENDED HIS CHILDREN TO LIVE TOGETHER UNDER THE LORDSHIP OF JESUS CHRIST?" (pg. 19)
"A NEW JERUSALEM, A MODEL OF THE KINGDOM OF CHRIST UPON EARTH- WE AMERICANS WERE INTENDED TO BE A LIVING PROOF TO THE REST OF THE WORLD..." (pg. 23)

Astounding stated beliefs from God's dedicated people, the Puritans, that are in direct opposition to Jesus' words spoken pertaining to any visible, tangible, geographical manifestation of the kingdom of God!

Are multitudes of Christians in America repeating the error of the Puritans?

THE PURITAN HEART AND MINDSET AS THE BASIS OF CHRISTIAN SOCIAL AND POLITICAL ACTION:



“American fundamentalist Christians show a willingness to assume the burden of responsibility for the spiritual condition of America.

They also show a readiness to accept the political power that might come along with it....

they show a determined purpose to not only purify the Church in America but also prod the saints to get up and do something.

They believe that Christian believers should and must be politically and socially activated. To their way of thinking this is absolutely necessary to preserve the Christian heritage of America and thereby save America itself....

American Christians pursue their quest with great zeal and enthusiasm.

They bring their spiritual dreams down from heaven and onto this earth where they can be manifest. This is the basis of "manifest destiny".

It is also a sense of America being destined by God for influence beyond her own borders.

This was proclaimed back in the 1840's and formulated into U.S. foreign policy.

Many historians consider this principle of "manifest destiny" to be the main spiritual engine driving American history forward.

These totally committed Christian citizens are all working towards the fulfillment of the same basic dream, and it is a lofty one. It can be summed up in one phrase and sentiment. It is to see the establishment of 'one nation under God'.

Strange to say, we have seen this very same heart desire, mindset and motivation before.

We saw it exemplified in the English and American Puritans of centuries past.

It was clearly laid out by John Winthrop in his memorable exhortation to the Puritans as they set sail on their voyage to the New World in

1630. At that time he charged the early colonists with these words:

"....WE MUST CONSIDER THAT WE SHALL BE AS A CITY UPON A HILL (AND THAT) THE EYES OF ALL PEOPLE ARE UPON US.."

....If American history today is a continuing stream dating back to Puritan history in England in the 1640's then what does this tell us about ourselves? It means that at a future time in history when the curtain opens up on pivotal world events, we might well expect to see the Anglo-American Puritans emerge again. They are now the superpower and have the responsibility before God of bringing a just and lasting peace on earth... We can expect them to act in the same energetic and decisive way they did 460 years ago. We can fully anticipate that they will come on the scene with the same vigor and holy zeal they showed when they went to war for a godly cause back during the English Civil War. At that time every unit in the Puritan Army had its own preacher. And from history we know that the injection of religion into a war makes it all the more effective, and all the more terrible.

Are we seeing the Puritans on the rise again? If we are, then we can be sure that they will not be content to just sit around and debate the issues forever. When those issues are moral issues of great importance and they feel that their 'one nation under God' is being taken down the road to Sodom and Gomorrah or is becoming an abortion mill or a house of prostitution and pornography

and is in danger of losing God's favor then they will act. We can expect them to rise up politically and militarily...

...The modern day Puritans are very active on the legal front . They are hiring lawyers and taking their case for a 'nation under God' into the higher courts. They take legal action in the defense of Christians who have been victimized by secularist strong-arm tactics of their arch enemy the ACLU.

The American Center For Law and Justice is very active in this area.

They will also petition and take legal action at the Supreme Court level on issues such as partial birth abortion, (which is essentially infanticide), pornography, students rights to gather and pray on state school property and a host of other church-state battle zones.

Christian political activists believe that playing the political game is the only solid down to earth avenue open for them in their quest to bring back the Godly American culture they once knew and loved...

...It seems that today's Puritans are more interested in promoting a Christian milieu in the land of their present sojourn than in taking the Gospel to people in other lands....

What has happened to our prime focus in the Gospel and the discipling of our children in the faith?

How about the ministry to our brothers and sisters in the poorer inner city churches? And how much action do we see in missionary outreach to other countries?

The Puritan Christian has his eyes on his own land...

The New World here in America is "it".

America is "that city set on a hill"...

...the American Puritans are becoming very vocal.

The Christian political fight for 'one nation under God' goes on. By far the biggest issue for Christian fundamentalists today is the continuing abortion outrage.... Puritans in America have made great efforts and much money has been spent on politicking.

Have they been able to stop the abortion?

No, they have not... What can we do about this?

Can we legislate, bribe, or sue a society into Godliness?

...Or does righteousness come into a society when the throne of Christ is established in individual hearts?...

...Here is the thesis of this article. That same Puritan spirit seen in England in the days of the English Civil War is still with us today in America.

Their Puritan zeal is still just as fiery hot.

Just a few years ago the so called "religious right" impeached President Bill Clinton for 'moral failure'.

I submit to you that once again this was the Puritans at work. Such a thing would never happen in Europe or any other nation in the world for that matter. Christian activists are on the warpath. These Christians are angry!

Road rage is now being superceded by religious rage...

It is the contention of this writer that Puritan Christians are alive and well in America today...It was then, and is now, a dream of the Kingdom of God on earth.

Can it be established in the New World under a God fearing church-state leadership? This is an interesting question. Many Puritans currently believe this can and will be done... They believe that the Kingdom of God is in the church now....

The Kingdom of God is due to be fully established here on earth by the church and before Messiah returns.

This is the crux of Dominion Theology.

Dominionists also believe that God is finished with the Jewish nation.

According to them, all the covenants and promises God had with Israel have now passed on to the church....

...What lies out there in the future for the Puritans? Certainly they will not let go of their dream of an earthly 'nation under God'. Surely they will never compromise their beliefs in the exclusivity of the Christian faith as the ecumenicals have done. But we can be sure that this will be precisely what they will be asked to do. Being the politically engaged Christians that they are, is there a very real danger that they might enter into negotiations for a leading role in the emerging New World Order?...

(end of brief quotes from)

PURITAN HISTORY; PAST, PRESENT, AND FUTURE An essay by Gavin Finley M.D.

<http://endtimepilgrim.org/puritans.htm>.

Modern-day Puritans, such as brother Gavin describes in his article, are full of zeal, but like the Jews in Paul's day, not according to knowledge (Rom.10:2-3). Jesus emphatically states His kingdom is not of this world-His kingdom is not from here (Jn.18:36). Yet, the modern-day Puritans are pursuing madly after an earthly kingdom to make it into the kingdom of God just as did their Puritan forefathers. Certainly we cannot accuse most modern-day Puritans of breaking God's laws of order, decency and justice, but are they not rebelling at other portions of God's Word such as pursuing an earthly kingdom in spite of the otherwise clear sayings of Christ?

Unless modern-day Puritans repent of such ideology they are in danger of becoming just as duped as were the German Christians who politically helped Hitler rise to power at the expense of the Jews. If you read brother Gavin's article carefully, you know that he, like me, is warning believers in this country that America is the new Roman empire rather than the erroneous New Israel that the early Puritans believed it to be. If the politically-based Puritans of today are not careful, they may be involved in propelling to political power the last great Caesar of the coming revived Roman Empire!

(You can read the entire 57 page article of brother Gavin Finley on his website listed above.

Also there are 21 condensed pages found in my book, *Babylon the Great*.

On my website (PastorRandyShupe.com) under the "classic newsletters" this condensed article can also be found.

The article is entitled "THE PURITAN WAY VS. THE PILGRIM WAY")



**“...THE DEVIL,
TAKING HIM UP
ON A HIGH MOUNTAIN,
SHOWED HIM
ALL THE
KINGDOMS OF
THE WORLD IN A
MOMENT OF TIME...
...‘ALL THIS AUTHORITY
I WILL GIVE YOU,
AND THEIR GLORY;
FOR THIS HAS BEEN
DELIVERED TO ME,
AND I GIVE IT TO
WHOMEVER I WISH.
THEREFORE,
IF YOU WILL WORSHIP
BEFORE ME,
ALL WILL BE YOURS.’ ”**
Luke 4:5-7, Matt. 4:8-9

THE WORLD



**“...THE PRINCE
("KOSMOKRATOR" EVIL GENIUS, RULER)
OF
THE WORLD
IS COMING.
AND HE HAS
NO CLAIM ON ME.
HE HAS
NOTHING IN COMMON WITH ME;
THERE IS
NOTHING IN ME
THAT BELONGS TO HIM,
HE HAS
NO POWER OVER ME.”**
John 14:30 Amplified Bible

**"MY KINGDOM
IS NOT OF THIS WORLD.
IF MY KINGDOM
WERE OF THIS WORLD,
MY SERVANTS WOULD
FIGHT...
BUT NOW
MY KINGDOM
IS NOT FROM HERE.”**
John 18:36

**“NOW WHEN HE WAS
ASKED BY THE PHARISEES
WHEN THE KINGDOM OF
GOD WOULD COME,
HE ANSWERED THEM
AND SAID,
"THE KINGDOM OF GOD
DOES NOT COME WITH
OBSERVATION;
NOR WILL THEY SAY,
'SEE HERE!'
OR
'SEE THERE!'
FOR INDEED,
THE KINGDOM
OF GOD IS WITHIN YOU.”**
Luke 17:20-21

I stated this earlier on page 143 and it is worth repeating:

“The reason I have shared these selected thoughts with you at this time is so that you, the reader, may develop a proper view of the world in which we live, the world which we are called to overcome. That world includes America. Satan showed Jesus **ALL** the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time, America included. There is no earthly, physical, visible kingdom that constitutes the kingdom of God on earth at this time. The kingdom of God in this present dispensation is internal, not external. The Puritans were in error pertaining to America becoming God’s New Israel on earth. Christianity is in error pertaining to the idea that God created this nation for becoming a visible expression of One Nation Under God. As long as American Christians hold America as excluded from among the rest of the nations Satan said were under his authority, then a proper view of America cannot be cultivated. The whole thrust of returning America to its godly foundations is delusional thinking” (end of quote).

Christianity (in America) must seek to be **OTHER THAN** not the **SAME AS**.

If our objectives as Christians are the “same as” other groups in this country then we fail to be like our Master as stated on the opposite page.

If we, like so many zealots in this country, seek to **DOMINATE** others, then we lose the emphasis of true evangelism which is the ability to **INFLUENCE** others with the true message of the Kingdom of God.

True Christian warfare is for **THE SOULS OF MEN**. It is not a battle for **THE SOIL OF MEN**.

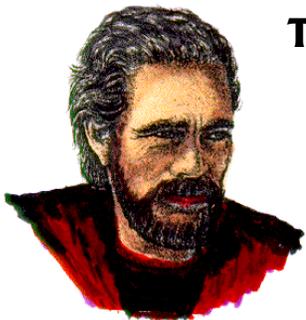
The early Puritans were amiss in this area and so is modern-day American Puritanism which flies under the banner of politically-active Christianity. The near-militant movement of the Christian-based Tea Party has set their hearts on being able to dominate the Republican Party. They feel it is the best expression of their Christian duty. If we become involved in this subtle substitute of Satan, what Jesus says of Himself cannot be said of ourselves:

“...THE PRINCE (“KOSMOKRATOR” EVIL GENIUS, RULER) OF THE WORLD IS COMING.

AND HE HAS NO CLAIM ON ME. HE HAS NOTHING IN COMMON WITH ME;

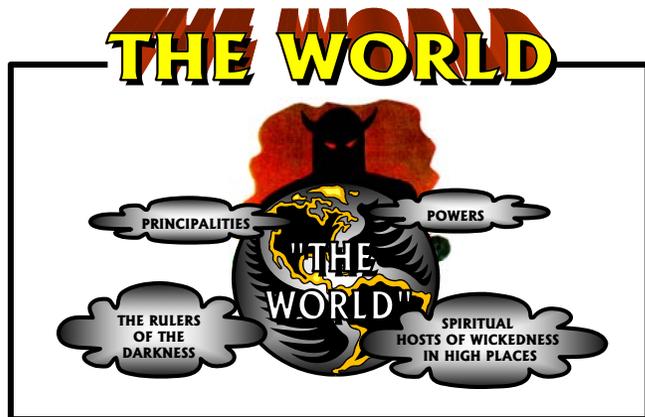
THERE IS NOTHING IN ME THAT BELONGS TO HIM, HE HAS NO POWER OVER ME.” John 14:30 Amplified Bible

Buy into his subtle substitute and Satan will have a strong claim on you, he will have much in common with you, there will be much in you that belongs to him, and indeed, quite deceptively, he will have much power over you.



The Apostle James

THE APOSTLE JAMES' VIEW OF THE WORLD



**“PURE AND UNDEFILED RELIGION
BEFORE GOD AND THE FATHER IS THIS:
TO VISIT ORPHANS AND WIDOWS
IN THEIR TROUBLE,
AND
TO KEEP ONESELF
UNSPOTTED FROM THE WORLD.”**

James 1:27

**“ADULTERERS AND ADULTERESSES!
DO YOU NOT KNOW
THAT FRIENDSHIP WITH THE WORLD
IS ENMITY WITH GOD?
WHOEVER THEREFORE
WANTS TO BE A FRIEND OF THE WORLD
MAKES HIMSELF AN ENEMY OF GOD.”**

James 4:4-5

The apostle James, in an all-too-brief epistle, spoke twice to God's people about the world in which they lived. In one instance he clarifies what is to be considered as pure and undefiled religion. The other instance contains a stern rebuke to those of God's people who choose a compromising stance as being friends of the world. James starkly declares this segment of God's people to be adulterers and adulteresses.

Wow! I would imagine that the apostle James would not be in hot demand as a guest speaker in the churches if he continued to speak to God's people in such a blunt manner. As far as this teacher is concerned, such bluntness is desperately needed in today's churches. Much of what is in the world today is considered neutral or harmless involvement by large segments of God's people. Perhaps in labeling them adulterers and adulteresses due to their friendship with a corrupt world under the sway of the wicked one, James issues a shocking wakeup call to God's people that nothing is to be considered neutral or harmless pertaining to the world that is under the guidance of its evil re-creator. The believer can be friends of the world or they can be as James states earlier, like Abraham, the friend of God (James 2:23). It is strong language James gives to God's people in warning them that friendship with the world is enmity with God, and that whoever wants to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God.

“...KEEP ONESELF UNSPOTTED FROM THE WORLD...”

This statement of James reveals how ensnared many of God's people have become under the banner of what they consider to be proper religious activity. Notice that James does not call God's people into the obsessive fervor of attempting to remove the spots in the world. James calls us to just the opposite by keeping oneself unspotted from the world. God's people have no mandate to halt abortion, to prevent gay marriage, or any other of the multitude of religious activity designed to remove the spots of the world. There is a huge difference between removing spots found in the world and keeping oneself unspotted from what contaminates the world around us.

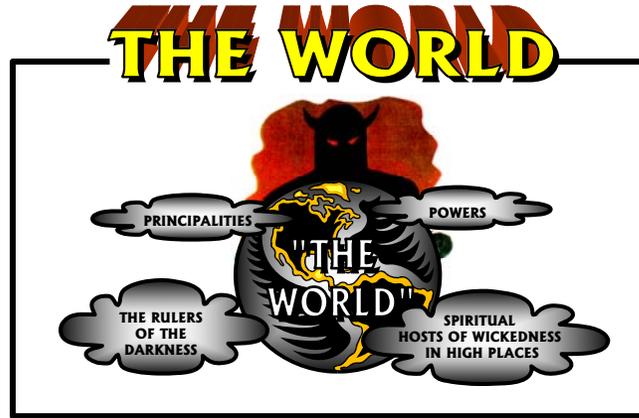
“...VISITING THE ORPHANS AND WIDOWS IN THEIR TROUBLE...”

In the other half of James definition of pure and undefiled religion, he singles out an area that God's people are to become known for: visiting orphans and widows in their trouble. In America, Christianity is more bent on being known for what it is against, anti-abortion, anti-gay marriage, etc. They are well-known for condemning spots they see in the world around them. However, God wants the focus of His people to be on keeping themselves unspotted from the perverse world in which they live.

THE APOSTLE JOHN'S VIEW OF THE WORLD



The Apostle John



**“DO NOT LOVE THE WORLD OR THE THINGS IN THE WORLD.
IF ANYONE LOVES THE WORLD, THE LOVE OF THE FATHER IS NOT IN HIM.
FOR ALL THAT IS IN THE WORLD --
THE LUST OF THE FLESH, THE LUST OF THE EYES, AND THE PRIDE OF LIFE --
IS NOT OF THE FATHER
BUT IS OF THE WORLD.
AND THE WORLD IS PASSING AWAY, AND THE LUST OF IT;
BUT HE WHO DOES THE WILL OF GOD ABIDES FOREVER.”**

1 John 2:15-17

What is found lacking in James' epistle is clearly stated in John's first epistle, namely, a definition of what constitutes the world. Before we consider that definition, note that the apostle John is as equally blunt as was the apostle James in confronting God's people:



"...WHOEVER THEREFORE WANTS TO BE A FRIEND OF THE WORLD MAKES HIMSELF AN ENEMY OF GOD."

James 4:4

Neither James nor John give a compromised mixture as conveyed in the popular cliché "the best of both worlds", but is rather stated as an either or situation requiring choice.

"...IF ANYONE LOVES THE WORLD, THE LOVE OF THE FATHER IS NOT IN HIM."

1 Jn. 2:15



Become a friend of the world, you are now an enemy of God. You can love the world or you can love the Father. However, to love the world is evidence that the love for the Father is not in such a compromising believer.

Paul the apostle once lamented over the decision made by his once-faithful fellow-believer Demas:

**"BE DILIGENT TO COME TO ME QUICKLY;
FOR DEMAS HAS FORSAKEN ME, HAVING LOVED THIS PRESENT WORLD..."** 2 Tim 4:9-10

Demas began well as a faithful traveling companion of Paul and shared in the promotion of the gospel, but he did not finish well. Eventually, he chose the world that is passing away over that which abides forever. He chose the temporal world over the eternal one which is to come. It requires an eternal vision for the unseen to be able to continue to persevere:

**"...WE DO NOT LOOK AT THE THINGS WHICH ARE SEEN, BUT AT THE THINGS WHICH ARE NOT SEEN.
FOR THE THINGS WHICH ARE SEEN ARE TEMPORARY, BUT THE THINGS WHICH ARE NOT SEEN ARE ETERNAL."**

2 Cor. 4:18

Moses had the same eternal vision:

**"...CHOOSING RATHER TO SUFFER AFFLICTION WITH THE PEOPLE OF GOD
THAN TO ENJOY THE PASSING PLEASURES OF SIN,
ESTEEMING THE REPROACH OF CHRIST GREATER RICHES THAN THE TREASURES IN EGYPT;
FOR HE LOOKED TO THE REWARD...FOR HE ENDURED AS SEEING HIM WHO IS INVISIBLE."**

Heb. 11:25-26

**"FOR ALL THAT IS IN THE WORLD --
THE LUST OF THE FLESH, THE LUST OF THE EYES, AND THE PRIDE OF LIFE --
IS NOT OF THE FATHER BUT IS OF THE WORLD."** 1jn. 2:15-16



The Apostle John



3

THE PRIDE OF LIFE

**"ALL
THAT IS
IN THE WORLD"**

1

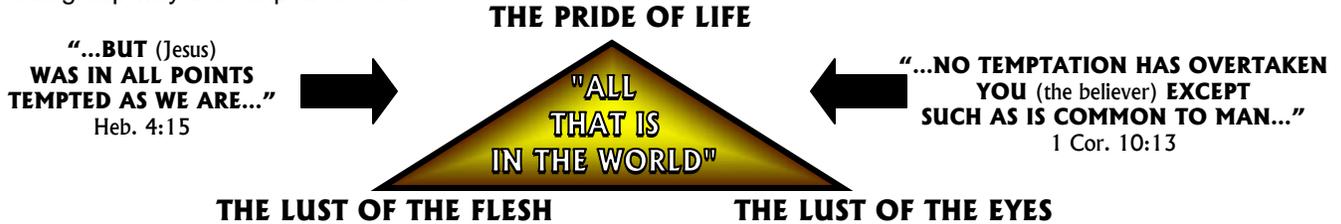
THE LUST OF THE FLESH

2

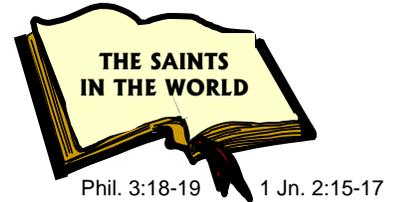
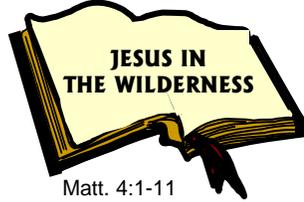
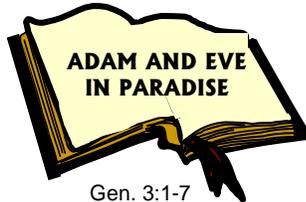
THE LUST OF THE EYES

The apostle John speaks to Christians pertaining to all that is in the world which is under the sway of the wicked one (1 Jn. 5:19). Bluntly, he states, that the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life are things not stemming from God the Father, but rather are the things that comprise this present world of lusts that are destined to pass away. It is only the one who does the will of God who will abide forever (1 Jn. 2:17).

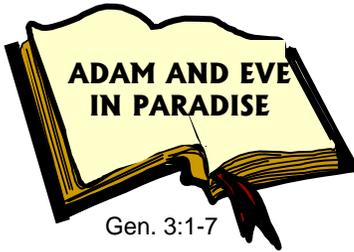
This is not new revelation given by the apostle John, but rather a repetition of what Satan the tempter has used before against not only the people of God down through the ages, but against Jesus Himself in the temptation in the wilderness. When we understand that all temptation from Satan falls under these three basic categories, we can grasp why the scriptures state:



The scriptures bear witness to this repetitious use of a threefold temptation by Satan:



"THAT WHICH HAS BEEN IS WHAT WILL BE, THAT WHICH IS DONE IS WHAT WILL BE DONE, AND THERE IS NOTHING NEW UNDER THE SUN. IS THERE ANYTHING OF WHICH IT MAY BE SAID, 'SEE, THIS IS NEW'? IT HAS ALREADY BEEN IN ANCIENT TIMES BEFORE US." Eccl. 1:9-10



3 THE PRIDE OF LIFE

"ALL
THAT IS
IN THE WORLD"

1 THE LUST OF THE FLESH

2 THE LUST OF THE EYES

"NOW THE SERPENT WAS MORE CUNNING
THAN ANY BEAST OF THE FIELD WHICH THE LORD GOD HAD MADE.
AND HE SAID TO THE WOMAN,
'HAS GOD INDEED SAID, 'YOU SHALL NOT EAT OF EVERY TREE OF THE GARDEN?'"
AND THE WOMAN SAID TO THE SERPENT, 'WE MAY EAT THE FRUIT OF THE TREES OF THE GARDEN;
BUT OF THE FRUIT OF THE TREE WHICH IS IN THE MIDST OF THE GARDEN, GOD HAS SAID,
'YOU SHALL NOT EAT IT, NOR SHALL YOU TOUCH IT, LEST YOU DIE.'

THEN THE SERPENT SAID TO THE WOMAN, 'YOU WILL NOT SURELY DIE.
FOR GOD KNOWS THAT IN THE DAY YOU EAT OF IT YOUR EYES WILL BE OPENED,
AND YOU WILL BE LIKE GOD,
KNOWING GOOD AND EVIL.'

SO WHEN THE WOMAN SAW THAT THE TREE WAS GOOD FOR FOOD, ← 3
THAT IT WAS PLEASANT TO THE EYES, ← 2 1
AND A TREE DESIRABLE TO MAKE ONE WISE, ← 3
SHE TOOK OF ITS FRUIT AND ATE.
SHE ALSO GAVE TO HER HUSBAND WITH HER, AND HE ATE." Gen. 3:1-7

The apostle John has stated plainly that all that is in the world, that Satan has created, consists of these three categories: (1) the lust of the flesh, (2) the lust of the eyes, (3) the pride of life. Although John is the only one using these specific phrases of identification, we will come to see that the scriptures bear witness of the use of these repetitious categories of evil throughout.

The first appearance, of this trinity of evil temptations is found in the first book of the Bible, Genesis. Lucifer, already in a fallen state, identified as the serpent, now abides in the Garden of Eden inhabiting the one forbidden tree identified as The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. From this strategic position he waits for opportunity to bait Adam and Eve who, placed there by God, are to govern the Garden of God.

Although made knowledgeable of this forbidden tree and its fruit by God Himself, Eve is undermined by the serpent's insinuation that God is hiding truth from Adam and Eve. Doing what God has forbidden will open their eyes and make them equal with God concerning the things God is supposedly hiding from them. This is the bait of the pride of life. The appeal from the serpent comes in like a flood on three fronts. First, he entices her with a visual of the fruit which looked good for food. This is an appeal to feed unhealthy and forbidden appetites and desires lurking within. It is forbidden fruit, but it looks good for food. It can satisfy all your cravings. This is what John will later identify as the lust of the flesh, an appetite for things we know will harm us, but we want them regardless.

Secondly, the serpent entices Eve with what she can see set before her eyes, it was something pleasant to the eyes. Remember, we are talking about lusts, passionate cravings and longings for that which we do not possess, but by means of the eye-gate we can see what is there for the taking. This is what John reveals as the lust of the eyes.

Thirdly, Eve is baited with dissatisfaction with what God has given her. The fruit of this tree is desirable because, according to the serpent, it can make one wise. In comes the bait of all time, what John will later classify as the pride of life. The serpent whispers that you can be like God Himself, better than everyone else, smarter than everyone else, knowing all the good and all the evil God is purposely hiding from you.

In Satan's first assault on mankind he opens his arsenal with what will become a repetitious onslaught against not only man, but even against Jesus Himself. These are the weapons of his warfare. Get to know them for you will see them personally as long as you are in this present world that remains under the serpent's influence.

**"THAT WHICH HAS BEEN IS WHAT WILL BE, THAT WHICH IS DONE IS WHAT WILL BE DONE,
AND THERE IS NOTHING NEW UNDER THE SUN.
IS THERE ANYTHING OF WHICH IT MAY BE SAID, 'SEE, THIS IS NEW'?
IT HAS ALREADY BEEN IN ANCIENT TIMES BEFORE US."**

Ecc. 1:9-10

**"THEN THE SERPENT SAID
TO THE WOMAN, 'YOU WILL
NOT SURELY DIE.
FOR GOD KNOWS THAT IN
THE DAY YOU EAT OF IT
YOUR EYES WILL BE OPENED,
AND YOU WILL BE LIKE GOD,
KNOWING GOOD AND EVIL.'**

**SO WHEN THE WOMAN SAW
THAT THE TREE WAS
GOOD FOR FOOD,
THAT IT WAS PLEASANT
TO THE EYES,
AND A TREE DESIRABLE
TO MAKE ONE WISE,
SHE TOOK OF ITS FRUIT
AND ATE.
SHE ALSO GAVE TO HER
HUSBAND WITH HER,
AND HE ATE."**

Gen. 3:1-7



**"FOR I AM ZEALOUS FOR
YOU WITH A GODLY
EAGERNESS AND A
DIVINE JEALOUSY,
FOR I HAVE BETROTHED
YOU TO ONE HUSBAND,
TO PRESENT YOU
AS A CHASTE VIRGIN
TO CHRIST.
BUT NOW I AM FEARFUL,
LEST THAT EVEN
AS THE SERPENT
BEGUILED EVE
BY HIS CUNNING,
SO YOUR MINDS
MAY BE CORRUPTED
AND SEDUCED FROM
WHOLEHEARTED AND
SINCERE AND PURE
DEVOTION TO CHRIST."**

2 Cor. 11:2-4 Amp.

Take a hard look at the opposite page lest we allow the story of the seduction of Eve to be relegated only to the impartation of the initial act of sin befalling mankind. Paul is conveying a personal fear of a repeat performance by the serpent upon the last Adam's espoused Bride of Jesus Christ, the church:

"FOR I HAVE BETROTHED YOU TO ONE HUSBAND, TO PRESENT YOU AS A CHASTE VIRGIN TO CHRIST. BUT NOW I AM FEARFUL, LEST THAT EVEN AS THE SERPENT BEGUILED EVE BY HIS CUNNING, SO YOUR MINDS MAY BE CORRUPTED AND SEDUCED FROM WHOLEHEARTED AND SINCERE AND PURE DEVOTION TO CHRIST."

2 Cor. 11:2-4 Amplified Bible



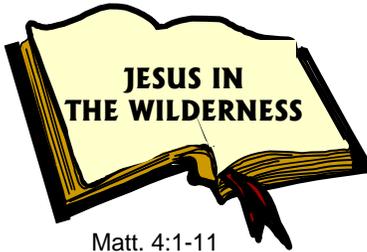
"...CHRIST ALSO LOVED THE CHURCH AND GAVE HIMSELF FOR HER, THAT HE MIGHT SANCTIFY AND CLEANSE HER WITH THE WASHING OF WATER BY THE WORD, THAT HE MIGHT PRESENT HER TO HIMSELF A GLORIOUS CHURCH, NOT HAVING SPOT OR WRINKLE OR ANY SUCH THING, BUT THAT SHE SHOULD BE HOLY AND WITHOUT BLEMISH... THIS IS A GREAT MYSTERY, BUT I SPEAK CONCERNING CHRIST AND THE CHURCH."

Eph. 5:25-33

From the above two bridal-laced passages we can see that Paul held a much higher goal for the church than the initial act of a believer becoming part of the Body of Christ. Paul's focus is set upon the church literally becoming the Bride of Christ (married to Christ). Just as Eve was created for the first Adam to be his bride, so likewise Jesus, in the role of the last Adam (1 Cor. 15:45), is to be the Bridegroom of "Eve", the church. Jesus intends to present this glorious church to Himself, the church that Paul desires to personally present as a chaste virgin to Christ.

However, the serpent has other plans for this new Eve, the espoused Bride of Christ. He is going to go after her in the same cunning manner that he went after the original Eve. It will be through the same pattern that worked on the original Eve, which is the apostle John's stated threefold assault of, the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes and the pride of life. The serpent knows such a condition is quite sufficient to disqualify her from being found a glorious church that does not have spot or wrinkle or any such thing, holy and without blemish.

Dear Christian, we are that spiritual Eve! The serpent is seeking all who will fall for the same enticing deception with which he conned the original Eve! Remember, we are not to be ignorant of his devices (2 Cor. 2:11).



Matt. 4:1-11

3 THE PRIDE OF LIFE

"ALL
THAT IS
IN THE WORLD"

1 THE LUST OF THE FLESH

2 THE LUST OF THE EYES

"THEN JESUS WAS LED UP BY THE SPIRIT INTO THE WILDERNESS TO BE TEMPTED BY THE DEVIL. AND WHEN HE HAD FASTED FORTY DAYS AND FORTY NIGHTS, AFTERWARD HE WAS HUNGRY.

NOW WHEN THE TEMPTER CAME TO HIM, HE SAID,

'IF YOU ARE THE SON OF GOD, COMMAND THAT THESE STONES BECOME BREAD.' ← 1
BUT HE ANSWERED AND SAID, 'IT IS WRITTEN, 'MAN SHALL NOT LIVE BY BREAD ALONE, BUT BY EVERY WORD THAT PROCEEDS FROM THE MOUTH OF GOD.'

THEN THE DEVIL TOOK HIM UP INTO THE HOLY CITY, SET HIM ON THE PINNACLE OF THE TEMPLE, AND SAID TO HIM, 'IF YOU ARE THE SON OF GOD, THROW YOURSELF DOWN. FOR IT IS WRITTEN: 'HE SHALL GIVE HIS ANGELS CHARGE OVER YOU,' AND, 'IN THEIR HANDS THEY SHALL BEAR YOU UP, LEST YOU DASH YOUR FOOT AGAINST A STONE.' ← 3
JESUS SAID TO HIM, 'IT IS WRITTEN AGAIN, 'YOU SHALL NOT TEMPT THE LORD YOUR GOD.'

AGAIN, THE DEVIL TOOK HIM UP ON AN EXCEEDINGLY HIGH MOUNTAIN, AND SHOWED HIM ALL THE KINGDOMS OF THE WORLD AND THEIR GLORY. ← 2
AND HE SAID TO HIM, 'ALL THESE THINGS I WILL GIVE YOU IF YOU WILL FALL DOWN AND WORSHIP ME.' THEN JESUS SAID TO HIM, 'AWAY WITH YOU, SATAN! FOR IT IS WRITTEN, 'YOU SHALL WORSHIP THE LORD YOUR GOD, AND HIM ONLY YOU SHALL SERVE.'
THEN THE DEVIL LEFT HIM, AND BEHOLD, ANGELS CAME AND MINISTERED TO HIM."

Matt. 4:1-11

Perhaps it would be most impacting to consider next on our list those to whom the serpent subjected his threefold themes of seduction, the Bridegroom Himself, the Lord Jesus Christ, the last Adam! It worked on Eve, it worked on Adam, he will try it on “Eve” the church, why not try it on the head of the church, Jesus Christ?

The serpent is going after the espoused Bride and the Bridegroom Himself! Get the Bridegroom and there will be no wedding! Satan feels confident with having brought down the original Adam and Eve with his threefold seduction of the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes and the pride of life, that he feels ready to try it again. However, we know how this trial ended. Satan was defeated on every front by Jesus Christ:



**“IF YOU ARE THE SON OF GOD, COMMAND THAT THESE STONES BECOME BREAD
IT IS WRITTEN, ‘MAN SHALL NOT LIVE BY BREAD ALONE,’ ← THE LUST OF THE FLESH**

**“...SHOWED HIM ALL THE KINGDOMS OF THE WORLD AND THEIR GLORY
...IT IS WRITTEN, ‘YOU SHALL WORSHIP THE LORD YOUR GOD,
AND HIM ONLY YOU SHALL SERVE.’ ← THE LUST OF THE EYES**

**“IF YOU ARE THE SON OF GOD, THROW YOURSELF DOWN.
FOR IT IS WRITTEN: ‘HE SHALL GIVE HIS ANGELS CHARGE OVER YOU ...’
‘...IT IS WRITTEN AGAIN, ‘YOU SHALL NOT TEMPT THE LORD YOUR GOD’ ← THE PRIDE OF LIFE**

Jesus is The Word of God (Jn.1:1, Rev. 19:13). It was His dependence upon the Word of God that defeated the devil in the wilderness temptation. Eve fell because she listened to the serpent’s challenge of what God had said. Jesus prevailed because He believed only in what God had said.

Unless the members of the last-day Eve (the church) are equally dependent upon what is written in the Word of God, then many of them will fail as did the original Eve. This great concern is fully expressed by Paul:

**“FOR I HAVE BETROTHED YOU TO ONE HUSBAND, TO PRESENT YOU AS A CHASTE VIRGIN TO CHRIST.
BUT NOW I AM FEARFUL, LEST THAT EVEN
AS THE SERPENT BEGUILLED EVE BY HIS CUNNING,
SO YOUR MINDS MAY BE CORRUPTED AND SEDUCED
FROM WHOLEHEARTED AND SINCERE AND PURE DEVOTION TO CHRIST.”**

2 Cor. 11:2-4 Amp



1Cor. 10:1-11

3 THE PRIDE OF LIFE



1 THE LUST OF THE FLESH

2 THE LUST OF THE EYES

“MOREOVER, BRETHREN, I DO NOT WANT YOU TO BE UNAWARE THAT ALL OUR FATHERS WERE UNDER THE CLOUD, ALL PASSED THROUGH THE SEA, ALL WERE BAPTIZED INTO MOSES IN THE CLOUD AND IN THE SEA, ALL ATE THE SAME SPIRITUAL FOOD, AND ALL DRANK THE SAME SPIRITUAL DRINK. FOR THEY DRANK OF THAT SPIRITUAL ROCK THAT FOLLOWED THEM, AND THAT ROCK WAS CHRIST. BUT WITH MOST OF THEM GOD WAS NOT WELL PLEASED, FOR THEIR BODIES WERE SCATTERED IN THE WILDERNESS.

NOW THESE THINGS BECAME OUR EXAMPLES, TO THE INTENT THAT WE SHOULD NOT LUST AFTER EVIL THINGS AS THEY ALSO LUSTED.

AND DO NOT BECOME IDOLATERS AS WERE SOME OF THEM. AS IT IS WRITTEN, ‘THE PEOPLE SAT DOWN TO EAT AND DRINK, AND ROSE UP TO PLAY.’

NOR LET US COMMIT SEXUAL IMMORALITY, AS SOME OF THEM DID, AND IN ONE DAY TWENTY-THREE THOUSAND FELL;

NOR LET US TEMPT CHRIST, AS SOME OF THEM ALSO TEMPTED, AND WERE DESTROYED BY SERPENTS; NOR MURMUR, AS SOME OF THEM ALSO MURMURED, AND WERE DESTROYED BY THE DESTROYER.”

1 Cor. 10:1-11

Jesus spent forty days in the wilderness temptation, the children of Israel spent forty years. God proclaimed that Jesus was His Son in whom He was well pleased. However, His testimony of the children of Israel was that with most of them He was not well pleased seeing that their bodies were scattered throughout the wilderness in defeat.

In First Corinthians Paul opens this 10th chapter, as well as closes it, with this dual admonition to saints like you and me, born-again Christians, members of God's church:

**"...BUT WITH MOST OF THEM
GOD WAS NOT WELL PLEASSED,
FOR THEIR BODIES WERE
SCATTERED IN THE WILDERNESS.
NOW THESE THINGS
BECAME OUR EXAMPLES,
TO THE INTENT THAT WE
SHOULD NOT LUST AFTER EVIL
THINGS AS THEY ALSO LUSTED..."**

1 Cor. 10:5-6



**"...NOW ALL THESE THINGS
HAPPENED TO THEM AS EXAMPLES,
AND THEY WERE WRITTEN
FOR OUR ADMONITION,
ON WHOM THE END OF THE AGES HAVE
COME. THEREFORE LET HIM WHO THINKS
HE STANDS TAKE HEED LEST HE FALL.
NO TEMPTATION HAS OVERTAKEN YOU
EXCEPT SUCH AS IS COMMON TO MAN..."**

1 Cor. 10:11-13

Paul emphasizes that what happened to the multitude of the children of Israel in those forty years in the wilderness is an important example for us to heed as Christians. Obviously, Paul thinks this scenario can happen to Christians as well. Why so? Because the bulk of the children of Israel succumbed to the same threefold temptation Satan used initially on Adam and Eve, then attempted upon Jesus Himself, and as John warns, will continue to be used against all believers as well (1 Jn. 2:15-16). How well did the serpent's plan work on the children of Israel? It turned an eleven-day journey into a forty year nightmare! Most of those, that God brought up out of the bondage of Egypt, bore the shameful testimony that with most of them God was not well pleased as their bodies ended up scattered throughout the wilderness.

Now the warning is given to us by Paul, twice repeated, that these things became our examples and were written for our admonition (strong warning) pertaining to the imminent danger of temptation that is common to man. What is that common temptation? It is this repetitious onslaught of satanic temptation identified by the apostle John as all that is in the world: the lust of the flesh, the lust of the flesh and the pride of life.

THE (PHYSICAL) LUST OF THE FLESH

**“NOW THESE THINGS BECAME OUR EXAMPLES,
TO THE INTENT THAT WE SHOULD NOT LUST AFTER EVIL THINGS AS THEY ALSO LUSTED...**

**...NOR LET US TEMPT CHRIST, AS SOME OF THEM ALSO TEMPTED,
AND WERE DESTROYED BY SERPENTS. NOR MURMUR, AS SOME OF THEM ALSO MURMURED,
AND WERE DESTROYED BY THE DESTROYER.”**

1 Cor. 10:6-10

**“...AND THE SOUL OF THE PEOPLE BECAME VERY DISCOURAGED ON THE WAY. AND THE PEOPLE SPOKE AGAINST GOD
AND AGAINST MOSES: ‘WHY HAVE YOU BROUGHT US UP OUT OF EGYPT TO DIE IN THE WILDERNESS?
FOR THERE IS NO FOOD AND NO WATER, AND OUR SOUL LOATHES THIS WORTHLESS BREAD.’
SO THE LORD SENT FIERY SERPENTS AMONG THE PEOPLE, AND THEY BIT THE PEOPLE;
AND MANY OF THE PEOPLE OF ISRAEL DIED.”** Num. 21:4-6

**“NOW THE MIXED MULTITUDE WHO WERE AMONG THEM YIELDED TO INTENSE CRAVING;
SO THE CHILDREN OF ISRAEL ALSO WEPT AGAIN AND SAID: ‘WHO WILL GIVE US MEAT TO EAT?
WE REMEMBER THE FISH WHICH WE ATE FREELY IN EGYPT, THE CUCUMBERS, THE MELONS, THE LEEKS,
THE ONIONS, AND THE GARLIC; BUT NOW OUR WHOLE BEING IS DRIED UP;
THERE IS NOTHING AT ALL EXCEPT THIS MANNA BEFORE OUR EYES!...’** Num. 11:4-6
**THEREFORE THE LORD WILL GIVE YOU MEAT, AND YOU SHALL EAT. YOU SHALL EAT, NOT ONE DAY, NOR TWO DAYS,
NOR FIVE DAYS, NOR TEN DAYS, NOR TWENTY DAYS, BUT FOR A WHOLE MONTH, UNTIL IT COMES OUT OF YOUR
NOSTRILS AND BECOMES LOATHSOME TO YOU, BECAUSE YOU HAVE DESPISED THE LORD WHO IS AMONG YOU, AND
HAVE WEPT BEFORE HIM, SAYING, ‘WHY DID WE EVER COME UP OUT OF EGYPT?’** Num. 11:12-20

**...NOW A WIND WENT OUT FROM THE LORD, AND IT BROUGHT QUAIL FROM THE SEA AND LEFT THEM FLUTTERING
NEAR THE CAMP, ABOUT A DAY'S JOURNEY ON THIS SIDE AND ABOUT A DAY'S JOURNEY ON THE OTHER SIDE, ALL
AROUND THE CAMP, AND ABOUT TWO CUBITS ABOVE THE SURFACE OF THE GROUND. AND THE PEOPLE STAYED UP ALL
THAT DAY, ALL NIGHT, AND ALL THE NEXT DAY, AND GATHERED THE QUAIL AND THEY SPREAD THEM OUT FOR
THEMSELVES ALL AROUND THE CAMP. BUT WHILE THE MEAT WAS STILL BETWEEN THEIR TEETH, BEFORE IT WAS
CHEWED, THE WRATH OF THE LORD WAS AROUSED AGAINST THE PEOPLE, AND THE LORD STRUCK THE PEOPLE
WITH A VERY GREAT PLAGUE. SO HE CALLED THE NAME OF THAT PLACE KIBROTH HATTA AVAH,
BECAUSE THERE THEY BURIED THE PEOPLE WHO HAD YIELDED TO CRAVING.”** Num. 11:31-34

The opposite page compares how Paul briefly summarized the children of Israel's encounter with the lust of the flesh compared to a detailed account found in the book of Numbers. Note both accounts in Numbers speak of a people who yielded to intense craving. It is my understanding that these acts of intense cravings manifest either in the physical realm of cravings for food, or in the sensual realm of cravings for sexual immorality. We will address both positions.

Here in Numbers we have the same aspect of the lust of the flesh that the serpent used on Eve in the Garden and on Jesus in the wilderness. It is the intense craving over physical food. For Eve, it was about forbidden fruit. For Jesus it was a matter of life and death as He was in His 40th day of fasting when Satan sought to entice Him to command stones to be changed into bread. Although the scripture states that He was very hungry, Jesus proclaimed that man does not live by bread alone. The children of Israel did not want to live by bread alone either. They had intense cravings for what they remembered as the leeks, garlic, melons, fish and meats they ate freely in Egypt. Specifically, they now wanted meat to eat. God's manna sent from Heaven they soon labeled as worthless bread. As we might say today, these were not happy campers! The old life looks better every day. How quickly they forgot Pharaoh's demand for them to make bricks without giving them a provision of straw needed to do so. I doubt if there was even time for all that abundant eating they seem to remember taking place in Egypt. Look how the Psalms records this event:

**“HE SAVED THEM FROM THE HAND OF HIM WHO HATED THEM, AND REDEEMED THEM
FROM THE HAND OF THE ENEMY. THE WATERS COVERED THEIR ENEMIES; THERE WAS NOT ONE OF THEM LEFT.
THEN THEY BELIEVED HIS WORDS; THEY SANG HIS PRAISE.**

**THEY SOON FORGOT HIS WORKS; THEY DID NOT WAIT FOR HIS COUNSEL,
BUT LUSTED EXCEEDINGLY IN THE WILDERNESS, AND TESTED GOD IN THE DESERT.
AND HE GAVE THEM THEIR REQUEST, BUT SENT LEANNESS INTO THEIR SOUL.”** Psalm 106:10-15

Not a small problem is this aspect of the lust of the flesh, for a weary Moses tells God that he cannot handle their constant weeping over what they now lack since God delivered them from the slavery of Egypt:

**“SO MOSES HEARD THE PEOPLE WEeping THROUGHOUT THEIR FAMILIES...
WHERE AM I TO GET MEAT TO GIVE TO ALL THESE PEOPLE?
FOR THEY WEEP ALL OVER ME, SAYING, ‘GIVE US MEAT, THAT WE MAY EAT.’
I AM NOT ABLE TO BEAR ALL THESE PEOPLE ALONE, BECAUSE THE BURDEN IS TOO HEAVY FOR ME.
IF YOU TREAT ME LIKE THIS, PLEASE KILL ME HERE AND NOW...”** Num. 11:13-15

THE (SEXUAL) LUST OF THE FLESH

**“NOW THESE THINGS BECAME OUR EXAMPLES,
TO THE INTENT THAT WE SHOULD NOT LUST AFTER EVIL THINGS AS THEY ALSO LUSTED...**

**...NOR LET US COMMIT SEXUAL IMMORALITY, AS SOME OF THEM DID,
AND IN ONE DAY TWENTY-THREE THOUSAND FELL; 1 Cor. 10:6, 8**

**“NOW ISRAEL REMAINED IN ACACIA GROVE,
AND THE PEOPLE BEGAN TO COMMIT HARLOTRY WITH THE WOMEN OF MOAB.
THEY INVITED THE PEOPLE TO THE SACRIFICES OF THEIR GODS,
AND THE PEOPLE ATE AND BOWED DOWN TO THEIR GODS. SO ISRAEL WAS JOINED TO BAAL OF PEOR,
AND THE ANGER OF THE LORD WAS AROUSED AGAINST ISRAEL...
AND THOSE WHO DIED IN THE PLAGUE WERE TWENTY-FOUR THOUSAND...” Num. 25:1-3,9**

**“...YOU TRUSTED IN YOUR OWN BEAUTY, PLAYED THE HARLOT BECAUSE OF YOUR FAME,
AND POURED OUT YOUR HARLOTRY ON EVERYONE PASSING BY WHO WOULD HAVE IT.
YOU TOOK SOME OF YOUR GARMENTS AND ADORNED MULTICOLORED HIGH PLACES FOR YOURSELF,
AND PLAYED THE HARLOT ON THEM. SUCH THINGS SHOULD NOT HAPPEN, NOR BE...**

**THEN IT WAS SO, AFTER ALL YOUR WICKEDNESS -- 'WOE, WOE TO YOU!' SAYS THE LORD GOD --
...YOU OFFERED YOURSELF TO EVERYONE WHO PASSED BY, AND MULTIPLIED YOUR ACTS OF HARLOTRY.
YOU ALSO COMMITTED HARLOTRY WITH THE EGYPTIANS, YOUR VERY FLESHLY NEIGHBORS,
AND INCREASED YOUR ACTS OF HARLOTRY TO PROVOKE ME TO ANGER.**

**...THOSE WHO HATE YOU...WERE ASHAMED OF YOUR LEWD BEHAVIOR.
YOU ALSO PLAYED THE HARLOT WITH THE ASSYRIANS, BECAUSE YOU WERE INSATIABLE;
INDEED YOU PLAYED THE HARLOT WITH THEM AND STILL WERE NOT SATISFIED.
MOREOVER YOU MULTIPLIED YOUR ACTS OF HARLOTRY... AND EVEN THEN YOU WERE NOT SATISFIED.**

**‘HOW DEGENERATE IS YOUR HEART!’ SAYS THE LORD GOD,
‘SEEING YOU DO ALL THESE THINGS, THE DEEDS OF A BRAZEN HARLOT.’ ”**

excerpts Ezek. 16:15-30

“...NOW THE BODY IS NOT FOR SEXUAL IMMORALITY BUT FOR THE LORD, AND THE LORD FOR THE BODY...DO YOU NOT KNOW THAT YOUR BODIES ARE MEMBERS OF CHRIST? SHALL I THEN TAKE THE MEMBERS OF CHRIST AND MAKE THEM MEMBERS OF A HARLOT? CERTAINLY NOT! OR DO YOU NOT KNOW THAT HE WHO IS JOINED TO A HARLOT IS ONE BODY WITH HER? FOR ‘THE TWO,’ HE SAYS, ‘SHALL BECOME ONE FLESH.’ BUT HE WHO IS JOINED TO THE LORD IS ONE SPIRIT WITH HIM.



FLEE SEXUAL IMMORALITY. EVERY SIN THAT A MAN DOES IS OUTSIDE THE BODY, BUT HE WHO COMMITS SEXUAL IMMORALITY SINS AGAINST HIS OWN BODY. OR DO YOU NOT KNOW THAT YOUR BODY IS THE TEMPLE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT WHO IS IN YOU, WHOM YOU HAVE FROM GOD, AND YOU ARE NOT YOUR OWN? FOR YOU WERE BOUGHT AT A PRICE; THEREFORE GLORIFY GOD IN YOUR BODY AND IN YOUR SPIRIT, WHICH ARE GOD'S (PROPERTY)."

1 Cor. 6:12-20

A careful contemplation of Paul's words above, spoken to born-again believers in the New Covenant (church of Corinth), will give great understanding of our examples from the Old Covenant on the opposite page. God's people, the children of Israel, were labeled in God's sight as guilty of harlotry. This is an archaic term today, but the Hebrew word "Zanah" meant that they were unfaithful to God and given to idols. Read carefully the accounts on the opposite page and you will see the interlacing of harlotry with idolatry. They ate and bowed down to their gods and participated in the sacrifices of their gods. These acts of pagan idolatry were joined together with acts of harlotry (sexual immorality) in which Israel committed physical sexual immorality with the pagan, idolatrous women of Moab and were thereby joined to Baal (the chief-pagan god of the people of Moab).

Soberly, consider Paul's warning about sexual immorality as stated above. God's people cannot tritely flirt with sexual immorality as does the rest of the world who does not know God! If a born-again believer commits sexual immorality, he/she sins against his/her own body. No big deal? Sin is sin-all sin is alike? Hardly! Your body is now the temple of God, the holy habitation of the Holy Spirit. God bought us with a great price-the sacrifice of His own Son! Neither harlotry or idolatry are light sins in God's sight. Paul makes this distinction pertaining to such sin:

**"EVERY SIN THAT A MAN DOES IS OUTSIDE THE BODY,
BUT HE WHO COMMITS SEXUAL IMMORALITY SINS AGAINST HIS OWN BODY."**

1 Cor. 6:18

THE LUST OF THE EYES

**“NOW THESE THINGS BECAME OUR EXAMPLES,
TO THE INTENT THAT WE SHOULD NOT LUST AFTER EVIL THINGS AS THEY ALSO LUSTED.**

**...AND DO NOT BECOME IDOLATERS AS WERE SOME OF THEM. AS IT IS WRITTEN,
"THE PEOPLE SAT DOWN TO EAT AND DRINK, AND ROSE UP TO PLAY." 1 Cor. 10:6-7**

**“NOW WHEN THE PEOPLE SAW THAT MOSES DELAYED COMING DOWN FROM THE MOUNTAIN,
THE PEOPLE GATHERED TOGETHER TO AARON, AND SAID TO HIM,
'COME, MAKE US GODS THAT SHALL GO BEFORE US...'**

**AND AARON SAID TO THEM, 'BREAK OFF THE GOLDEN EARRINGS WHICH ARE IN THE EARS OF YOUR WIVES,
YOUR SONS, AND YOUR DAUGHTERS, AND BRING THEM TO ME.' SO ALL THE PEOPLE BROKE OFF
THE GOLDEN EARRINGS WHICH WERE IN THEIR EARS, AND BROUGHT THEM TO AARON.
AND HE RECEIVED THE GOLD FROM THEIR HAND, AND HE FASHIONED IT WITH AN ENGRAVING TOOL,
AND MADE A MOLDED CALF.**

**THEN THEY SAID, 'THIS IS YOUR GOD, O ISRAEL, THAT BROUGHT YOU OUT OF THE LAND OF EGYPT!'
SO WHEN AARON SAW IT, HE BUILT AN ALTAR BEFORE IT.**

**AND AARON MADE A PROCLAMATION AND SAID, 'TOMORROW IS A FEAST TO THE LORD.'
THEN THEY ROSE EARLY ON THE NEXT DAY, OFFERED BURNT OFFERINGS, AND BROUGHT PEACE OFFERINGS;
AND THE PEOPLE SAT DOWN TO EAT AND DRINK, AND ROSE UP TO PLAY.
AND THE LORD SAID TO MOSES, 'GO, GET DOWN! FOR YOUR PEOPLE WHOM YOU BROUGHT OUT OF THE LAND
OF EGYPT HAVE CORRUPTED THEMSELVES. THEY HAVE TURNED ASIDE QUICKLY OUT OF THE WAY WHICH I
COMMANDED THEM. THEY HAVE MADE THEMSELVES A MOLDED CALF, AND WORSHIPED IT AND SACRIFICED TO
IT, AND SAID, 'THIS IS YOUR GOD, O ISRAEL, THAT BROUGHT YOU OUT OF THE LAND OF EGYPT!'
AND THE LORD SAID TO MOSES, 'I HAVE SEEN THIS PEOPLE, AND INDEED IT IS A STIFF-NECKED PEOPLE!' ”**

Ex. 32:1-9

**“...EACH OF YOU, THROW AWAY THE ABOMINATIONS WHICH ARE BEFORE HIS EYES,
AND DO NOT DEFILE YOURSELVES WITH THE IDOLS OF EGYPT. I AM THE LORD YOUR GOD.
BUT THEY REBELLED AGAINST ME AND WOULD NOT OBEY ME.
THEY DID NOT ALL CAST AWAY THE ABOMINATIONS WHICH WERE BEFORE THEIR EYES,
NOR DID THEY FORSAKE THE IDOLS OF EGYPT.”**

Ezek. 20:7-8

We move now from the lust of the flesh to the lust of the eyes. The eye-gate is a great source of temptation as it is a visually-based stimulus that is primed to be turned on instantaneously by what appears before our eyes. Satan used it in a visionary way against Jesus in showing Him all the kingdoms of the earth and their glory. (Matt. 4:8).

The passage on the opposite page from Ezekiel 20 stresses the power of the eye-gate that continued to ensnare the children of Israel with the abominations which are before their eyes namely, the idols of Egypt. In willfully keeping those idols before their eyes, Satan was able to keep the people of God in bondage to whatever they focused their eyes upon. Remember Eve? She saw that the forbidden fruit was pleasant to the eyes.

Paul, in his example of the children of Israel in the wilderness, uses the illustration of how they were enticed to become idolaters, “the people sat down to eat and drink and rose up to play.” That sounds harmless enough until you read what encompassed this frivolity and lightness of heart. The children of Israel were a people who preferred to walk by sight and not by faith. As soon as Moses was out of sight, they enticed Aaron the High Priest to make for them a more tangible god that they could see with their eyes, “...‘Come, make us gods that shall go before us...” Aaron is unbelievably cooperative in helping fulfill the people’s carnal desire. From the decorative gold collected from the people, he carved out the image of the golden calf and told the people:

“...THIS IS YOUR GOD, O ISRAEL, THAT BROUGHT YOU OUT OF THE LAND OF EGYPT!”

Not content with that religious and sanctimonious declaration, Aaron ordained a special feast day that would be dedicated “to the Lord” in which they could worship and sacrifice offerings to their new visible image of god, the golden calf. Part of the message we need to learn from our examples in this story is that the people were only part of the problem. Aaron the High Priest was an enabler to their whims. I doubt if they could have talked Moses into fulfilling this same scenario. Aaron was a weak link in leadership that enabled the people to easily become idolaters. Prophetically, we find this weakness in leadership singled out by Jesus in the church at Thyatira:

**“...YOU ALLOW THAT WOMAN JEZEBEL, WHO CALLS HERSELF A PROPHETESS,
TO TEACH AND BEGUILE MY SERVANTS TO COMMIT SEXUAL IMMORALITY AND TO EAT THINGS SACRIFICED TO IDOLS.”**

Rev. 2:20

Make a careful comparison. Aaron sanctified the worship and sacrifice to an idol he heartily set before the people.

THE PRIDE OF LIFE

**“NOW THESE THINGS BECAME OUR EXAMPLES,
TO THE INTENT THAT WE SHOULD NOT LUST AFTER EVIL THINGS AS THEY ALSO LUSTED...**

**...NOR LET US TEMPT CHRIST,
AS SOME OF THEM ALSO TEMPTED, AND WERE DESTROYED BY SERPENTS;
NOR MURMUR, AS SOME OF THEM ALSO MURMURED,
AND WERE DESTROYED BY THE DESTROYER. ” 1 Cor. 10:9-10**

**“...THE SOUL OF THE PEOPLE BECAME VERY DISCOURAGED ON THE WAY.
AND THE PEOPLE SPOKE AGAINST GOD AND AGAINST MOSES:
‘WHY HAVE YOU BROUGHT US UP OUT OF EGYPT TO DIE IN THE WILDERNESS?
FOR THERE IS NO FOOD AND NO WATER, AND OUR SOUL LOATHES THIS WORTHLESS BREAD.’
SO THE LORD SENT FIERY SERPENTS AMONG THE PEOPLE, AND THEY BIT THE PEOPLE;
AND MANY OF THE PEOPLE OF ISRAEL DIED. THEREFORE THE PEOPLE CAME TO MOSES, AND SAID,
‘WE HAVE SINNED, FOR WE HAVE SPOKEN AGAINST THE LORD AND AGAINST YOU;
PRAY TO THE LORD THAT HE TAKE AWAY THE SERPENTS FROM US.’ SO MOSES PRAYED FOR THE PEOPLE.”**
Num. 21:4-7

**“THEN MIRIAM AND AARON SPOKE AGAINST MOSES... SO THEY SAID,
‘HAS THE LORD INDEED SPOKEN ONLY THROUGH MOSES? HAS HE NOT SPOKEN THROUGH US ALSO?’
AND THE LORD HEARD IT.
(NOW THE MAN MOSES WAS VERY HUMBLE, MORE THAN ALL MEN WHO WERE ON THE FACE OF THE EARTH.)**
Num. 12:1-3

**“NOW KORAH ...TOOK MEN; AND THEY ROSE UP BEFORE MOSES WITH SOME OF THE CHILDREN OF ISRAEL,
TWO HUNDRED AND FIFTY LEADERS OF THE CONGREGATION, REPRESENTATIVES OF THE CONGREGATION,
MEN OF RENOWN. THEY GATHERED TOGETHER AGAINST MOSES AND AARON,
AND SAID TO THEM,
‘YOU TAKE TOO MUCH UPON YOURSELVES, FOR ALL THE CONGREGATION IS HOLY, EVERY ONE OF THEM,
AND THE LORD IS AMONG THEM. WHY THEN DO YOU EXALT YOURSELVES ABOVE THE ASSEMBLY OF THE LORD?’ ”**
Num. 16:1-3



**“FOR I SAY...TO EVERYONE WHO IS AMONG YOU,
NOT TO THINK OF HIMSELF MORE HIGHLY THAN HE OUGHT TO THINK...
DO NOT SET YOUR MIND ON HIGH THINGS,
BUT ASSOCIATE WITH THE HUMBLE.
DO NOT BE WISE IN YOUR OWN OPINION.”**

Rom. 12:3-16

On the opposite page are three (of numerous) accounts of God's people yielding to Satan's sin to which he himself fell, the pride of life. In light of such accounts as depicted from the book of Numbers set before us as being our examples, Paul counsels believers, like you and me, to beware of this serious stumbling block, the sin of pride. Humility is the antidote to this poisonous sin. Moses is singled out as being very humble, more than all men on the face of the earth. Above, Paul counsels believers to associate with the humble. He gives warning about the need to avoid setting your mind on high things, and against being found wise in your own opinion. All the examples such as those stated here in Numbers tell the story of a people who continually exalted themselves with lofty ideas of their own importance:

**“...‘HAS THE LORD INDEED SPOKEN ONLY THROUGH MOSES?
HAS HE NOT SPOKEN THROUGH US ALSO?’ Num. 12:2**

**‘YOU TAKE TOO MUCH UPON YOURSELVES, FOR ALL THE CONGREGATION IS HOLY, EVERY ONE OF THEM,
AND THE LORD IS AMONG THEM. WHY THEN DO YOU EXALT YOURSELVES ABOVE THE ASSEMBLY OF THE LORD?’ ”**

Num. 16:3

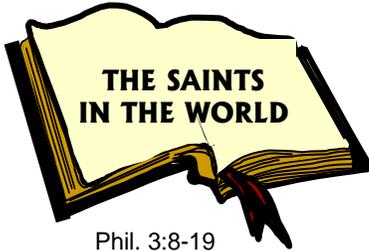
There is a force at work behind all such prideful rebellion. The book of Job presents this power as the mysterious great beast Leviathan, but we can see that it is Satan himself, the king of pride:

**“IN EARTH THERE IS NOTHING LIKE HIM...HE BEHOLDS EVERY HIGH THING;
HE IS KING OVER ALL THE CHILDREN OF PRIDE.” Job 41:33-34**

It is by yielding to the temptation of the pride of life that Satan becomes king over the people. He rules over them through their prideful admiration of themselves. However, this is always how the story ends:

**“PRIDE GOES BEFORE DESTRUCTION, AND A HAUGHTY SPIRIT BEFORE A FALL.
BETTER TO BE OF A HUMBLE SPIRIT WITH THE LOWLY, THAN TO DIVIDE THE SPOIL WITH THE PROUD.”**

Prov. 16:18-19



Phil. 3:8-19

3 THE PRIDE OF LIFE

"ALL
THAT IS
IN THE WORLD"

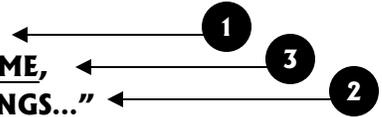
1 THE LUST OF THE FLESH

2 THE LUST OF THE EYES



**"BRETHREN,
JOIN IN FOLLOWING
MY EXAMPLE,
AND NOTE THOSE WHO SO WALK,
AS YOU HAVE US FOR A PATTERN.
FOR MANY WALK, OF WHOM I HAVE TOLD YOU OFTEN,
AND NOW TELL YOU EVEN WEeping,
THAT THEY ARE THE ENEMIES OF THE CROSS OF CHRIST:
WHOSE END IS DESTRUCTION,
WHOSE GOD IS THEIR BELLY,
AND WHOSE GLORY IS IN THEIR SHAME,
WHO SET THEIR MIND ON EARTHLY THINGS..."**

Phil. 3:17-20



Having set before the believer Paul's life-long goals as a follower of Christ (Phil. 3:7-14), he now makes a painful contrast of how a multitude of God's people are presently walking as Christians. They have three distinguishing marks. They are the same three we have been looking at in Adam and Eve, and in the majority of the children of Israel during their forty-year wilderness journey. They are the same three marks the apostle John warns all believers to beware of in this present world that are not of the Father, the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes and the pride of life. Let us consider Paul's stated examples:

“WHOSE GOD IS THEIR BELLY”(THE LUST OF THE FLESH):

The first thing Paul singles out are believers who have a reputation that their God is their belly.

The Amplified Bible states that their God is their stomach, their appetites, their sensuality.

That is a rather blunt expression of what we have seen so far as a manifestation of the lust of the flesh, is it not?

Consider Paul's personal determination in this area:

“ALL THINGS ARE LAWFUL FOR ME, BUT ALL THINGS ARE NOT HELPFUL. ALL THINGS ARE LAWFUL FOR ME, BUT I WILL NOT BE BROUGHT UNDER THE POWER OF ANY. FOODS FOR THE STOMACH AND THE STOMACH FOR FOODS, BUT GOD WILL DESTROY BOTH IT AND THEM.”

1 Cor. 6:12-13

We only need to go over just three more chapters in this epistle, and Paul again stresses the personal discipline needful over the demands of our own physical body:

“...BUT I DISCIPLINE MY BODY AND BRING IT INTO SUBJECTION, LEST, WHEN I HAVE PREACHED TO OTHERS, I MYSELF SHOULD BECOME DISQUALIFIED.” 1 Cor. 9:24-27

In his epistle to the Hebrews, Paul reminds the saints of the terrible cost of the uncontrolled appetite of Esau:

“...LEST THERE BE ANY FORNicator OR PROFANE PERSON LIKE ESAU, WHO FOR ONE MORSEL OF FOOD SOLD HIS BIRTHRIGHT. FOR YOU KNOW THAT AFTERWARD, WHEN HE WANTED TO INHERIT THE BLESSING, HE WAS REJECTED...THOUGH HE SOUGHT IT DILIGENTLY WITH TEARS.” Heb. 12:16-17

Paul's second example singles out about how many were walking as Christians is stated briefly as:

“WHOSE GLORY IS IN THEIR SHAME” (THE PRIDE OF LIFE):

I believe in this statement we can deduce that Paul is addressing what John identifies as the pride of life. No question that he speaks of the lust of the flesh in saying whose God is their belly, and equally true does he speak of the lust of the eyes in stating God's people have set their mind on earthly things (as we shall see). However, this statement, “whose glory is in their shame”, must therefore refer to the missing aspect, the pride of life.

Since it is an all-too-brief statement in which Paul does not amplify or clarify its intended meaning, we can only go to other places where Paul used these phrases to shed light on it. Here in First Corinthians Paul uses both the words “glory” and “shame” in a manner that will clarify “whose glory is in their shame” to be the pride of life.

“FOR YOU SEE YOUR CALLING, BRETHREN, THAT NOT MANY WISE ACCORDING TO THE FLESH, NOT MANY MIGHTY, NOT MANY NOBLE, ARE CALLED. BUT GOD HAS CHOSEN THE FOOLISH THINGS OF THE WORLD TO PUT TO SHAME THE WISE, AND GOD HAS CHOSEN THE WEAK THINGS OF THE WORLD TO PUT TO SHAME THE THINGS WHICH ARE MIGHTY;... THAT NO FLESH SHOULD GLORY IN HIS PRESENCE... AS IT IS WRITTEN, “HE WHO GLORIES, LET HIM GLORY IN THE LORD.”

1 Cor. 1:26-31

Paul states that God does not call many who are mighty, wise, or noble as measured by the abilities of the flesh (human effort). The moral to the story is that no flesh should glory in His presence. If you must glory at all, then glory in the Lord. In Philippians Paul is demeaning those brethren as a people whose glory is in their shame. He is simply saying that they are glorying in things they ought to be ashamed of, things that are self-exalting, self-glorying in God's sight, things based on the fleshly pride of achievement, namely, yielding to the pride of life.

As further support for this interpretation, we find Paul again picking up this theme against self-glorying:

“...BUT ‘HE WHO GLORIES, LET HIM GLORY IN THE LORD.’ FOR NOT HE WHO COMMENDS HIMSELF IS APPROVED, BUT WHOM THE LORD COMMENDS.”

2 Cor. 10:17-18

The third area Paul identifies many Christians as being amiss in how they walk as followers of Christ is this malady:

“WHO SET THEIR MINDS ON EARTHLY THINGS” (THE LUST OF THE EYES):

As we found to be previously in Paul's brief exhortation to believers in Philippians, —————→
this last statement:

(“who set their minds on earthly things”) is also all too brief and lacking any elaboration. However, do not dismiss the gravity of Paul's charge in Philippians just because of his brevity of words.

Let us inject a more detailed exhortation from another of Paul's epistles, the epistle to the Colossians. —————→

In doing so, we can grasp the seriousness of these brief charges Paul uses to describe how believers were walking outside the will of God.

To see the continuity of thought expressed by the apostle Paul, I suggest you read these two passages (Philippians 3 and Colossians 3) together as if they were one single expression of thought from Paul to you the believer:

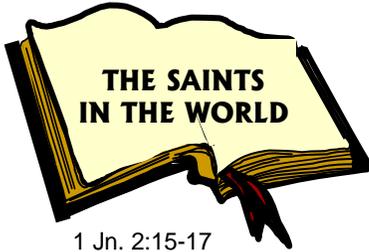
“... MANY WALK, OF WHOM I HAVE TOLD YOU OFTEN, AND NOW TELL YOU EVEN WEeping, THAT THEY ARE THE ENEMIES OF THE CROSS OF CHRIST: WHOSE END IS DESTRUCTION, WHOSE GOD IS THEIR BELLY, AND WHOSE GLORY IS IN THEIR SHAME, WHO SET THEIR MIND ON EARTHLY THINGS. FOR OUR CITIZENSHIP IS IN HEAVEN...”

Phil. 3:17-20

“IF THEN YOU WERE RAISED WITH CHRIST, SEEK THOSE THINGS WHICH ARE ABOVE, WHERE CHRIST IS, SITTING AT THE RIGHT HAND OF GOD. SET YOUR MIND ON THINGS ABOVE, NOT ON THINGS ON THE EARTH. FOR YOU DIED, AND YOUR LIFE IS HIDDEN WITH CHRIST IN GOD. WHEN CHRIST WHO IS OUR LIFE APPEARS, THEN YOU ALSO WILL APPEAR WITH HIM IN GLORY. THEREFORE PUT TO DEATH YOUR MEMBERS WHICH ARE ON THE EARTH: FORNICATION, UNCLEANNESS, PASSION, EVIL DESIRE, AND COVETOUSNESS, WHICH IS IDOLATRY. BECAUSE OF THESE THINGS THE WRATH OF GOD IS COMING UPON THE SONS OF DISOBEDIENCE, IN WHICH YOU YOURSELVES ONCE WALKED WHEN YOU LIVED IN THEM.”

Col. 3:1-7

Now you can see what Paul was warning about in Philippians 3. Those who set their minds on earthly things are succumbing to the lust of the eyes, specifically, as revealed in Colossians 3 as covetousness which is idolatry.



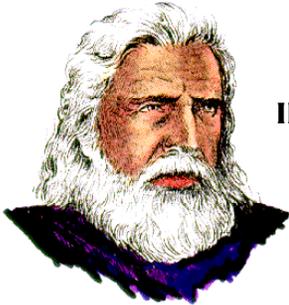
1 Jn. 2:15-17

3 THE PRIDE OF LIFE

"ALL
THAT IS
IN THE WORLD"

1 THE LUST OF THE FLESH

2 THE LUST OF THE EYES



**"DO NOT LOVE THE WORLD OR THE THINGS IN THE WORLD.
IF ANYONE LOVES THE WORLD, THE LOVE OF THE FATHER IS NOT IN HIM.**

FOR ALL THAT IS IN THE WORLD --

THE LUST OF THE FLESH,

THE LUST OF THE EYES,

AND THE PRIDE OF LIFE --

IS NOT OF THE FATHER BUT IS OF THE WORLD.

**AND THE WORLD IS PASSING AWAY, AND THE LUST OF IT;
BUT HE WHO DOES THE WILL OF GOD ABIDES FOREVER."**

1 John 2:15-17



**“NOW
ALL THESE THINGS
HAPPENED TO THEM
AS EXAMPLES,**

**AND
THEY WERE WRITTEN
FOR OUR ADMONITION,
ON WHOM
THE END OF THE AGES
HAVE COME.**

**THEREFORE
LET HIM WHO
THINKS HE STANDS
TAKE HEED LEST HE FALL.
NO TEMPTATION
HAS OVERTAKEN YOU
EXCEPT SUCH AS IS
COMMON TO MAN...”**

1 Cor. 10:11-13



The apostle John is the last in line to set before God’s people this repetitious triangle of evil that the scriptures state as all that is in the world. Does it exist in our world, right here in America? Are these three warnings of John applicable to modern-day saints living in America?

Can we, as followers of Christ, look at what takes place in our world (America) and see vivid manifestations of the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life?

You might not like why my answer is a resounding “Yes!” These things will be abundant **ESPECIALLY** in America because this country is special to Satan as:

**“MYSTERY,
BABYLON THE GREAT,
THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS
AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.”**

Rev. 17:5



THE LUST OF
THE FLESH...

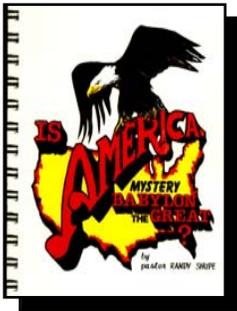
THE LUST OF
THE EYES...

THE PRIDE
OF LIFE...



“...‘BABYLON THE GREAT...
HAS BECOME A HABITATION OF DEMONS,
A PRISON FOR EVERY FOUL SPIRIT,
AND A CAGE FOR
EVERY UNCLEAN AND HATED BIRD!
FOR ALL THE NATIONS HAVE DRUNK OF THE
WINE OF THE WRATH OF HER FORNICATION,
THE KINGS OF THE EARTH HAVE
COMMITTED FORNICATION WITH HER,
AND THE MERCHANTS OF THE EARTH
HAVE BECOME RICH THROUGH
THE ABUNDANCE OF HER LUXURY...’
AND
I HEARD ANOTHER LOUD VOICE
FROM HEAVEN SAYING,
‘COME OUT OF HER MY PEOPLE,
LEST YOU SHARE IN HER SINS...’ ”

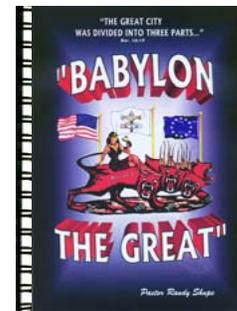
Rev. 18:2-4



Where on earth is a nation other than America, that bears the description as presented in these prophetic verses from Revelation? I have written two books to demonstrate that no other nation on earth fits the end-time description of **Babylon the Great** than America.

Look carefully at the above passages from Revelation and then look carefully at the pages of your newspapers. America alone causes the whole world to prosper due to the abundance of her luxury. Notice the reference to “fornication” in these passages. This is how God sees her interaction with other nations. Most importantly, note that Babylon is center-stage.

The whole world revolves around her!



THE LUST OF THE FLESH... THE LUST OF THE EYES... THE PRIDE OF LIFE...



“...SHE GLORIFIED HERSELF AND LIVED LUXURIOUSLY... FOR SHE SAYS IN HER HEART, ‘I SIT AS QUEEN...AND WILL SEE NO SORROW...’ AND THE KINGS OF THE EARTH WHO COMMITTED FORNICATION AND LIVED LUXURIOUSLY WITH HER...AND THE MERCHANTS OF THE EARTH WILL WEEP AND MOURN OVER HER, FOR NO ONE BUYS THEIR MERCHANDISE ANYMORE. MERCHANDISE OF GOLD AND SILVER,PRECIOUS STONES AND PEARLS, FINE LINEN...SILK...EVERY KIND OF OBJECT OF IVORY, ...MOST PRECIOUS WOOD, BRONZE, IRON AND MARBLE;...FRAGRANT OIL...FINE FLOUR, WHEAT, CATTLE AND SHEEP, HORSES... AND BODIES AND SOULS OF MEN... AND EVERY SHIPMASTER, AND ALL WHO TRAVEL BY SHIP...ALL WHO HAD SHIPS ON THE SEA BECAME RICH BY HER WEALTH...” Rev. 18:7-19 excerpts

Go through this list of merchandise that Babylon is buying from all over the world. Most are luxurious niceties not basic necessities of life. Note too, that the merchants of the earth get to Babylon by means of the sea. Part of Babylon’s identity is this mark that it is surrounded with a multitude of available seaports for the merchants of the earth. Is there any doubt that China is rising to be the manufacturer for all the goods that America no longer produces? Is it not a fact that India is now the recipient of mass-manpower outsourcing for America? However, one mark in the list above stands out. Like the Roman Empire before it, America, the Roman Empire’s copycat protégé, is marked as a nation that traffics in the bodies and souls of men. Historically that refers to this nation, like Rome, being built on slavery. However, a new pattern of trafficking in the souls of men has emerged:

“... 21 million men, women, and children are trafficked globally, and the United States is not exempt. Whether it is girls forced into domestic labor or the sex trade, with the Super Bowl being the single, largest sex trafficking site in the United States, this nation has a long history of what Polaris calls “modern day slavery.”

(Polaris Research)

**THE LUST OF
THE FLESH...**

**THE LUST OF
THE EYES...**

**THE PRIDE
OF LIFE...**

**THE
GREAT
LAKES**

**P
A
C
I
F
I
C**



**A
T
L
A
N
T
I
C**

**“...BABYLON WAS A GOLDEN CUP
IN THE LORD’S HAND,
THAT MADE ALL THE EARTH DRUNK.
THE NATIONS DRANK OF HER WINE;
THEREFORE THE NATIONS ARE DERANGED...”**

**O YOU WHO DWELL BY MANY WATERS,
ABUNDANT IN TREASURES,
YOUR END HAS COME,
THE MEASURE OF YOUR COVETOUSNESS...**

**THE SEA
HAS COME UP OVER BABYLON,
SHE IS COVERED WITH
THE MULTITUDE OF ITS WAVES...
AND
THE NATIONS
WILL NOT STREAM TO HIM ANYMORE...”**

Jer. 51:7-45 excerpts

The prophet Jeremiah hammers home this dual geographic and demographic picture of Babylon. It is a nation who dwells by many waters and is abundant in treasures, and is known for a great measure of covetousness. Her end will be by the sea coming up over Babylon as she dwells by many waters that will cover her with the multitude of its waves. What nation on earth besides America fits such a vivid description? Certainly this does not describe Babylon in Iraq which is virtually landlocked. Geographically, America certainly qualifies as a nation that dwells by many waters. We have the Atlantic Ocean along the entire East Coast and the Pacific Ocean along the entire West Coast. The Great Lakes are above it and and the Gulf below it to provide a multitude of waves that will be its destruction. Demographically, are not Americans well-known for being abundant in treasures? Has not the immense measure of covetousness in America been the driving force that has made all the earth drunk in trying to satisfy the ravenous appetite of its peoples for luxurious material goods?

THE LUST OF
THE FLESH...

THE LUST OF
THE EYES...

THE PRIDE
OF LIFE...



“...O VIRGIN DAUGHTER OF BABYLON;
SIT ON THE GROUND WITHOUT A THRONE...
FOR YOU SHALL NO LONGER BE CALLED
THE LADY OF KINGDOMS...

YOU HAVE SAID,
‘I SHALL BE A LADY FOREVER...’
THEREFORE HEAR THIS NOW,
YOU WHO ARE GIVEN TO PLEASURES,
WHO DWELL SECURELY,
WHO SAY IN YOUR HEART,

‘I AM,
AND THERE IS NO ONE ELSE BESIDES ME...
FOR YOU HAVE TRUSTED IN YOUR
WICKEDNESS; YOU HAVE SAID,
‘NO ONE SEES ME’;
YOUR WISDOM AND YOUR KNOWLEDGE
HAVE WARPED YOU;
AND YOU HAVE SAID IN YOUR HEART,
‘I AM, AND THERE IS
NO ONE ELSE BESIDES ME...’

Isa. 47:1-10 excerpts

Notice Isaiah’s prophetic reference to Babylon’s self-imposed title “The Lady” of kingdoms, and I shall be “a lady” forever. Are you aware that the Roman-clad Statue of Liberty that sits in the entrance to New York harbor is fondly called, “The Lady”? As to the pride of life, note Babylon’s self-exalted position, “I am, and there is no one else besides me” (twice repeated). Notice also she dwells securely as a result of being alone on the top of the heap of nations. America is the only remaining superpower in the world, and holds an active and aggressive governmental position to remain so. What else marks “the Lady”? She is given to pleasures (Hedonism-the pursuit of pleasure and avoidance of pain). Babylon is known for her wisdom and knowledge. The magnitude of America’s high-tech knowledge is the very thing that has warped her thinking about her self-importance above all others. Then there is this prophetic identification of the Lady of kingdoms, secretly, behind the scenes, she practices wickedness and takes comfort in the fact that no one sees her do so. No one that is, but God Almighty!

THE PRIDE OF LIFE:

(“LIFE, Liberty and the pursuit of happiness”)

“A SELF-LOVE, SELF-ABSORBED LIFE. “IT’S ALL ABOUT ME” PHILOSOPHY...
THE OBSSIVE NEED TO ALWAYS BE CENTER-STAGE...
DRIVEN BY RECOGNITION AND SUCCESS... ELITISM, SUPERIORITY, DOMINANCE...
THE OBSSIVE NEED TO BE ADMIRER, ENVIED, RESPECTED, LOOKED UP TO BY OTHERS”

(In ancient Rome-Roman citizenship. In modern day “Rome”-American citizenship)

“I KNOW
WHERE
YOU DWELL,



WHERE
SATAN'S
THRONE IS.”

Rev. 2:13

LUST OF THE FLESH:

(“Life, LIBERTY and the pursuit of happiness”)

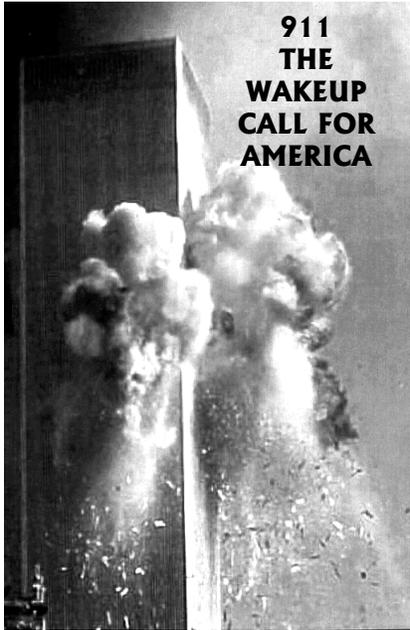
“PASSIONATE CRAVING FOR
UNHEALTHY APPETITES THAT ARE SELF-GRATIFYING
AND SELF-INDULGENT . OBSESSED WITH EXCESSIVE
ATTENTION TO PERSONAL PLEASURES.

EXCESSIVE SEXUAL APPETITES,
OR FOR OVER-INDULGENCE IN PLEASANT FOODS.”

LUST OF THE EYES:

(“Life, Liberty and the pursuit of HAPPINESS”)

“TO BE GREATLY IMPACTED AND PASSIONATELY
DRIVEN BY WHAT IS SET BEFORE THE EYES,
POTENTIAL POSSESSIONS, PLEASURES OF LIFE.
THE INALIENABLE RIGHT TO FOLLOW AFTER
THE PURSUIT OF HAPPINESS”.



**911
THE
WAKEUP
CALL FOR
AMERICA**

Compared to the rest of the world, it is a fact that, (at least for the present), American Christians live in the safest and most secure nation on the earth simply because it is the only remaining superpower on the earth.

The horrific sudden events of 911 became a catalyst to awaken a sleeping giant. That element of physical safety we now enjoy is the result of the immense might and power of Mystery Babylon to defend its borders and its citizens. For such physical security even we Christians benefit greatly since most of the world goes to bed (if they have one) in uncertain fear of an unsafe and unstable world all around them.

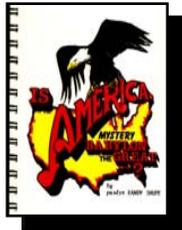
However, we must also come to see that we, American Christians, live in the midst of the most dangerous spiritual surroundings on earth as we are the people inundated with the greatest bombardment of Satan's use of the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes and the pride of life. These things are most prevalent in this country simply because they are the central ingredients that comprise what Satan is building as his kingdom on earth that will reign supreme under the direction of his soon-coming man of sin, the Antichrist. It is sobering to realize that if America is indeed Mystery Babylon, then the Presidency of the United States will produce this final Roman Caesar.

For the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life to thrive, it requires a very abundant and prosperous nation to sustain this trio of sin. Much of the world lives in an extremely meager and bare state of existence. You cannot successfully promote passionate cravings of lust over what is non-existent or not capable of being set before the eyes day in and day out. It is the abundant availability of these sinful temptations that Satan uses to enslave the inhabitants of a prosperous nation like America. It is my conviction that we, Christians in America, of all people in the world, must become the most vigilant and watchful of what spiritual dangers surround us on all sides. If we are not careful, such abundant prosperity tends to be a slippery slope.

It is most significant to me that at the time Revelation was written, the city of Pergamos was singled out by Jesus as a place of special danger for God's people. Jesus tells them, "I know where you dwell, where Satan's throne is" (Rev. 2:13). It is my firm conviction that Satan has since moved his throne to a more strategic place on earth as this mysterious prophetic passage from the prophet Zechariah depicts a new location is to be built for the center of wickedness on the earth:

**"...LIFT YOUR EYES NOW, AND SEE WHAT THIS IS THAT GOES FORTH...
IT IS A BASKET THAT IS GOING FORTH...THIS IS THEIR RESEMBLANCE THROUGHOUT THE EARTH:
AND THIS IS A WOMAN SITTING INSIDE THE BASKET; THEN HE SAID,
'THIS IS WICKEDNESS!'
'WHERE ARE THEY CARRYING THE BASKET?'...
TO BUILD A HOUSE FOR IT IN THE LAND OF SHINAR; ("BABYLON")
WHEN IT IS READY, THE BASKET (of wickedness) WILL BE SET THERE ON ITS BASE."
Zech. 5:5-6:11**

Wickedness is going to have a specific house built for it. It will be in the land of Shinar (Lit."Babylon"). When it is ready, wickedness will be set on its base. I am convinced that this prophecy speaks of the foundation of Mystery Babylon being laid in America. As stated earlier, the foundation of this country was patterned after the ancient Roman Empire rather than its design being inspired by the God of the Bible. The evidence is overwhelming. It is indeed, One Nation Under God, but it is the god of this world, Satan himself. Satan's throne of wickedness is now in Washington D.C. Thus the title depicts wickedness stemming out of a central place unto the ends of the earth:

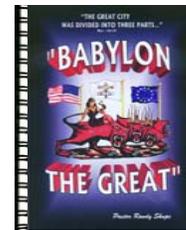


**"MYSTERY,
BABYLON THE GREAT,
THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS
AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH."**

Rev. 17:5

As a Christian living in this country, you owe it to yourself to consider the weight of evidence that this is the base from which wickedness will spread to the ends of the earth prior to the return of Jesus Christ to establish His own Kingdom.

Yes, we presently have physical safety from terrorism from outside sources, but we Christians are spiritually in the midst of much danger from what Satan will orchestrate from within America's own borders.



God's people are not called to move physically to a safer haven somewhere in the world.
Rather they are called to separate themselves from the contaminating powers that are at work.

**"I HEARD ANOTHER
LOUD VOICE FROM HEAVEN
SAYING,
'COME OUT OF HER
MY PEOPLE,
LEST YOU
SHARE
IN HER SINS...' "**

Rev. 18:4



**"...‘COME OUT FROM AMONG THEM
AND BE SEPARATE’,
SAYS THE LORD.
‘DO NOT TOUCH WHAT IS UNCLEAN...
LET US CLEANSE OURSELVES FROM ALL
FILTHINESS OF THE FLESH AND SPIRIT,
PERFECTING HOLINESS
IN THE FEAR OF GOD.’"**

2 Cor. 6:17, 7:1

Get a firm grip on God's mandate to His people: We are not called to clean up what is unclean, but rather we are not to touch what is unclean. We are not to cleanse whatever filthiness we find at work in our midst, but rather to cleanse ourselves from that filthiness. In other words, as Christians, we must live in the very midst of its filthiness and yet remain untouched by it. Consider Paul's words in Phil. 2:15-14:

(The Amplified Bible's rendering of this verse is worthy of demonstrating a clear understanding of how God's people are to specifically conduct themselves in the midst of perversity all around them)

**"...THAT YOU MAY SHOW YOURSELVES TO BE BLAMELESS AND GUILTESS,
INNOCENT AND UNCONTAMINATED, CHILDREN OF GOD
WITHOUT BLEMISH, FAULTLESS, UNREBUKABLE,**

**IN THE MIDST OF A CROOKED AND WICKED GENERATION
SPIRITUALLY PERVERTED AND PERVERSE,**

**AMONG WHOM YOU ARE SEEN AS BRIGHT LIGHTS
(STARS OR BEACONS SHINING OUT CLEARLY) IN THE DARK WORLD,
HOLDING OUT TO IT AND OFFERING TO ALL MEN THE WORD OF LIFE..."**

Phil. 2:15-16 Amplified

THE CHRIST

"I WILL NOT TALK WITH YOU MUCH MORE, FOR THE PRINCE ("KOSMOKRATOR" EVIL GENIUS, RULER) OF THE WORLD IS COMING.

AND HE HAS NO CLAIM ON ME. HE HAS NOTHING IN COMMON WITH ME; THERE IS NOTHING IN ME THAT BELONGS TO HIM, AND HE HAS NO POWER OVER ME."

John 14:30 Amplified

THE CHRISTIAN

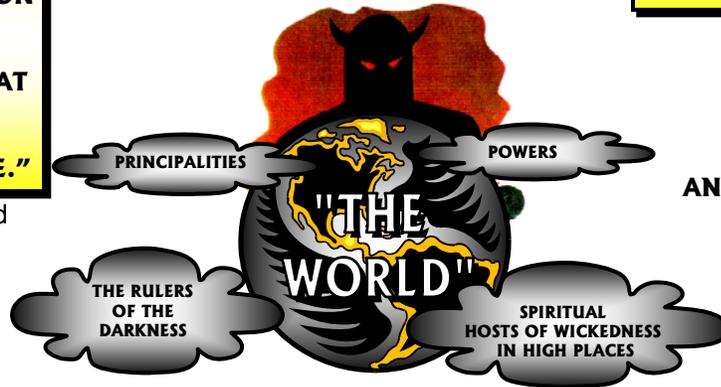
"...THAT YOU MAY SHOW YOURSELVES TO BE BLAMELESS AND GUILTESS, INNOCENT AND UNCONTAMINATED, CHILDREN OF GOD WITHOUT BLEMISH, FAULTLESS, UNREBUKABLE,

IN THE MIDST OF A CROOKED AND WICKED GENERATION SPIRITUALLY PERVERTED AND PERVERSE,

AMONG WHOM YOU ARE SEEN AS BRIGHT LIGHTS IN THE DARK WORLD, HOLDING OUT TO IT AND OFFERING TO ALL MEN THE WORD OF LIFE..."

Phil. 2:15-16 Amplified

IN THE MIDST OF THIS PRESENT DARKNESS:



Several years ago there was a popular phrase often used, “**WWJD**” (“What Would Jesus Do?”). The opposite page not only depicts what Jesus would do, but also what He expects every follower of Jesus to do, even if living in America the followers of Jesus should be on the same path that Jesus followed.

Consider how the apostle John makes this important point:

**“...THAT WE MAY HAVE
BOLDNESS IN THE DAY OF JUDGMENT;
BECAUSE AS HE IS, SO ARE WE IN THIS WORLD.”**

1 John 4:17

On the opposite page Jesus lays out His battle plan with the evil prince of this world:

**“I WILL NOT TALK WITH YOU MUCH MORE,
FOR THE PRINCE OF THE WORLD IS COMING.
AND HE HAS NO CLAIM ON ME.
HE HAS NOTHING IN COMMON WITH ME;
THERE IS NOTHING IN ME THAT BELONGS TO HIM,
AND HE HAS NO POWER OVER ME.”**

Don't you think that if Jesus lived right where you live (in America), that His previously-stated life of isolation and separation from all that belongs to Satan as the God of this world would still be His testimony? Then why is it not the testimony of all Christians who do live presently in America? Why does so much of Christianity in America act as if they are on a special mission from God to eradicate all the corruption and pollution that Satan is heaping upon this land? Isn't the solution still

“WWJD”?

**“HE WHO SAYS
HE ABIDES IN HIM OUGHT HIMSELF
ALSO TO WALK JUST AS HE WALKED.”**

1 Jn. 2:6

Jesus walked a delicate line while on earth in teaching submission to legal authority, even that of Caesar:

**“...‘IS IT LAWFUL TO PAY TAXES TO CAESAR, OR NOT?’
BUT JESUS PERCEIVED THEIR WICKEDNESS...
SHOW ME THE TAX MONEY.’...WHOSE IMAGE
AND INSCRIPTION IS THIS?’ ‘RENDER THEREFORE TO CAESAR
THE THINGS THAT ARE CAESAR’S, AND TO GOD THE
THINGS THAT ARE GOD’S.’”** Matt 22:15-22

The apostle Peter saw how his master handled that situation and repeats the principle of it as a mandate for all Christians to follow:

**“THEREFORE SUBMIT YOURSELVES TO EVERY ORDINANCE OF
MAN FOR THE LORD’S SAKE, WHETHER TO THE KING AS SUPREME,
OR TO GOVERNORS... FOR THIS IS THE WILL OF GOD, THAT BY
DOING GOOD YOU MAY PUT TO SILENCE THE IGNORANCE OF
FOOLISH MEN... HONOR ALL PEOPLE...HONOR THE KING.”**

1 Peter 2:13-17

Does that include the present President who is often cynically referred to as “king” Obama?

If Jesus were to meet President Obama today,

“WWJD”?

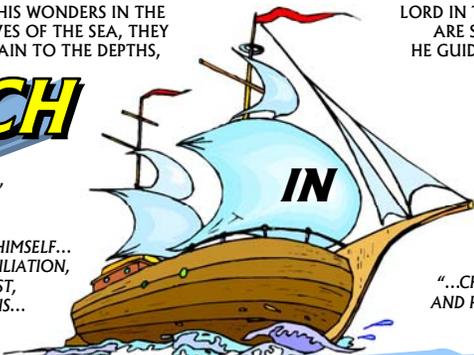
“THE SHIP IS TO BE IN THE SEA,

“THOSE WHO GO DOWN TO THE SEA IN SHIPS, WHO DO BUSINESS ON GREAT WATERS, THEY SEE THE WORKS OF THE LORD, AND HIS WONDERS IN THE DEEP... THE STORMY WIND WHICH LIFTS UP THE WAVES OF THE SEA, THEY MOUNT UP TO THE HEAVENS, THEY GO DOWN AGAIN TO THE DEPTHS,

THE CHURCH

“GO INTO ALL THE WORLD
AND PREACH THE GOSPEL TO EVERY CREATURE...”
Mark 16:15

“GOD WAS IN CHRIST RECONCILING THE WORLD TO HIMSELF...
AND HAS COMMITTED TO US THE WORD OF RECONCILIATION,
THEREFORE WE ARE AMBASSADORS FOR CHRIST,
AS THOUGH GOD WERE PLEADING THROUGH US...
BE RECONCILED TO GOD.” 2 Cor. 5:19-21



BUT NOT THE SEA IN THE SHIP”

THEIR SOUL MELTS BECAUSE OF TROUBLE...THEN THEY CRY OUT TO THE LORD IN THEIR TROUBLE, HE CALMS THE STORM, SO THAT ITS WAVES ARE STILL...AND HE BRINGS THEM OUT OF THEIR DISTRESSES... HE GUIDES THEM TO THEIR DESIRED HAVEN.” Psalm 107:23-30 excerpts

THE WORLD

“I DO NOT PRAY THAT YOU SHOULD TAKE THEM OUT OF THE WORLD, BUT THAT YOU SHOULD KEEP THEM FROM THE EVIL ONE. THEY ARE NOT OF THE WORLD, JUST AS I AM NOT OF THE WORLD...AS YOU SENT ME INTO THE WORLD, I ALSO HAVE SENT THEM INTO THE WORLD.”

John 17:15-18

“...CHILDREN OF GOD WITHOUT FAULT IN THE MIDST OF A CROOKED AND PERVERSE GENERATION, AMONG WHOM YOU SHINE AS LIGHTS IN THE WORLD, HOLDING FORTH THE WORD OF LIFE...”

Phil. 2:15-16

“THE WICKED ARE LIKE THE TROUBLED SEA...WHOSE WATERS CAST UP MIRE AND DIRT”

“DO NOT LOVE THE WORLD OR THE THINGS THAT ARE IN THE WORLD. IF ANYONE LOVES THE WORLD, THE LOVE OF THE FATHER IS NOT IN HIM. FOR ALL THAT IS IN THE WORLD—THE LUST OF THE FLESH, THE LUST OF THE EYES, AND THE PRIDE OF LIFE—IS NOT OF THE FATHER BUT IS OF THE WORLD. AND THE WORLD IS PASSING AWAY, AND THE LUST OF IT; BUT HE WHO DOES THE WILL OF GOD ABIDES FOREVER.”

1 John 2:14-16

“FOR THE GRACE OF GOD THAT BRINGS SALVATION HAS APPEARED TO ALL MEN, TEACHING US THAT, DENYING UNGODLINESS AND WORLDLY LUSTS, WE SHOULD LIVE SOBERLY, RIGHTEOUSLY AND GODLY IN THE PRESENT AGE...”

Titus 2:11-12

“ADULTERERS AND ADULTERESSES!
DO YOU NOT KNOW THAT FRIENDSHIP
WITH THE WORLD IS ENMITY WITH GOD?
WHOEVER THEREFORE WANTS TO BE
A FRIEND OF THE WORLD MAKES HIMSELF
AN ENEMY OF GOD.”

James 4:4

“WHAT ADVANTAGE IS IT TO A MAN
IF HE GAINS THE WHOLE WORLD,
AND IS HIMSELF DESTROYED OR LOST?”
Luke 9:25

“...THE LORD JESUS CHRIST,
WHO GAVE HIMSELF FOR OUR SINS,
THAT HE MIGHT DELIVER US
FROM THIS PRESENT EVIL WORLD...”

Gal. 1:4

“GOD FORBID THAT I SHOULD GLORY EXCEPT
IN THE CROSS OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST,
BY WHOM THE WORLD HAS BEEN CRUCIFIED
TO ME, AND I TO THE WORLD.”

Gal. 6:14

“...EXCEEDING GREAT AND PRECIOUS PROMISES,
THAT THROUGH THESE YOU MAY BE PARTAKERS OF THE
DIVINE NATURE, HAVING ESCAPED THE CORRUPTION
THAT IS IN THE WORLD THROUGH LUST.”

2 Peter 1:4

“DO NOT BE CONFORMED TO THIS WORLD,
BUT BE TRANSFORMED BY THE RENEWING OF YOUR MIND...”
Isa. 57:20
Rom. 12:2

“PURE AND UNDEFILED RELIGION BEFORE GOD IS THIS...
TO KEEP ONESELF UNSPOTTED FROM THE WORLD.”

James 1:27

“FOR IF, AFTER THEY HAVE ESCAPED THE POLLUTIONS OF THE WORLD THROUGH THE KNOWLEDGE OF THE LORD AND SAVIOR JESUS CHRIST, THEY ARE AGAIN ENTANGLED IN THEM AND OVERCOME, THE LATTER END IS WORSE FOR THEM THAN THE BEGINNING. FOR IT WOULD HAVE BEEN BETTER FOR THEM NOT TO HAVE KNOWN THE WAY OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, THAN HAVING KNOWN IT, TO TURN FROM THE HOLY COMMANDMENT DELIVERED TO THEM.”

2 Peter 2:20-21

“...THE WHOLE WORLD LIES UNDER THE SWAY OF THE WICKED ONE...
HE WHO HAS BEEN BORN OF GOD KEEPS HIMSELF,
AND THE WICKED ONE DOES NOT TOUCH HIM.”

1 John 5:18-19

“FOR WHATEVER IS BORN OF GOD OVERCOMES THE WORLD.
AND THIS IS THE VICTORY THAT HAS
OVERCOME THE WORLD—OUR FAITH.”

1 John 5:4

Revivalist Leonard Ravenhill greatly lamented over the spiritual condition of the church in saying:
“I LOOKED FOR THE CHURCH, AND IT WAS IN THE WORLD. I LOOKED FOR THE WORLD AND IT WAS IN THE CHURCH.”

The world is never to be found in the church. There is however a proper sense in which the church is to be found in the world. The diagram on the opposite page is an allegory that will help us to see what proper place the church has in the world. Consider these two simple statements.

One saying is right and proper, but the other is filled with danger:

“A SHIP IS IN THE SEA”

(RIGHT RELATIONSHIP)

As ships are created for the designed purpose of “sailing the seven seas”, so likewise was the church created to be in the world.

“THE SEA IS IN THE SHIP”

(WRONG RELATIONSHIP)

To dry-dock a ship is to make its intended usefulness null and void. It was made for the sea. However, for a ship to lackadaisically continue to take into itself the sea upon which it sails eventually becomes its very demise, for it will slowly sink into the sea due to all the useless and harmful dead weight it has taken on.

Benjamin Franklin was credited with this saying,

“A VERY LITTLE LEAK IS CAPABLE OF SINKING A VERY BIG SHIP.”

It is interesting that old wooden boats were equipped with bilge pumps which were designed to pump out the leakage that seeped into their hulls. Either you used it regularly or you would eventually sink! The spiritual bilge pump needed for the church to stay afloat in the midst of the world is what is written in the Word of God pertaining to the sea around us. Often in scripture the sea is presented as a picture of the corruption that exists in the world. It is a picture of this present world under pending judgment. For instance, Jude 13 depicts false teachers as raging waves of the sea, foaming up their own shame. Isaiah 57:20 speaks of the wicked being like the troubled sea, when it cannot rest, whose waters cast up mire and dirt. Psalm 107 tells the story of men who go down to the sea in ships that must cry out to God for their deliverance from the peril of the sea, and God guides them to their desired haven (Ps. 107:23-30).

What a vivid picture of the church in a dangerous and perilous world! Job Chapter 41 depicts a beast called Leviathan, the master of the wicked sea, a picture of Satan’s present role as the god of this world (2 Cor. 4:4).

"THE SHIP IS TO BE IN THE SEA,

BUT NOT THE SEA IN THE SHIP"

"THOSE WHO GO DOWN TO THE SEA IN SHIPS, WHO DO BUSINESS ON GREAT WATERS, THEY SEE THE WORKS OF THE LORD, AND HIS WONDERS IN THE DEEP... THE STORMY WIND WHICH LIFTS UP THE WAVES OF THE SEA, THEY MOUNT UP TO THE HEAVENS, THEY GO DOWN AGAIN TO THE DEPTHS,

THEIR SOUL SELTS BECAUSE OF TROUBLE... THEN THEY CRY OUT TO THE LORD IN THEIR TROUBLE, HE CALMS THE STORM, SO THAT ITS WAVES ARE STILL... AND HE BRINGS THEM OUT OF THEIR DISTRESSES... HE GUIDES THEM TO THEIR DESIRED HAVEN." Psalm 107:23-30 excerpts

THE CHURCH

"GO INTO ALL THE WORLD
AND PREACH THE GOSPEL TO EVERY CREATURE..."
Mark 16:15

"GOD WAS IN CHRIST RECONCILING THE WORLD TO HIMSELF...
AND HAS COMMITTED TO US THE WORD OF RECONCILIATION,
THEREFORE WE ARE AMBASSADORS FOR CHRIST,
AS THOUGH GOD WERE PLEADING THROUGH US...
BE RECONCILED TO GOD." 2 Cor. 5:19-21



THE WORLD

"I DO NOT PRAY THAT YOU SHOULD TAKE THEM OUT OF THE WORLD, BUT THAT YOU SHOULD KEEP THEM FROM THE EVIL ONE. THEY ARE NOT OF THE WORLD, JUST AS I AM NOT OF THE WORLD... AS YOU SENT ME INTO THE WORLD, I ALSO HAVE SENT THEM INTO THE WORLD."

John 17:15-18

"...CHILDREN OF GOD WITHOUT FAULT IN THE MIDST OF A CROOKED AND PERVERSE GENERATION, AMONG WHOM YOU SHINE AS LIGHTS IN THE WORLD, HOLDING FORTH THE WORD OF LIFE..."

Phil. 2:15-16

"THE WICKED ARE LIKE THE TROUBLED SEA... WHOSE WATERS CAST UP MIRE AND DIRT"

"DO NOT LOVE THE WORLD OR THE THINGS THAT ARE IN THE WORLD. IF ANYONE LOVES THE WORLD, THE LOVE OF THE FATHER IS NOT IN HIM. FOR ALL THAT IS IN THE WORLD... THE LUST OF THE FLESH, THE LUST OF THE EYES, AND THE PRIDE OF LIFE... IS NOT OF THE FATHER BUT IS OF THE WORLD. AND THE WORLD IS PASSING AWAY, AND THE LUST OF IT; BUT HE WHO DOES THE WILL OF GOD ABIDES FOREVER."

1 John 2:14-16

"FOR THE GRACE OF GOD THAT BRINGS SALVATION HAS APPEARED TO ALL MEN, TEACHING US THAT, DENYING UNGODLINESS AND WORLDLY LUSTS, WE SHOULD LIVE SOBERLY, RIGHTEOUSLY AND GODLY IN THE PRESENT AGE..."

Titus 2:11-12

"ADULTERERS AND ADULTERESSES!
DO YOU NOT KNOW THAT FRIENDSHIP WITH THE WORLD IS ENMITY WITH GOD?
WHOEVER THEREFORE WANTS TO BE A FRIEND OF THE WORLD MAKES HIMSELF AN ENEMY OF GOD."

James 4:4

"WHAT ADVANTAGE IS IT TO A MAN IF HE GAINS THE WHOLE WORLD, AND IS HIMSELF DESTROYED OR LOST?"
Luke 9:25

"...THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, WHO GAVE HIMSELF FOR OUR SINS, THAT HE MIGHT DELIVER US FROM THIS PRESENT EVIL WORLD..."

Gal. 1:4

"GOD FORBID THAT I SHOULD GLORY EXCEPT IN THE CROSS OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST, BY WHOM THE WORLD HAS BEEN CRUCIFIED TO ME, AND I TO THE WORLD."

Gal. 6:14

"...EXCEEDING GREAT AND PRECIOUS PROMISES, THAT THROUGH THESE YOU MAY BE PARTAKERS OF THE DIVINE NATURE, HAVING ESCAPED THE CORRUPTION THAT IS IN THE WORLD THROUGH LUST."

2 Peter 1:4

"DO NOT BE CONFORMED TO THIS WORLD, BUT BE TRANSFORMED BY THE RENEWING OF YOUR MIND..."
Isa. 57:20
Rom. 12:2

"PURE AND UNDEFILED RELIGION BEFORE GOD IS THIS... TO KEEP ONESELF UNSPOTTED FROM THE WORLD."

James 1:27

"FOR IF, AFTER THEY HAVE ESCAPED THE POLLUTIONS OF THE WORLD THROUGH THE KNOWLEDGE OF THE LORD AND SAVIOR JESUS CHRIST, THEY ARE AGAIN ENTANGLED IN THEM AND OVERCOME, THE LATTER END IS WORSE FOR THEM THAN THE BEGINNING. FOR IT WOULD HAVE BEEN BETTER FOR THEM NOT TO HAVE KNOWN THE WAY OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, THAN HAVING KNOWN IT, TO TURN FROM THE HOLY COMMANDMENT DELIVERED TO THEM."

2 Peter 2:20-21

"...THE WHOLE WORLD LIES UNDER THE SWAY OF THE WICKED ONE... HE WHO HAS BEEN BORN OF GOD KEEPS HIMSELF, AND THE WICKED ONE DOES NOT TOUCH HIM."

1 John 5:18-19

"FOR WHATEVER IS BORN OF GOD OVERCOMES THE WORLD. AND THIS IS THE VICTORY THAT HAS OVERCOME THE WORLD... OUR FAITH."

1 John 5:4

← I repeated this diagram again as it contains a wealth of information that must be carefully contemplated by every follower of Christ. We are in the world, yet not part of it.

Look at both Paul's and Jesus' balanced perspective concerning a believer's involvement in the world:



**"BUT THIS I SAY, BRETHREN, THE TIME IS SHORT, SO THAT FROM NOW ON...
...THOSE WHO BUY AS THOUGH THEY DID NOT POSSESS,
AND THOSE WHO USE THIS WORLD AS NOT MISUSING IT.
FOR THE FORM OF THIS WORLD IS PASSING AWAY."**

1 Cor. 7:29-31

**"I DO NOT PRAY THAT YOU SHOULD TAKE THEM OUT OF THE WORLD,
BUT THAT YOU SHOULD KEEP THEM FROM THE EVIL ONE.
THEY ARE NOT OF THE WORLD, JUST AS I AM NOT OF THE WORLD...
AS YOU SENT ME INTO THE WORLD, I ALSO HAVE SENT THEM INTO THE WORLD."**

John 17:15-18



**"...THE LORD JESUS CHRIST,
WHO GAVE HIMSELF FOR OUR SINS,
THAT HE MIGHT DELIVER US
FROM THIS PRESENT EVIL WORLD (age)..."**

Gal. 1:3-4

**"GOD WAS IN CHRIST RECONCILING
THE WORLD TO HIMSELF...
AND HAS COMMITTED TO US
THE WORD OF RECONCILIATION,
THEREFORE, WE ARE
AMBASSADORS FOR CHRIST,
AS THOUGH GOD WERE PLEADING
THROUGH US...BE RECONCILED TO GOD."**

2 Cor. 5:19-20

**"GO INTO ALL THE WORLD
AND PREACH THE GOSPEL
TO EVERY CREATURE."**

Mark 16:15



*Dear God,
Keep the ship
in the sea,
but enable us to
keep the sea
out of the ship.*

Your Church in the world



Col. 2:8-9



**“BEWARE LEST ANYONE CHEAT YOU
THROUGH
PHILOSOPHY
AND
EMPTY DECEIT,
ACCORDING TO
THE TRADITION OF MEN,
ACCORDING TO
THE BASIC PRINCIPLES
OF THE WORLD,
AND NOT ACCORDING TO CHRIST.”**

Allow me to give you the contextual setting in which these words of warning are found:



“NOW THIS I SAY LEST ANYONE SHOULD DECEIVE YOU WITH PERSUASIVE WORDS. FOR THOUGH I AM ABSENT IN THE FLESH, YET I AM WITH YOU IN SPIRIT, REJOICING TO SEE YOUR GOOD ORDER AND THE STEADFASTNESS OF YOUR FAITH IN CHRIST.

AS YOU HAVE THEREFORE RECEIVED CHRIST JESUS THE LORD, SO WALK IN HIM, ROOTED AND BUILT UP IN HIM AND ESTABLISHED IN THE FAITH, AS YOU HAVE BEEN TAUGHT, ABOUNDING IN IT WITH THANKSGIVING.

BEWARE LEST ANYONE CHEAT YOU THROUGH PHILOSOPHY AND EMPTY DECEIT, ACCORDING TO THE TRADITION OF MEN, ACCORDING TO THE BASIC PRINCIPLES OF THE WORLD, AND NOT ACCORDING TO CHRIST.

FOR IN HIM DWELLS ALL THE FULLNESS OF THE GODHEAD BODILY; AND YOU ARE COMPLETE IN HIM, WHO IS THE HEAD OF ALL PRINCIPALITY AND POWER.”

Col. 2:4-10

Do you realize, dear reader, how long one could spend in dissecting, assimilating, and internalizing the magnitude of what has been set before every believer living in a polluted world so categorized with satanic pitfalls as enumerated by the apostle Paul? We cannot allow ourselves to merely zip through in reading such important passages. Paul is setting before us four great corrupting factors in this world under the sway of the wicked one that have the real potential to cheat the Christian from all the fullness that is available in the person of Jesus Christ.

One of these four factors Paul listed on the opposite page is “the basic principles of the world.” Actually, this is the very subject we have been considering over the last forty pages of this book. The apostle John summed it up as “all that is in the world”, (the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes and the pride of life). Having dealt with this topic to the best of my ability, as a teacher of God’s Word, let us now briefly consider the remaining three subjects Paul lists on the opposite page as potential threats to living a life centered in Christ. However, become entangled in them as is most of the world, and you will lack the ability to remain Christ-centered in the midst of a Christ-rejecting world designed by, and under the influence of Satan, the god of this world.



“BEWARE LEST ANYONE CHEAT YOU THROUGH

PHILOSOPHY...”

**“THE LOVE OR PURSUIT OF KNOWLEDGE...
A SYSTEM OF EDUCATION
BASED ON MOTIVATING BELIEFS, CONCEPTS,
PATTERNS AND PRINCIPLES THAT LEAD TO
INCREASED WISDOM AND UNDERSTANDING.”**

Webster

Philosophy is the love/pursuit of knowledge. That sounds innocent and harmless enough until you consider that the scriptures give specific warning to the believer in this dangerous arena:

**“WE KNOW THAT
WE ALL HAVE KNOWLEDGE.
KNOWLEDGE PUFFS UP..
IF ANYONE THINKS THAT HE KNOWS
ANYTHING, HE KNOWS NOTHING
YET AS HE OUGHT TO KNOW.”**

1 Cor. 8:1-2

**“...AVOIDING THE PROFANE
AND VAIN BABBLINGS
AND CONTRADICTIONS OF
WHAT IS FALSELY CALLED KNOWLEDGE-
BY PROFESSING IT, SOME HAVE
STRAYED CONCERNING THE FAITH...”**

1 Tim. 6:20-21

**“...ALTHOUGH THEY KNEW GOD,
THEY DID NOT
GLORIFY HIM AS GOD...
PROFESSING TO BE WISE...
THEY DID NOT LIKE TO RETAIN
GOD IN THEIR KNOWLEDGE...”**

Rom. 1:21-28 excerpts

Paul is warning about knowledge that is specifically and purposely devoid of God. Romans tells us that they knew God, but would not retain Him in their knowledge. For the most part, the education system is inundated with knowledge that is divorced from acknowledgement of the existence of God. It permeates science as well as the medical field. God is factored out of man's theories. What is the foundation of evolution? Knowledge devoid of God as the Creator. Man wasn't created, (he reasons), but rather evolved from primitive forms of animals. It is the same theory with man's view of the creation: man deduces that there is no Creator, but rather an evolution developed over eons of time. However, Paul in Romans plainly refutes such high-minded nonsense:

**“...MEN WHO SUPPRESS THE TRUTH IN UNRIGHTEOUSNESS, BECAUSE WHAT MAY BE KNOWN OF GOD IS
MANIFEST IN THEM, FOR GOD HAS SHOWN IT TO THEM. FOR SINCE THE CREATION OF THE WORLD HIS INVISIBLE
ATTRIBUTES ARE CLEARLY SEEN, BEING UNDERSTOOD BY THE THINGS THAT ARE MADE, EVEN HIS ETERNAL
POWER AND GODHEAD, SO THAT THEY ARE WITHOUT EXCUSE...PROFESSING TO BE WISE, THEY BECAME FOOLS,
AND CHANGED THE GLORY OF THE INCORRUPTIBLE GOD INTO AN IMAGE MADE LIKE CORRUPTIBLE MAN-AND
BIRDS AND FOUR-FOOTED BEASTS AND CREEPING THINGS.”** Rom. 1:18-23

Man boasts that the human race has evolved from a state of ignorance to ever-increasing intelligence. God's Word says rather that mankind began as wise, but have become fools through their own brand of wisdom. Therefore, according to God, atheism (the denial of God's existence) is the ultimate expression of a fool:

**“THE FOOL HAS SAID IN HIS HEART, ‘THERE IS NO GOD.’
THEY ARE CORRUPT, THEY HAVE DONE ABOMINABLE WORKS, THERE IS NONE WHO DOES GOOD.
THE LORD LOOKS DOWN FROM HEAVEN UPON THE CHILDREN OF MEN,
TO SEE IF THERE ARE ANY WHO UNDERSTAND, WHO SEEK GOD. THEY HAVE ALL TURNED ASIDE,
THEY HAVE TOGETHER BECOME CORRUPT...”** Ps. 14:1-3

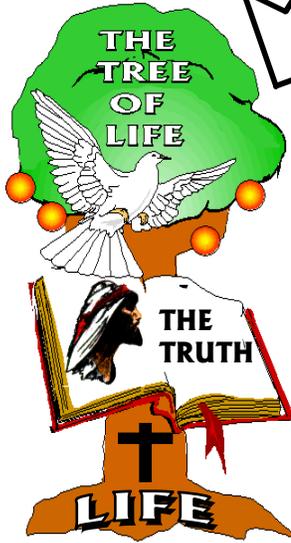
GOOD AND BAD PHILOSOPHY

"THE LOVE OR PURSUIT OF KNOWLEDGE...
A SYSTEM OF EDUCATION
BASED ON MOTIVATING BELIEFS, CONCEPTS,
PATTERNS AND PRINCIPLES THAT LEAD TO
INCREASED WISDOM AND UNDERSTANDING."

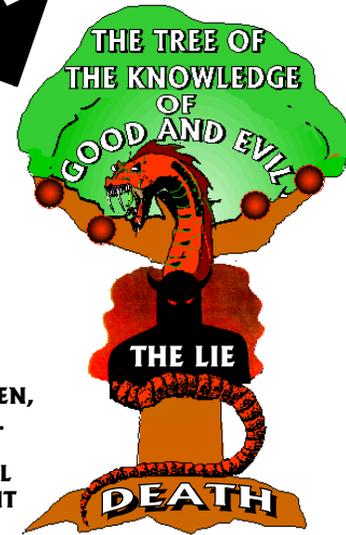
Webster

"...THE TREE OF LIFE WAS ALSO IN THE MIDST OF THE GARDEN,
AND THE TREE OF THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL...
OF EVERY TREE OF THE GARDEN YOU MAY FREELY EAT;
BUT OF THE TREE OF THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL
YOU SHALL NOT EAT, FOR IN THE DAY THAT YOU EAT OF IT
YOU SHALL SURELY DIE."

Gen. 2:9,16,17



**GOD-CENTERED
KNOWLEDGE
THAT
BUILDS UP
GOD'S IMAGE
IN MAN'S EYES
(PROMOTES HUMILITY
AND DIVINE DEPENDENCE IN MAN)**



**MAN-CENTERED
KNOWLEDGE
THAT
PUFFS UP
MAN'S IMAGE
IN HIS OWN EYES
(PROMOTES PRIDE
AND INDEPENDENCE IN MAN)**

What God placed before Adam and Eve in the Garden as a choice, He continues to set before every follower of Christ today. To truly be a choice there has to be an alternative. One choice is a tree which produces permissible fruit, and the alternative is a tree which bears forbidden fruit. As it was for Adam and Eve, it remains for us today; to make a choice between forbidden fruit (philosophy/knowledge from man) that produces a life lived apart from dependence upon God, and that which produces fruit (philosophy/knowledge from God) leading unto a life lived in utter dependence upon God. Jesus Christ is the Tree of Life personified. Likewise, as in the original Garden, Satan abides in the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. The Christian is to avoid all philosophy (knowledge) that can cheat him of being made complete in Christ. What has worked for Satan in the past is what he is convinced will work for him in the future. As followers of Christ, we must not be so naive to think that Satan is not actively applying his subtle substitute for the truth in the present.

Commit to memory the two trees as depicted on the opposite page. When philosophy (knowledge) is presented to you, try to place what it consists of under the proper tree. Does it exalt God or you? Does it make you dependent or independent? Does it make you proud or humble? The scriptures below reveal what is the right kind of philosophy that we are to pursue. Note the running theme is about increasing in the knowledge of God:

"...THAT THE GOD OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST, THE FATHER OF GLORY, MAY GIVE TO YOU THE SPIRIT OF WISDOM AND REVELATION IN THE KNOWLEDGE OF HIM..."

Eph. 1:17

"GRACE AND PEACE BE MULTIPLIED TO YOU IN THE KNOWLEDGE OF OUR GOD AND OF JESUS OUR LORD... BUT GROW IN THE GRACE AND KNOWLEDGE OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOR JESUS CHRIST."

2 Pet. 1:2, 2 Pet. 3:18

"...SOME DO NOT HAVE THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOD. I SPEAK THIS TO YOUR SHAME."

1 Cor. 15:34

"...HIS DIVINE POWER HAS GIVEN TO US ALL THINGS THAT PERTAIN TO LIFE AND GODLINESS, THROUGH THE KNOWLEDGE OF HIM WHO CALLED US... BE NEITHER BARREN NOR UNFRUITFUL IN THE KNOWLEDGE OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST."

2 Pet. 1:3,8

"THAT YOU MAY HAVE A WALK WORTHY OF THE LORD, FULLY PLEASING HIM, BEING FRUITFUL IN EVERY GOOD WORK AND INCREASING IN THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOD..."

Col. 1:10

"...ATTAINING TO... THE KNOWLEDGE OF THE MYSTERY OF GOD, BOTH OF THE FATHER AND OF CHRIST, IN WHOM ARE HIDDEN ALL THE TREASURES OF WISDOM AND KNOWLEDGE."

Col. 2:2-3

EMPTY DECEIT

"EVERYONE WILL DECEIVE HIS NEIGHBOR, AND WILL NOT SPEAK THE TRUTH;

THEY HAVE TAUGHT THEIR TONGUE TO SPEAK LIES...

YOUR DWELLING PLACE IS IN THE MIDST OF DECEIT"

Jer. 9:5-6



EMPTY DECEIT

"EVERYONE WILL DECEIVE HIS NEIGHBOR, AND WILL NOT SPEAK THE TRUTH;

THEY HAVE TAUGHT THEIR TONGUE TO SPEAK LIES...

YOUR DWELLING PLACE IS IN THE MIDST OF DECEIT"

Jer. 9:5-6



EMPTY DECEIT

"EVERYONE WILL DECEIVE HIS NEIGHBOR, AND WILL NOT SPEAK THE TRUTH;

THEY HAVE TAUGHT THEIR TONGUE TO SPEAK LIES...

YOUR DWELLING PLACE IS IN THE MIDST OF DECEIT"

Jer. 9:5-6



EMPTY DECEIT

"EVERYONE WILL DECEIVE HIS NEIGHBOR, AND WILL NOT SPEAK THE TRUTH;

THEY HAVE TAUGHT THEIR TONGUE TO SPEAK LIES...

YOUR DWELLING PLACE IS IN THE MIDST OF DECEIT"

Jer. 9:5-6



BEWARE LEST ANYONE CHEAT YOU THROUGH

EMPTY DECEIT

"THE PRACTICE OF DECEIVING (FALSIFICATION, CONCEALMENT, CHEATING, MISLEADING) ANOTHER PERSON/PERSONS. FRAUD, TRICKERY, CUNNING CRAFTINESS, GUILF, DECEIT, OUTRIGHT LIES TO CONCEAL TRUTH" Webster



"YOU ARE OF YOUR FATHER THE DEVIL, AND THE DESIRES OF YOUR FATHER YOU WANT TO DO... (he) DOES NOT STAND IN THE TRUTH, BECAUSE THERE IS NO TRUTH IN HIM. WHEN HE SPEAKS A LIE, HE SPEAKS FROM HIS OWN RESOURCES, FOR HE IS A LIAR AND THE FATHER OF IT."

John 8:44-45

EMPTY DECEIT

"EVERYONE WILL DECEIVE HIS NEIGHBOR, AND WILL NOT SPEAK THE TRUTH;

THEY HAVE TAUGHT THEIR TONGUE TO SPEAK LIES...

YOUR DWELLING PLACE IS IN THE MIDST OF DECEIT"

Jer. 9:5-6



EMPTY DECEIT

"EVERYONE WILL DECEIVE HIS NEIGHBOR, AND WILL NOT SPEAK THE TRUTH;

THEY HAVE TAUGHT THEIR TONGUE TO SPEAK LIES...

YOUR DWELLING PLACE IS IN THE MIDST OF DECEIT"

Jer. 9:5-6



EMPTY DECEIT

"EVERYONE WILL DECEIVE HIS NEIGHBOR, AND WILL NOT SPEAK THE TRUTH;

THEY HAVE TAUGHT THEIR TONGUE TO SPEAK LIES...

YOUR DWELLING PLACE IS IN THE MIDST OF DECEIT"

Jer. 9:5-6



EMPTY DECEIT

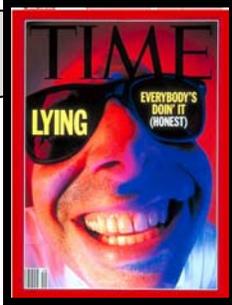
"EVERYONE WILL DECEIVE HIS NEIGHBOR, AND WILL NOT SPEAK THE TRUTH;

THEY HAVE TAUGHT THEIR TONGUE TO SPEAK LIES...

YOUR DWELLING PLACE IS IN THE MIDST OF DECEIT"

Jer. 9:5-6





1994 Cover of Time

On the opposite page we find from the highest office in the land down to the role of a housewife/mother, as Time magazine portrays, have this in common, everybody is lying through their teeth. The sample of photographs displayed tell us it permeates politics, commerce, and even religion. People are willing to lie their way through the difficulties of life.

Peanuts cartoons once told the story of Lucy being confronted by Charlie Brown as she told a bald-faced lie. Lucy's defensive response was, "It was just a white lie." Charlie Brown retorted with, "Lies come in colors?" The origin of lies comes directly from the father of lies, Satan himself. Although the whole world may indeed lie its way through life, this is taboo for a follower of Christ. Christians are to hate lying, but love the truth:

"A RIGHTEOUS MAN HATES LYING, BUT A WICKED MAN IS LOATHSOME AND COMES TO SHAME. RIGHTEOUSNESS GUARDS HIM WHOSE WAY IS BLAMELESS, BUT WICKEDNESS OVERTHROWS THE SINNER."

Prov. 13:5-6

How many of those pictured on the opposite page ended up with a reputation of being loathsome and coming to shame? How many were overthrown from their lofty position by the exposing of their concealed sin? Nearly every one of them! God's Word is true! Consider these two passages of scripture in which God contrasts the lie and the truth:

**"...WHO EXCHANGED
THE TRUTH OF GOD
FOR THE LIE..."**

Rom. 1:25

**"AND FOR THIS REASON GOD WILL SEND THEM STRONG
DELUSION, THAT THEY SHOULD BELIEVE THE LIE, THAT THEY ALL
MAY BE CONDEMNED WHO DID NOT BELIEVE THE TRUTH..."**

2 Thess. 2:11-12

Search the scriptures and you will find that Jesus is called the truth (Jn. 14:6), the Holy Spirit is the Spirit of truth (Jn. 15:26), God's Word is truth (Jn. 17:17), and the church itself is called the pillar and ground of the truth (1 Tim. 3:15). What does God expect of His people? It is that they be marked by the truth. It is Satan and his kingdom that is marked by the lie. Herein we find how God's people can be different than the world. It is by loving truth and hating lying. Consider the sober fact that all liars will share a common place among all that God condemns:

**"...THE COWARDLY, UNBELIEVING, ABOMINABLE, MURDERERS, SEXUALLY IMMORAL, SORCERERS, IDOLATERS,
AND ALL LIARS SHALL HAVE THEIR PART IN THE LAKE WHICH BURNS WITH FIRE AND BRIMSTONE,
WHICH IS THE SECOND DEATH."**

Rev. 21:8

“BUT THERE WERE ALSO FALSE PROPHETS AMONG THE PEOPLE, EVEN AS THERE WILL BE FALSE TEACHERS AMONG YOU, WHO WILL SECRETLY BRING IN DESTRUCTIVE HERESIES...AND MANY WILL FOLLOW THEIR DESTRUCTIVE WAYS, BECAUSE OF WHOM THE WAY OF TRUTH WILL BE BLASPHEMED. BY COVETOUSNESS THEY WILL EXPLOIT YOU WITH DECEPTIVE WORDS... BEGUILING UNSTABLE SOULS. THEY HAVE A HEART TRAINED IN COVETOUS PRACTICES, AND ARE ACCURSED CHILDREN. THEY HAVE FORSAKEN THE RIGHT WAY AND GONE ASTRAY... THEY SPEAK GREAT SWELLING WORDS OF EMPTINESS... THEY PROMISE THEM LIBERTY, THEY THEMSELVES ARE SLAVES OF CORRUPTION...”

2 Peter 2:1-19 excerpts

“...CHILDREN, TOSSED TO AND FRO AND CARRIED ABOUT WITH EVERY WIND OF DOCTRINE, BY THE TRICKERY OF MEN, IN THE CUNNING CRAFTINESS BY WHICH THEY LIE IN WAIT TO DECEIVE...”

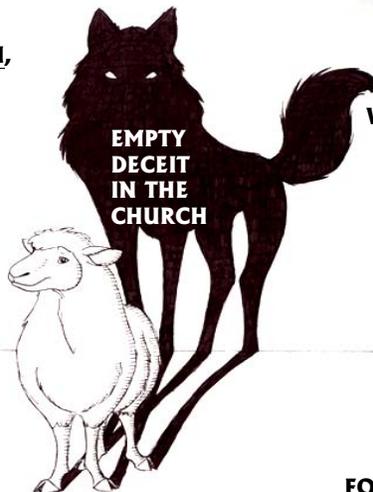
Eph. 4:14-15

“FOR I KNOW THIS, THAT AFTER MY DEPARTURE SAVAGE WOLVES WILL COME IN AMONG YOU, NOT SPARING THE FLOCK. ALSO FROM AMONG YOURSELVES MEN WILL RISE UP, SPEAKING PERVERSE THINGS, TO DRAW AWAY THE DISCIPLES AFTER THEMSELVES.”

Acts 20:29-31

“BELOVED, DO NOT BELIEVE EVERY SPIRIT, BUT TEST THE SPIRITS, WHETHER THEY ARE OF GOD; BECAUSE MANY FALSE PROPHETS HAVE GONE OUT INTO THE WORLD... THIS IS THE SPIRIT OF THE ANTICHRIST, WHICH YOU HAVE HEARD WAS COMING, AND IS NOW ALREADY IN THE WORLD.”

1 John 4:1-3



“BEWARE OF FALSE PROPHETS, WHO COME TO YOU IN SHEEP'S CLOTHING, BUT INWARDLY THEY ARE RAVENOUS WOLVES.”

Matt. 7:15-16

“...FOR WE ARE NOT, AS SO MANY, PEDDLING (“ADULTERATING FOR GAIN”) THE WORD OF GOD;

BUT AS OF SINCERITY, BUT AS FROM GOD, WE SPEAK IN THE SIGHT OF GOD IN CHRIST.”

2 Cor. 2:17

“...WE HAVE RENOUNCED THE HIDDEN THINGS OF SHAME, NOT WALKING IN CRAFTINESS NOR HANDLING THE WORD OF GOD DECEITFULLY...”

2 Cor. 4:2

“...FOR SUCH ARE FALSE APOSTLES, DECEITFUL WORKERS, TRANSFORMING THEMSELVES INTO APOSTLES OF CHRIST. AND NO WONDER! FOR SATAN HIMSELF TRANSFORMS HIMSELF INTO AN ANGEL OF LIGHT. THEREFORE IT IS NO GREAT THING IF HIS MINISTERS ALSO TRANSFORM THEMSELVES INTO MINISTERS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS...”

2 Cor. 11:13-15

We not only live in a secular world that practices empty deceit in the realm of politics, commerce, sports and entertainment, but as the opposite page portrays quite vividly, empty deceit has crept into the church as well. “wolves in sheep’s clothing” is how Jesus put it. “savage wolves” that will not spare the flock is how the apostle Paul summed up the dangerous times lying ahead for the church.

The church of Jesus Christ would become inundated with false prophets, false teachers and false apostles bent on practicing empty deceit upon God’s people. The apostle Peter warned that they would come speaking great swelling words of emptiness. Paul warns that Christianity would be doctrinally tossed to and fro with every wind of doctrine practiced by the trickery of men that, with cunning craftiness, they would lie in wait to deceive. Paul also depicts that teachers would use craftiness in handling the Word of God deceitfully. The apostle Peter prophetically spoke of the very times in which we live that would find teachers whose hearts are trained in covetous practices designed to beguile (deceive) unstable souls. Such is the “faith for prosperity” message with its hundredfold return guarantees. Sounds like the same ruse financier Bernie Madoff deceitfully promised his investors.

Here is God’s now message for His people in the midst of times of empty deceit being practiced all around us:

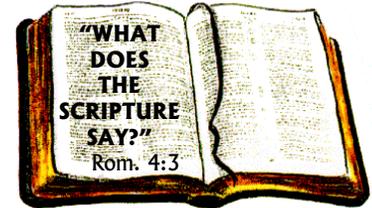
**“BELOVED,
DO NOT BELIEVE EVERY SPIRIT,
BUT TEST THE SPIRITS, WHETHER THEY ARE OF GOD...”**

1 John 4:1-2



Think about Paul as he commended the saints in Berea as being more fair-minded than those found in Thessalonica. They received the Word of God with all readiness of mind, but then they searched the scriptures daily to find out whether these things they were hearing were true (Acts 17:11).

God help us all to follow the same method of testing the spirits of those who speak God’s Word to us.





“BEWARE LEST ANYONE CHEAT YOU THROUGH

**THE TRADITION
OF MEN...”**

**“GIVEN SUFFICIENT TIME,
CHERISHED TRADITIONS
BECOME DOGMATIC BELIEFS”**

French Historian, Amaury de Riencourt

In Jesus' first coming to earth He raised a bone of contention with His own people, the Jews. It centered around their cherished traditions which, over the years, had replaced the commandments of God previously given to them:

"WELL DID ISAIAH PROPHECY OF YOU HYPOCRITES, AS IT IS WRITTEN: 'THIS PEOPLE HONORS ME WITH THEIR LIPS, BUT THEIR HEART IS FAR FROM ME. AND IN VAIN THEY WORSHIP ME, TEACHING AS DOCTRINES THE COMMANDMENTS OF MEN.' FOR LAYING ASIDE THE COMMANDMENT OF GOD, YOU HOLD THE TRADITION OF MEN -- THE WASHING OF PITCHERS AND CUPS, AND MANY OTHER SUCH THINGS YOU DO.' HE SAID TO THEM, 'ALL TOO WELL YOU REJECT THE COMMANDMENT OF GOD, THAT YOU MAY KEEP YOUR TRADITION...MAKING THE WORD OF GOD OF NO EFFECT THROUGH YOUR TRADITION WHICH YOU HAVE HANDED DOWN. AND MANY SUCH THINGS YOU DO.'" Mark 7:6-13

Not an isolated event with Judaism, but tradition has also thoroughly plagued Catholicism and is presently at work infecting Protestantism as well. Jesus foretold in a parable this prophetic malady that was to come through the leavening power of tradition at work:

"ANOTHER PARABLE HE SPOKE TO THEM: "THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN IS LIKE LEAVEN, WHICH A WOMAN TOOK AND HID IN THREE MEASURES OF MEAL TILL IT WAS ALL LEAVENED.'" "

Matt. 13:33

Leaven is always a picture of doctrinal corruption. Jesus warned His disciples:

" 'HOW IS IT YOU DO NOT UNDERSTAND THAT I DID NOT SPEAK TO YOU CONCERNING BREAD? -- BUT TO BEWARE OF THE LEAVEN OF THE PHARISEES AND SADDUCEES.' THEN THEY UNDERSTOOD THAT HE DID NOT TELL THEM TO BEWARE OF THE LEAVEN OF BREAD, BUT OF THE DOCTRINE OF THE PHARISEES AND SADDUCEES."

Matt. 16:11-12



**JUDAISM
CATHOLICISM
PROTESTANTISM**

Do you want to be truly different than the world around you? Then go read the context of Paul's scripture above pertaining to purging out leaven. You will find that he is speaking to New Testament Gentile converts, like you and me, to properly keep the feast of Passover and Unleavened Bread. Here is my challenge to you dear reader: More than likely, like so many, you may be following the tradition of men rather than the commandments of God year after year. By that statement, I mean that you continue to observe tradition-based secular and worldly holidays rather than the specified holy feast days appointed by God and confirmed by the apostle Paul!

MAN-CENTERED HOLIDAYS OF



Happy Holidays

Merry Christmas

THE PHILOSOPHY BEHIND MAN-CENTERED HOLIDAYS:

It doesn't take a rocket scientist to figure out what is the central theme of these five major holidays of the world in which we live, especially here in America. It is the cherished theme of "happiness." The Constitution of the United States is founded upon the inalienable right to life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness. These five traditional holidays are an ongoing means of expressing those cherished man-centered rights. The holidays systematically enforce this pursuit of happiness as they repetitiously cycle year after year. In reality, this is a philosophy Satan wants to firmly plant. Look at them carefully for none of them convey any message about the future. Holidays such as portrayed above are based on this present life. All the imagery above is readily found on the internet as one types in the names of the holidays. I was amazed at the childishness this imagery portrays. As I built the above visual portrayal of these major holidays, I was quickened by the Holy Spirit of Paul's instruction to believers pertaining to childish things:

"WHEN I WAS A CHILD, I SPOKE AS A CHILD, I UNDERSTOOD AS A CHILD, I THOUGHT AS A CHILD; BUT WHEN I BECAME A MAN, I PUT AWAY CHILDISH THINGS." 1 Cor. 13:11

When we become a man (or woman) of God, we are called to put away such childish celebrations as these pagan-based holidays magnify. We are called to no longer be children, tossed to and fro and carried about by every wind of doctrine, but rather grow up in all things into Him who is the head—Christ (Eph. 4:14-15). The world's holidays are a means for the merchants of the earth to manipulate the masses to spend, spend and spend all the more! I have watched how Halloween has come right along side of Christmas as the two most decorated holidays! What does Halloween glorify? Just what its name implies: it "hallows" all that belongs to the demonic world! Should a follower of Christ be hallowing the likes of Halloween?

"DO NOT LEARN THE WAYS OF THE GENTILES...FOR THE CUSTOMS OF THE PEOPLE ARE FUTILE..." Jer. 10:2-3
"COME OUT FROM AMONG THEM AND BE SEPARATE, SAYS THE LORD. DO NOT TOUCH WHAT IS UNCLEAN..." 2 Cor. 6:17

GOD-CENTERED HOLY DAYS OF



THE
SEVEN
FEASTS



DEATH
OF CHRIST



BURIAL
OF CHRIST



RESURRECTION
OF CHRIST



HOLY SPIRIT SENT
BY CHRIST



RAPTURE
BY CHRIST



RETURN
OF CHRIST



REIGN
OF CHRIST

OF THE
LORD

Lev. 23

THE PHILOSOPHY BEHIND GOD-CENTERED HOLY DAYS:

As believers, are we to focus our rejoicing upon childish, pagan-based, materialistic, man-centered holidays, or in God-centered holy days that prophetically reflect the work of Christ on earth, past, present and future? The apostle Paul in describing the New Testament believer's relationship to the Old Testament feasts states:

“.....WITH REGARD TO A FEAST DAY... SUCH THINGS ARE ONLY THE SHADOW OF THINGS THAT ARE TO COME, AND THEY HAVE ONLY A SYMBOLIC VALUE. BUT THE REALITY (THE SUBSTANCE, THE SOLID FACT OF WHAT IS FORESHADOWED, THE BODY OF IT) BELONGS TO CHRIST.” Col. 2:16-17 Amplified.

What is Paul's view of the feasts? They foreshadow what belongs to Christ, past-present-future! Also in the Book of Hebrews Paul speaks of the Old Testament Law as containing a foreshadowing of good things yet to come:

“...THE LAW HAS MERELY A RUDE OUTLINE (FORESHADOWING) OF THE GOOD THINGS TO COME...” Heb.10:1 Amplified

Unlike worldly holidays, the feasts focus on the future and therefore can be used as constant reminders for God's people to set their mind on things above, not on things on the earth (Col. 3:2). Celebrating the feasts can stir us up so that we, according to His promise, look for new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness dwells (2 Pet. 3:13). The feasts will continually remind us to confess (to be) strangers and pilgrims while on the earth (Heb. 11:12). Celebrating the feasts will cultivate a vision that here we have no continuing city, but we seek the one to come (Heb. 13:14), ever reminding us that our citizenship is in heaven (Phil. 3:20).

**“BLESSED ARE THE PEOPLE WHO KNOW THE JOYFUL SOUND, WHO UNDERSTAND THE SPIRITUAL BLESSINGS SYMBOLIZED BY THE FEASTS. THEY WALK, IN THE LIGHT AND FAVOR OF YOUR COUNTEenance!
IN YOUR NAME THEY REJOICE ALL THE DAY” Ps. 89:15-17 Amp.**

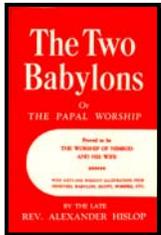
MAN-CENTERED HOLIDAYS OF



Happy Holidays

Merry Christmas

Celebrating Holidays do make us happy, but God did not say to us as His people, “Be happy, for I am happy”, but rather “Be holy, for I am holy” (1 Pet.1:15-16). Actually, there is nothing holy about such holidays as displayed above. Three of those holidays have their origins steeped in religious paganism.



Alexander Hislop

Easter was an ancient pagan holiday to celebrate the birth of the goddess of fertility “Ishtar” (pronounced Easter) Lavishly decorated Easter eggs as well as the known fertility of the bunny rabbit still represent what this holiday was all about. This is not a day about the resurrection of Jesus Christ. Go to a store that boasts of being “Your Easter Headquarters” and see for yourself. This is a mixture of the profane and the pure. It was the king of tradition, the Roman Catholic Church, that married together the pagan day of Easter to the resurrection of Christ.

Christmas (Christ-Mass) is also a Roman Catholic blending of the profane with the pure. The ancient pagan holiday was the time of the Winter Solstice (Dec. 25th). It was a day of worship of the son of the goddess Isis, the Queen of Heaven. It was the Babylon “Yule-Day” or birth of the infant child god. And what of Santa? Just an innocent tradition? Santa is a substitute for God as he is all-knowing, ageless, omnipresent etc. He is the myth figure we lie to our children about being real. Maybe Jesus is a myth too, reasons our children, when they find out Santa isn't for real.

Is Halloween just another innocent holiday that doesn't harm anyone? Is it really just childish fun? When children masquerade as evil creatures or we decorate our homes, schools, businesses and churches with occult symbols, satanic power is glorified. While you may have participated "all in fun," be assured, Halloween is serious business for satanists and witches. Those who oppose Christ are known to organize on Halloween, satanic rituals, to cast spells, to oppose churches and families, to perform sacrilegious acts, and to even offer blood sacrifices to Satan. Christian: abstain from every form of evil (1 Thess. 5:22)

GOD-CENTERED HOLY DAYS OF



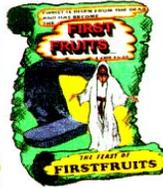
THE SEVEN FEASTS



DEATH OF CHRIST



BURIAL OF CHRIST



RESURRECTION OF CHRIST



HOLY SPIRIT SENT BY CHRIST



RAPTURE BY CHRIST



RETURN OF CHRIST



REIGN OF CHRIST

OF THE LORD
Lev. 23

Let the world celebrate pagan-based holidays, but let the Christian be different. Embrace the God-given seven feasts of the Lord as revealed in Leviticus 23. These are the feasts of the Lord-the Lord Jesus Christ that is. Christ died on the feast of Passover (1 Cor. 5:7), was buried on the feast of Unleavened Bread (Luke 22:1), rose from the dead on the feast of Firstfruits (1 Cor.15:20), and sent the Holy Spirit to fill God's people on the very day of the feast of Pentecost (Acts 2:1). Three feasts remain to be fulfilled. It is reasonable to assume Jesus Christ will fulfill them on the very days specified as feast days in Leviticus 23. Those three future events will be the rapture on the feast of Trumpets, the Second Coming of Christ on the feast of the Day of Atonement, and the millennial reign of Christ to begin on the feast of Tabernacles. Even the true time of Christ's birth is typified in the feast of Tabernacles. Systematically, feast by feast, year by year, the dedicated followers of Christ can be reminded of all that Christ has done, is doing, and will do according to these joyous holy days.

If this concept is new to your ears, I recommend this book I wrote on the subject. It will validate that the feasts of the Lord of Leviticus 23 are indeed God's prophetic appointment calendar. I also give practical hints about how to celebrate these feasts.



Our local church congregation has observed these joyous feasts for over 18 years. However, it has been costly since in doing so we have ignored the traditional holidays such as Easter and Christmas.

So many of God's people are so entrenched in these holidays that they were unwilling to let them go. Such is the power of tradition over God's Word.

STRANGERS AND PILGRIMS ON THE EARTH

**“BY FAITH HE SOJOURNED IN THE LAND... AS IN A FOREIGN COUNTRY...
FOR HE WAITED FOR THE CITY WHICH HAS FOUNDATIONS,
WHOSE BUILDER AND MAKER IS GOD.”**

Heb.11:9-10

**“THESE ALL DIED IN FAITH,
NOT HAVING RECEIVED
THE PROMISES,
BUT HAVING
SEEN THEM AFAR OFF,
WERE ASSURED OF THEM,
EMBRACED THEM,
AND CONFESSED
THAT THEY WERE
STRANGERS AND PILGRIMS
ON THE EARTH.**

**FOR THOSE WHO SAY
SUCH THINGS DECLARE PLAINLY
THAT THEY SEEK A HOMETLAND.
AND TRULY IF THEY HAD CALLED TO
MIND THAT COUNTRY FROM WHICH
THEY HAD COME OUT, THEY WOULD
HAVE HAD OPPORTUNITY TO RETURN.
BUT NOW THEY DESIRE A BETTER,
THAT IS, A HEAVENLY COUNTRY.
THEREFORE GOD IS NOT ASHAMED
TO BE CALLED THEIR GOD,
FOR HE HAS PREPARED A CITY
FOR THEM.”** Heb.11:13-16

**“NEVERTHELESS, WE, ACCORDING TO HIS PROMISE,
LOOK FOR A NEW HEAVENS AND A NEW EARTH
IN WHICH RIGHTEOUSNESS DWELLS.”**

2 Pet. 3:13



**“FOR HERE WE HAVE
NO CONTINUING CITY,
BUT WE SEEK
THE ONE TO COME.”**

Heb.13:14

**“FOR OUR CITIZENSHIP
IS IN HEAVEN,
FROM WHICH WE ALSO
EAGERLY WAIT FOR THE SAVIOR,
THE LORD JESUS CHRIST.”**

Phil. 3:20

**“FOR WE ARE ALIENS
(STRANGERS) AND PILGRIMS
BEFORE YOU,
AS WERE
ALL OUR FATHERS...”**

1 Chron. 29:15

**“BELOVED, I BEG OF YOU AS
SOJOURNERS AND PILGRIMS,
ABSTAIN FROM FLESHLY LUSTS
WHICH WAR
AGAINST THE SOUL...”**

1 Pet. 2:11-17

The bevy of scriptures on the opposite page were written to New Testament believers to establish a visionary, governing philosophy as to how, as born-again believers, we must view our lives on this temporal earth. Take the time to ponder them carefully and ask yourself, Does this biblical, philosophical theme permeate my Christian attitude toward the earthly kingdom in which I presently live, even if it is here in America?

Let me pose some questions that are answered clearly and plainly in the verses on the opposite page:

- (1) Of whom is God not ashamed to be called their God? Is it not clearly those who are waiting for God's eternal city? Who is God ashamed of in these verses? Is it not those who are choosing to be mindful of the country from which God called them out? How can we ignore such a plain comparison between the earthly minded and the heavenly minded believer and continue to pursue madly after the country from which God has called us out? Albert Einstein defined insanity as continuing to do the same things and expecting different results.
- (2) Which country are we to be mindful of, desirous of; the one from which we were clearly called out, or the better heavenly country which is to come in the afterlife? Which "city" (country) has foundations whose builder and maker is God? Is it indeed America, God's "New Israel" as the zealous Puritans claimed?
- (3) Where will righteousness dwell, in the halls of Congress by means of the Christian's efforts to legislate morality upon immorality, by controlling the appointment of judges on the Supreme Court, or will righteousness, as God defines it, have to wait for the coming of the new heavens and new earth?
- (4) Where is the citizenship of the believer? Is it here on earth, or is it in heaven? The answers are quite obvious and yet much of American Christendom manifests a life that is totally opposite of those answers. American Christianity is very mindful of the country from which they were called out and continues to labor hard and fast, mired in the political process of finding an acceptable presidential candidate, as if such activity held all the solutions for the believer in Christ. This misguided fervency stems out of Christian leaders who look for political solutions to spiritual problems. Continue to be pro-active in such political solutions and you may, unknowingly, be in danger of propelling into power the soon-coming Roman Antichrist himself! Paul a Roman citizen by birth, confessed that his citizenship was in heaven (Phil. 3:20).

**“BELOVED, I BEG OF YOU AS SOJOURNERS AND PILGRIMS,
ABSTAIN FROM FLESHLY LUSTS WHICH WAR AGAINST THE SOUL...”**

1 Pet. 2:11-17

- (5) Last, but not least, as the apostle Peter is begging God's people to adopt the philosophy of being sojourners and pilgrims as a safe-guard against the alternative of allowing fleshly lusts to war against the soul, I join in that plea with Peter, to you the reader, to adopt the same philosophy as the only effective deterrent against succumbing to the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes and the pride of life. That philosophy is to become strangers and pilgrims on earth:



**“BY FAITH HE SOJOURNED IN THE LAND... AS IN A FOREIGN COUNTRY...
FOR HE WAITED FOR THE CITY WHICH HAS FOUNDATIONS,
WHOSE BUILDER AND MAKER IS GOD.”** Heb.11:9-10

**“THESE ALL DIED IN FAITH, NOT HAVING RECEIVED THE PROMISES,
BUT HAVING SEEN THEM AFAR OFF, WERE ASSURED OF THEM,
EMBRACED THEM, AND CONFESSED THAT THEY WERE
STRANGERS AND PILGRIMS ON THE EARTH.
FOR THOSE WHO SAY SUCH THINGS DECLARE PLAINLY THAT THEY SEEK A HOMELAND.
AND TRULY IF THEY HAD CALLED TO MIND THAT COUNTRY FROM WHICH THEY HAD
COME OUT, THEY WOULD HAVE HAD OPPORTUNITY TO RETURN. BUT NOW THEY
DESIRE A BETTER, THAT IS, A HEAVENLY COUNTRY. THEREFORE GOD IS NOT ASHAMED
TO BE CALLED THEIR GOD, FOR HE HAS PREPARED A CITY FOR THEM.”** Heb.11:13-16

**“NEVERTHELESS, WE,
ACCORDING TO HIS PROMISE, LOOK FOR A NEW HEAVENS AND A NEW EARTH
IN WHICH RIGHTEOUSNESS DWELLS.”** 2 Pet. 3:13

**“FOR HERE WE HAVE NO CONTINUING CITY,
BUT WE SEEK THE ONE TO COME.”** Heb.13:14

**“FOR OUR CITIZENSHIP IS IN HEAVEN,
FROM WHICH WE ALSO EAGERLY WAIT FOR THE SAVIOR,
THE LORD JESUS CHRIST.”** Phil. 3:20



CHAPTER SIX

"THE ENEMY WHICH LIVES IN US"

Leaving the discussion of the enemy in which we live (the world),

let us begin to examine the enemy which lives in us (the flesh).



I believe we have established that the world under the sway of the wicked one is a formidable foe that we face. However, the enemy the Bible identifies as the flesh is the greatest enemy that the Christian will encounter. I make that statement simply because it is possible to find times of reprieve from the influence of a corrupt and polluted world by isolating ourselves within the sanctity of our own home, but the flesh is with us in every place and in every situation for this enemy lives within our very being. It comes in with you as you shut the door of your house to the outside world. The flesh climbs into bed with you and is capable of disrupting the solitude of the night by filling your mind with fleshly lusts that war against the soul (1 Pet. 2:11). There is no place of refuge or isolation from the influence of the flesh. Paul describes this great conflict of inner-warfare that takes place with the sin-prone flesh nature within:

"FOR I KNOW THAT IN ME (THAT IS, IN MY FLESH) NOTHING GOOD DWELLS, FOR TO WILL IS PRESENT WITH ME... NOW IF I DO WHAT I WILL NOT TO DO, IT IS NO LONGER I WHO DO IT, BUT SIN THAT DWELLS IN ME.

I FIND THEN A LAW, THAT EVIL IS PRESENT WITH ME...

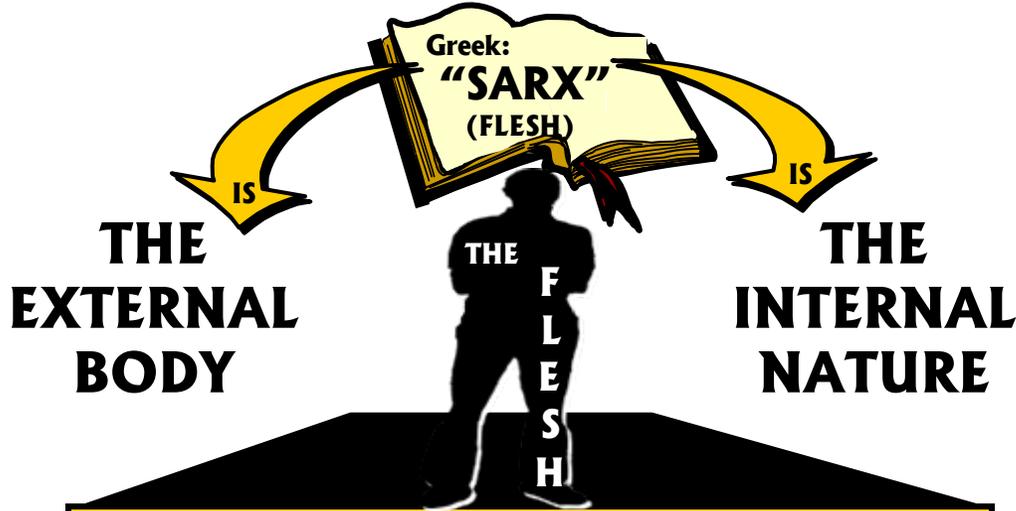
I DELIGHT IN THE LAW OF GOD ACCORDING TO THE INWARD MAN.

BUT I SEE ANOTHER LAW IN MY MEMBERS, WARRING AGAINST THE LAW OF MY MIND..." Rom. 7:18-23 excerpts

What an intense conflict the apostle Paul describes that is warring within him! Do you see three forces at work? (1) There is Paul himself, identified as "I, me, my", expressing his free will to choose good or evil. (2) There is the inward man born of God that delights in the Law of God. (3) There is also Paul's flesh in which he stresses nothing good dwells, but rather it is sin that dwells within, an evil that is constantly present with him. Know this: the flesh is a relentless, sin-prone force of lawlessness ever warring against God's Law. This is the enemy which lives in us!

"FLESH"

A NEEDFUL DISTINCTION:



- (1) SARX: "THE PHYSICAL BODY,
THE SYMBOL OF WHAT IS EXTERNAL..."
- (2) SARX: "THE CARNAL HUMAN NATURE
WITH ITS SINFUL FRAILTIES AND PASSIONS"

Strongs Concordance # 4561

**"FOR NO ONE
EVER HATED
HIS OWN FLESH,
BUT NOURISHES
AND CHERISHES IT..."**

Eph. 5:29

**"...THE LIFE WHICH
I NOW LIVE
IN THE FLESH
I LIVE BY FAITH
IN THE SON OF
GOD, WHO LOVED
ME AND GAVE
HIMSELF FOR ME"**

Gal. 2:20

It is important to establish that not every use of the word flesh (sarx) in Paul's epistles is referring to evil.

Look at the twofold definition of the Greek word (sarx) translated as flesh on the opposite page. It can refer to the human physical body as well as the evil flesh nature.

Since it is the same word for both, we must depend on the context to clarify which meaning Paul refers to.

← Here are four examples, two in each category. →

The left column obviously speaks of the flesh as the physical body itself:

Just as obvious, the right column is speaking of the evil flesh nature:

Down through the ages this distinction was not always given proper emphasis. The Gnostics of Paul's day believed the cause of all evil stemmed from the fleshly physical body.

A perverse doctrine was birthed from this erroneous concept that taught its followers that the body, being inherently evil, was not important to God and doomed to perish. Therefore it really did not matter what one did in his/her body as only the spirit and the soul would be saved. Consider what was recorded of the Nicolaitans:

"NICOLAUS HAS BEEN A CAUSE OF THE WIDE-SPREAD COMBINATION OF WICKED MEN. HE, AS ONE OF THE SEVEN CHOSEN (as deacons Acts 6:5), DEPARTED FROM CORRECT DOCTRINE AND WAS IN THE HABIT OF INDIFFERENCE OF BOTH LIFE AND FOOD... THE APOSTOLIC CONSTITUTIONS DESCRIBED THEM AS SHAMELESS IN UNCLEANNESS...THE NICOLAITANS ABANDONED THEMSELVES TO PLEASURES LIKE GOATS IN A LIFE OF SHAMELESS SELF-INDULGENCE...THEY TAUGHT THE HUMAN BODY WAS EVIL AND ONLY THE SPIRIT WAS GOOD. A CHRISTIAN THEREFORE COULD DO WHATEVER HE DESIRED WITH HIS BODY BECAUSE IT HAD NO IMPORTANCE. ONLY THE SPIRIT IS THE RECIPIENT OF GRACE..." (page 83 of The Ante-Nicene Fathers- Apostolic Fathers, Vol. 1)

It is important to note that twice, in two different letters to the churches, Jesus singled out the doctrine and the deeds of the Nicolaitans as something that He hates:

"BUT THIS YOU HAVE, THAT YOU HATE THE DEEDS OF THE NICOLAITANS, WHICH I ALSO HATE." Rev. 2:6

"THUS YOU ALSO HAVE THOSE WHO HOLD THE DOCTRINE OF THE NICOLAITANS, WHICH THING I HATE." Rev. 2:15

**"...IN THE
LUSTS OF OUR FLESH,
FULFILLING
THE DESIRES OF
THE FLESH...
AND WERE BY NATURE
CHILDREN OF WRATH..."**

Eph. 2:3

**"THOSE WHO LIVE
ACCORDING TO THE FLESH
SET THEIR MINDS ON
THE THINGS OF
THE FLESH... THOSE WHO
ARE IN THE FLESH
CANNOT PLEASE GOD"**

Rom. 8:5,8

**“DO YOU NOT KNOW
THAT YOU ARE THE TEMPLE OF GOD AND
THAT THE SPIRIT OF GOD DWELLS IN YOU?
IF ANYONE DEFILES THE TEMPLE OF GOD,
GOD WILL DESTROY HIM.
FOR THE TEMPLE OF GOD IS HOLY,
WHICH TEMPLE YOU ARE.
LET NO ONE DECEIVE HIMSELF...”**

1 Cor. 3:16-18

**“NOW THE BODY IS NOT
FOR SEXUAL IMMORALITY
BUT FOR THE LORD,
AND THE LORD FOR THE BODY.”**

1 Cor. 6:13

**“I BESECH YOU
THEREFORE,
BRETHREN,
BY THE MERCIES
OF GOD,
THAT YOU PRESENT
YOUR BODIES
A LIVING SACRIFICE,
HOLY,
ACCEPTABLE TO GOD,
WHICH IS
YOUR REASONABLE
SERVICE.”**

Rom. 12:1

**THE BODY OF
THE TEMPLE**

**THE BELIEVER
OF GOD**



**A FORM OF "FLESH" (SARX) THAT IS
HOLY AND ACCEPTABLE TO GOD**

**“DO YOU NOT KNOW
THAT YOUR BODY IS
THE TEMPLE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT
WHO IS IN YOU,
WHOM YOU HAVE FROM GOD,
AND YOU ARE NOT YOUR OWN?
FOR YOU WERE BOUGHT
AT A PRICE;
THEREFORE GLORIFY GOD
IN YOUR BODY
AND IN YOUR SPIRIT,
WHICH ARE GOD’S (PROPERTY).”**

1 Cor. 6:19-20

**“NOW MAY
THE GOD
OF PEACE HIMSELF
SANCTIFY YOU
COMPLETELY;
AND MAY YOUR
WHOLE SPIRIT,
SOUL
AND BODY
BE PRESERVED
BLAMELESS AT
THE COMING OF
OUR LORD JESUS
CHRIST.”**

1 Thess. 5:23

Do not allow anyone to deceive you pertaining to the importance of the physical body (sarx/flesh) in God's sight. In the beginning man was created by God as a spirit, possessing a soul, and living in a body (Gen. 2:7). God's plan for saving fallen man is also complete; first, encompassing his spirit (Jn.3:6), then his soul (1 Pet. 1:9), and will culminate in the final act of salvation, the redemption of his body (resurrection of the dead- Rom. 8:23, 1 Cor. 15:53-54).

Therefore, it should be of no surprise that God looks for redeemed man to be found responsible as a caretaker of God's purchased possession, becoming sanctified completely in spirit, in soul (mind, will, and emotions), and in body at the return of Jesus Christ (1 Thess. 5:23). It is most important therefore, that we do not repeat the Gnostic error that all sarx (flesh) is to be considered evil and therefore the physical body (flesh) is of no importance to God. This label of inherent evil applies only to the flesh (sarx) nature that inhabits man. It does not apply to man's physical body. Yes, the physical body can be used to perform acts of evil, but must not be considered as the source from which all evil springs. It is the decision of yielding the body to either perform good or evil that Paul stresses:

“THEREFORE DO NOT LET SIN REIGN IN YOUR MORTAL BODY, THAT YOU SHOULD OBEY IT IN ITS LUSTS. AND DO NOT PRESENT YOUR MEMBERS AS INSTRUMENTS OF UNRIGHTEOUSNESS TO SIN, BUT PRESENT YOURSELVES TO GOD AS BEING ALIVE FROM THE DEAD, AND (present) YOUR MEMBERS AS INSTRUMENTS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS TO GOD...

...DO YOU NOT KNOW THAT TO WHOM YOU PRESENT YOURSELVES SLAVES TO OBEY, YOU ARE THAT ONE'S SLAVES WHOM YOU OBEY, WHETHER OF SIN LEADING TO DEATH, OR OF OBEDIENCE LEADING TO RIGHTEOUSNESS? BUT GOD BE THANKED THAT THOUGH YOU WERE SLAVES OF SIN, YET YOU OBEYED FROM THE HEART THAT FORM OF DOCTRINE TO WHICH YOU WERE DELIVERED. AND HAVING BEEN SET FREE FROM SIN, YOU BECAME SLAVES OF RIGHTEOUSNESS. I SPEAK IN HUMAN TERMS BECAUSE OF THE WEAKNESS OF YOUR FLESH. FOR JUST AS YOU PRESENTED YOUR MEMBERS AS SLAVES OF UNCLEANNESS, AND OF LAWLESSNESS LEADING TO MORE LAWLESSNESS, SO NOW PRESENT YOUR MEMBERS AS SLAVES OF RIGHTEOUSNESS FOR HOLINESS.” Rom. 6:12-19

Paul singles out the weakness of the flesh as the source of sin that causes the believer to yield his body members into the slavery of uncleanness. It is not the physical body that Paul condemns here, but the weakness of the flesh nature that is propelling sinful acts. What is the cure? It is making a decision to yield your body members with the same intensity in which you once served sin, to now present those members as slaves of righteousness for holiness (sanctification). The dedication of the physical body is part of the believer's defensive warfare against sin.

THE NATURE OF THE BEAST:

**“BELOVED, I IMPORE YOU...TO ABSTAIN FROM THE SENSUAL URGES
(THE EVIL DESIRES, THE PASSIONS OF THE FLESH, YOUR LOWER NATURE)
THAT WAGE WAR AGAINST THE SOUL.”**

1 Peter 2:11 Amplified

**“THIS WISDOM IS NOT SUCH
AS COMES DOWN FROM ABOVE,
BUT IS EARTHLY, UNSPIRITUAL (ANIMAL),
EVEN DEVILISH (DEMONIACAL).
FOR WHEREVER THERE IS JEALOUSY (ENVY)
AND CONTENTION (RIVALRY AND SELFISH
AMBITION), THERE WILL ALSO BE CONFUSION
(UNREST, DISHARMONY, REBELLION)
AND ALL SORTS OF EVIL AND VILE PRACTICES.”**

James 3:15-16 Amplified

**“FOR THOSE WHO LIVE ACCORDING TO
THE FLESH SET THEIR MINDS
ON THE THINGS OF THE FLESH...
FOR TO BE CARNALLY MINDED
IS DEATH...BECAUSE THE CARNAL MIND
IS ENMITY AGAINST GOD;
FOR IT IS NOT SUBJECT TO
THE LAW OF GOD, NOR INDEED CAN BE.
SO THEN, THOSE WHO ARE
IN THE FLESH CANNOT PLEASE GOD...”**

Rom. 8:5-8

**THE CARNAL HUMAN NATURE
WITH ITS SINFUL FRAILTIES AND PASSIONS**



A FORM OF **"FLESH"** (SARX) THAT IS
UNHOLY AND UNACCEPTABLE TO GOD

As I was typing out the various scriptures on the opposite page pertaining to the flesh nature, an old, widely-used phrase came to mind, "the nature of the beast" :

"The phrase *the nature of the beast*, having been first recorded in 1678, may have been the first noted definition. That is, *the nature of the beast* was the inherent lower nature of man; that deepest essence of evil within him... The old usage of the term *beast* would explain the origins of the phrase-- "*the nature of the beast*" is the lower/lesser and undesirable qualities within a man. it was a normal definition of *beast*, which literally described the inner base (beastly)nature of man." <http://english.com/questions/377/origin-of-the-nature-of-the-beast>

In light of what is contained in Paul's scriptures on the opposite page, as well as the definition of this widely used phrase, we begin to grasp that the flesh nature is indeed hopelessly corrupt and incapable of ever pleasing God. The nature of the beast will not allow it to behave in an acceptable manner to God.

Look carefully at the content of the scriptures on the opposite page. Paul states in Romans that the carnal mind (nature) is enmity (an enemy) with God. The reason why the flesh is enmity with God is also given: it is not subject to the Law of God, nor can it be. The passage from the apostle Peter states that the passions of the flesh, man's lower nature, is the source that wages war against the soul (mind, will and emotions). The passage from the apostle James tells us the flesh nature can only produce a brand of wisdom that is earthly, unspiritual, animal-like, devilish and demoniacal.

Where did man get such a nature? It was not created by God. This inherent sin-nature came from fallen Adam who, through sin, inherited it from fallen Lucifer. Genesis tells us that originally God created Adam and Eve in the likeness of God (Gen. 5:1). However, after the fall we read that Adam begot his own children in his own likeness (Gen. 5:3). Paul confirms that the sin nature was passed down upon all mankind:

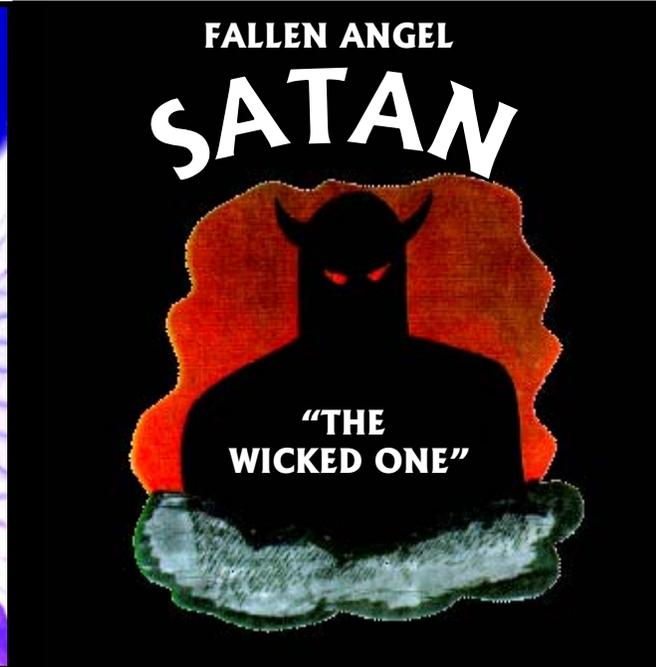
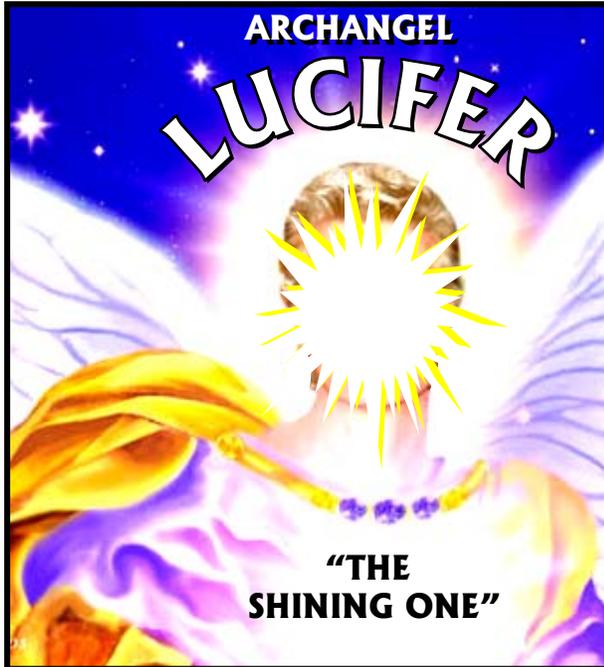
"THEREFORE, JUST AS THROUGH ONE MAN SIN ENTERED THE WORLD, AND DEATH THROUGH SIN, AND THUS DEATH SPREAD TO ALL MEN, BECAUSE ALL SINNED...DEATH REIGNED FROM ADAM... EVEN OVER THOSE WHO HAD NOT TRANSGRESSED ACCORDING TO THE LIKENESS OF THE TRANSGRESSION OF ADAM..."

Rom. 5:12-14

This is why David stated he was conceived in sin and is doomed to continue sinning right from the womb:

"BEHOLD, I WAS BROUGHT FORTH IN INIQUITY, AND IN SIN MY MOTHER CONCEIVED ME." Ps. 51:5

THE ORIGIN OF
THE NATURE OF THE BEAST:



**A HOLY NATURE
CREATED BY GOD**

BECAME

**AN UNHOLY NATURE
CREATED BY SIN**

Where did man get the carnal sin nature? According to Jesus, it was inherited from the father of fallen man, the Devil. Listen to Jesus:



“...I SPEAK WHAT I HAVE SEEN WITH MY FATHER, AND YOU DO WHAT YOU HAVE SEEN WITH YOUR FATHER. THEY ANSWERED AND SAID TO HIM, ‘ABRAHAM IS OUR FATHER.’ JESUS SAID TO THEM, ‘IF YOU WERE ABRAHAM’S CHILDREN, YOU WOULD DO THE WORKS OF ABRAHAM. BUT NOW YOU SEEK TO KILL ME... ABRAHAM DID NOT DO THIS. YOU DO THE DEEDS OF YOUR FATHER.’ THEN THEY SAID TO HIM...WE HAVE ONE FATHER -- GOD.’ JESUS SAID TO THEM, ‘IF GOD WERE YOUR FATHER, YOU WOULD LOVE ME... YOU ARE OF YOUR FATHER THE DEVIL, AND THE DESIRES OF YOUR FATHER YOU WANT TO DO. HE WAS A MURDERER FROM THE BEGINNING, AND DOES NOT STAND IN THE TRUTH, BECAUSE THERE IS NO TRUTH IN HIM. WHEN HE SPEAKS A LIE, HE SPEAKS FROM HIS OWN RESOURCES, FOR HE IS A LIAR AND THE FATHER OF IT.”

John 8:38-44

Jesus is dealing with the erroneous assumption that because man was initially created in the image of God, therefore God is still their Father. As we have stated before, Adam and Eve were created in the image of God prior to the Fall, but Genesis 5 reveals that Adam’s descendants (and all mankind) were created in the likeness of Adam after the Fall. That likeness is the fallen sin nature given to all mankind, including the Jews of Jesus’ day. Jesus clearly states that their father is the Devil, not God:

“...YOU ARE OF YOUR FATHER THE DEVIL, AND THE DESIRES OF YOUR FATHER YOU WANT TO DO.” Jn. 8:44

You have heard the cliché, “Like father, like son.” Adam passed on a carnal sin-nature inherited from Satan to all mankind. There is therefore dwelling within all descendants of Adam, just as it was within the Jews that Jesus confronted, a fallen carnal nature bent on doing the deeds of Satan who, by means of Adam’s sin, has become their father! To be subjected to such a confronting message is like being forced to endure someone dragging their fingernails across a great big chalkboard. This is not good news that Jesus is speaking! However, there is good news: God wants to become fallen mankind’s Father! By means of embracing the mandate of the new birth (“you must be born again” Jn. 3:3-5), God plants within fallen man a new nature created by God capable of combating the sin nature received from Satan. This is good news! Please note that I did not say God would **REPLACE** the sin nature with a new nature, but rather would give the believer a new supernatural nature able to **COMBAT** the carnal sin nature that dwells within. There is a big difference between those two concepts!

THE INNER-CONFLICT:

A HOLY NATURE
RECEIVED FROM GOD

VS.

AN UNHOLY NATURE
RECEIVED FROM SATAN



In 1886, at the height of the outwardly sanctimonious Victorian Age, Robert Lewis Stevenson wrote the novel, "*Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde*". It caused no small stir among people who had a tendency toward social hypocrisy. In the Victorian Age, the focus of people was on maintaining an outward appearance of respectability. The dark subject of inward lusts was a taboo topic, not discussed even among the closest of friends.

Not only was this book considered scandalous in content, but the author who penned it was noted more for his innocent children-based writings such as "*Treasure Island*" and "*Kidnapped*." Robert Lewis Stevenson was a professing Christian who was honest enough to attempt to convey what was an inward struggle for himself, even as a professing Christian. The story represents the inner conflict of humanity's sense of good and evil, an examination of the duality of human nature, that good and evil exists in all. The novel is commonly associated with the mental condition spuriously called a "split personality." In this case, the two personalities in Dr. Jekyll are apparently good and evil with completely opposite levels of morality. The novel's impact was such that the phrase "Jekyll and Hyde" came to be commonly used to describe one who is vastly different in moral character from one situation to the next. (*excerpts from Wikipedia Encyclopedia on Jekyll and Hyde*).

Although the author was a professing Christian, I find it most interesting that Robert Lewis Stevenson allowed his story to end with an unbiblical concept of evil triumphing over good. In the Bible, evil never wins in the end. However, in the conclusion of the novel, evil Mr. Hyde became the prevailing manifestation over the moral-prone Dr. Jekyll. The underlying reason is because Dr. Jekyll became more and more intrigued with the sensual, dark side of Mr. Hyde. It was a love-hate relationship for Dr. Jekyll as it is for many Christians who are likewise tempted to explore the darkest pleasures of evil. This temptation toward such evil reminds me of the scriptures that state:

**"BY FAITH MOSES...CHOOSING RATHER TO SUFFER AFFLICTION WITH THE PEOPLE OF GOD
THAN TO ENJOY THE PASSING PLEASURES OF SIN."** Heb. 11:24-25

**"...THAT YOU PUT OFF, CONCERNING YOUR FORMER CONDUCT,
THE OLD MAN WHICH GROWS CORRUPT ACCORDING TO THE DECEITFUL LUSTS..."** Eph. 4:22

Dear Christian, if you become intrigued with the pleasures of sin as did Dr. Jekyll in the novel, then the outcome for you may be like the conclusion of the book in which evil triumphs over good. The "old man" Paul refers to above is another name for "the flesh", the sin nature lurking within us (Mr. Hyde). Paul's warning is that this evil force within will grow more corrupt according to the deceitful lusts unless it is properly dealt with.

"BEAUTY AND THE BEAST"

"IF INDEED YOU HAVE HEARD HIM
AND HAVE BEEN TAUGHT BY HIM,
AS THE TRUTH IS IN JESUS..."

Eph. 4:21

"AND BE RENEWED
IN THE SPIRIT
OF YOUR MIND.
AND THAT YOU
PUT ON
THE NEW MAN
WHICH WAS
CREATED
ACCORDING
TO GOD,
IN TRUE
RIGHTEOUSNESS
AND
HOLINESS..."

Eph. 4:23-24



"...THAT YOU
PUT OFF,
CONCERNING
YOUR FORMER
CONDUCT,
THE OLD MAN
WHICH
GROWS CORRUPT
ACCORDING
TO ITS
DECEITFUL
LUSTS..."

Eph. 4:22

**A HOLY NATURE
RECEIVED FROM GOD**

VS.

**AN UNHOLY NATURE
RECEIVED FROM SATAN**

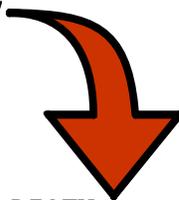
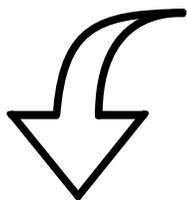
I hope you can find benefit from my selective use of the secular French fairy tale titled *“Beauty and the Beast”*, as well as the Scottish novel, *“Jekyll and Hyde”*. I am using these often-used clichés merely as teaching aids that can help to vividly bring to remembrance what the Bible presents as the inner-conflict between the spirit and the flesh natures (the new man vs. the old man) that dwell within every born-again believer in Christ.

Truly, the spirit nature is a thing of beauty created by God in true righteousness and holiness, it is not man-made. Contrarily, the flesh nature, as we have seen, is an evil beast created by Satan. The flesh is not a creation of man, but rather is an evil force dwelling within man. I have used Dr. Jekyll to represent what is good in redeemed man, and Mr. Hyde as the epitome of all that is evil that still abides within redeemed man. It is man (you) who chooses to manifest either “Jekyll or Hyde”, either “Beauty or the Beast”. May God help you to grasp this distinction.

Look carefully now at the passages on the opposite page. Paul tells the believer to **PUT OFF** something and then to **PUT ON** something else. Let this sink in: this means that “you”, the believer, are not what is being either put off or put on. Rather it is you, the believer, who makes the choice to (1) put off and (2) to put on. Think of it like a jacket you are wearing. First you must take off the jacket you are presently wearing in order to put on a new jacket. You are not the jacket are you? You are not the old jacket or the new jacket, but rather the one responsible to follow through with the commandment of the apostle Paul to put off one and to put on another. What are you to put off and put on? It is stated in the verses: (1) put off the old man and (2) put on the new man.

Look at the verses again. If you do not firmly decide to put off the old man, what are the consequences? This old man, your flesh nature (the beast-Mr. Hyde), will continue to grow corrupt according to its deceitful lusts. Like Mr. Hyde in the novel, he gets worse and worse in his behavior due to Dr. Jekyll empowering him. However, if you follow Paul's commandments (they are not suggestions), choosing to put off the old man, be renewed in the spirit of your mind (change your mind), and put on the new man, what will be the results? You will manifest a new nature created according to God in true righteousness and holiness! Hear this: it is a nature, not a list of do's and don'ts to follow. It will flow out of you just as will the evil nature if you let it manifest. Which nature are you going to let loose? Beauty or the beast? Dr. Jekyll or Mr. Hyde? This important decision is every believer's to make.

"BEAUTY AND THE BEAST"



AND HAVE
PUT ON THE NEW MAN
WHO IS RENEWED IN
KNOWLEDGE ACCORDING
TO THE IMAGE OF HIM
WHO CREATED
HIM...THEREFORE, AS THE
ELECT OF GOD, HOLY AND
BELOVED, PUT ON TENDER
MERCIES, KINDNESS,
HUMILITY, MEEKNESS,
LONGSUFFERING; BEARING
WITH ONE ANOTHER, AND
FORGIVING ONE ANOTHER,
IF ANYONE HAS A
COMPLAINT AGAINST
ANOTHER; EVEN AS CHRIST
FORGAVE YOU, SO YOU
ALSO MUST DO. BUT
ABOVE ALL THESE THINGS
PUT ON LOVE,
WHICH IS THE BOND OF
PERFECTION."

Col. 3:-10-14



PUT ON
A HOLY
NATURE
RECEIVED
FROM GOD

PUT OFF
AN UNHOLY
NATURE
RECEIVED
FROM SATAN

"...PUT TO DEATH
YOUR MEMBERS WHICH
ARE ON THE EARTH:
FORNICATION,
UNCLEANNES, PASSION,
EVIL DESIRE,
AND COVETOUSNESS, WHICH
IS IDOLATRY. BECAUSE OF
THESE THINGS THE WRATH
OF GOD IS COMING UPON
THE SONS OF DISOBEDIENCE,
IN WHICH YOU YOURSELVES
ONCE WALKED WHEN YOU
LIVED IN THEM. BUT NOW
YOU YOURSELVES ARE TO
PUT OFF ALL THESE:
ANGER, WRATH, MALICE,
BLASPHEMY, FILTHY
LANGUAGE OUT OF YOUR
MOUTH. DO NOT LIE TO
ONE ANOTHER,
SINCE YOU HAVE
PUT OFF THE OLD MAN
WITH HIS DEEDS,

It is not only in Paul's epistle to the Ephesians that he exhorts the brethren to "put off" and to "put on." This repetitious theme is given to four different churches: the church of Ephesus, the church at Colossi, the church of the Galatians and the church at Rome. Obviously, this is a great doctrinal burden upon the apostle Paul's heart to impart to all the brethren he encounters as he travels among the churches.

Consider on the opposite page what Paul wrote to the brethren in the Colossian church.

Like we saw in his epistle to the Ephesians, Paul again calls believers to

PUT OFF THE OLD MAN and to **PUT ON THE NEW MAN.**

**"PUT OFF
THE OLD MAN"**

(meaning things like)

**FORNICATION,
UNCLEANNES,
PASSION,
EVIL DESIRE,
COVETOUSNESS,
ANGER, WRATH,
MALICE, BLASPHEMY,
FILTHY LANGUAGE,
LYING TO ONE ANOTHER**

Note Paul states that because of things like these, the wrath of God is going to come upon the sons of disobedience!

Did you catch that?

They are "sons" which are disobedient to God!

What shall they receive?

Paul said they will receive the wrath of God!

Taking it even into more detail, he reveals various areas of what the believer is to put off as well as what he is to put on.

Take the time to read the passages carefully, for the things Paul singles out to put off or to put on begin to detail for us the depth of what the old man, (the flesh nature) or the new man, (the spirit nature) are capable of producing.

**"PUT ON
THE NEW MAN"**

(meaning things like)

**TENDER MERCIES,
KINDNESS,
HUMILITY,
MEEKNESS,
LONGSUFFERING;
FORBEARANCE,
FORGIVENESS,
(AND ABOVE ALL)
PUT ON LOVE**

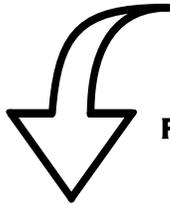
Contrast that to how Paul now speaks of those who are being obedient to God, those who are being renewed according to the image of God who created the new man. Paul identifies these as being the elect of God, holy and beloved by God (Col. 3:12).

"BEAUTY AND THE BEAST"

"I (Paul) SAY THEN:

WALK IN THE SPIRIT AND YOU SHALL NOT FULFILL THE LUSTS OF THE FLESH.
FOR THE FLESH LUSTS AGAINST THE SPIRIT, AND THE SPIRIT AGAINST THE FLESH;
AND THESE ARE CONTRARY TO ONE ANOTHER
SO THAT YOU DO NOT DO THE THINGS YOU WISH."

Gal. 5:16-17



"BUT
THE FRUIT
OF THE SPIRIT
IS LOVE,
JOY,
PEACE,
LONGSUFFERING,
KINDNESS,
GOODNESS,
FAITHFULNESS,
MEEKNESS,
SELF-CONTROL...
AND THOSE
WHO ARE CHRIST'S
HAVE CRUCIFIED
THE FLESH
WITH ITS PASSIONS
AND DESIRES."

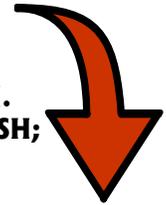
Gal. 5:22-24



A HOLY NATURE
RECEIVED FROM GOD

VS.

AN UNHOLY NATURE
RECEIVED FROM SATAN



"NOW

THE WORKS OF
THE FLESH
ARE EVIDENT,
WHICH ARE:
ADULTERY,
FORNICATION,
UNCLEANNES,
LICENTIOUSNESS,
IDOLATRY, SORCERY,
HATRED,
CONTENTIONS,
JEALOUSIES,
OUTBURSTS OF WRATH,
SELFISH AMBITIONS,
DISSENSIONS, HERESIES,
ENVY, DRUNKENNESS,
REVELRIES,
AND THE LIKE..."

Gal. 5:19-21

Not only in Colossians Chapter Three and Ephesians Chapter Four do we find Paul making a vivid contrast between flesh and spirit (old man vs. new man), but also here in his epistle to the Galatian church, he makes yet another vivid contrast containing far more illumination into these two natures. Where both Colossians and Ephesians stressed the putting off of the old man and the putting on of the new man, here in Galatians Paul enumerates what level of evil works the flesh nature can produce compared to what good fruit the spirit nature brings forth. Paul's message now centers upon a vivid contrast between the works of the flesh and the fruit of the spirit. As a summary of each category, a strong warning is given to believers:

UNDER THE WORKS OF THE FLESH:

**"OF WHICH I TELL YOU BEFOREHAND,
JUST AS I ALSO TOLD YOU IN TIME PAST,
THAT THOSE WHO PRACTICE SUCH THINGS
WILL NOT INHERIT
THE KINGDOM OF GOD."**

Gal. 5:21



UNDER THE FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT:

**"AND THOSE WHO ARE CHRIST'S
HAVE CRUCIFIED THE FLESH
WITH ITS PASSIONS AND DESIRES.
IF WE LIVE IN THE SPIRIT,
LET US ALSO WALK IN THE SPIRIT."**

Gal. 5:24-25

Dear Christian, do not be carried about with various strange doctrines! (see Heb.13:9). Better it is to listen to the inspired words of the apostle Paul. According to Paul, if a Christian continues to practice the works of the flesh as a lifestyle, he/she will not inherit the kingdom of God! "Once saved, always saved" and "unconditional eternal security" are strange doctrines which multitudes of Christians are very much carried about. Likewise, Paul states clearly that those who are Christ's must crucify the flesh with its passions and desires. Walking in the Spirit is not an option. Actually, look at the opening verse on the opposite page, for the act of walking in the Spirit is the stated formula God gives for not fulfilling the lusts of the flesh. Lay hold of this for it is a promise from God to His people:

"WALK IN THE SPIRIT AND YOU SHALL NOT FULFILL THE LUSTS OF THE FLESH." Gal. 5:16

Go back to page 233 and re-read the three agents that were at work in Paul. There was (1) Paul himself, (2) the inward man that delights in the Law of God, and (3) the evil flesh nature abiding in Paul. Two of these agents, as stated here in Galatians, are lusting against each other and are contrary to one another (Gal. 5:16-17). The flesh is lusting against and contrary to the spirit and vice-versa. It is going to take the third party to make a decision as to which of the other two will prevail. Otherwise, you do not do the things you wish, states Gal. 5:17.

SEE, I HAVE SET BEFORE YOU TODAY

(Deut. 30:15,19)



**“FOR THE FLESH LUSTS AGAINST THE SPIRIT,
AND THE SPIRIT AGAINST THE FLESH;
AND THESE ARE CONTRARY
TO ONE ANOTHER SO THAT
YOU
DO NOT DO THE THINGS YOU WISH...”**
Gal. 5:16-17



The three agents in this warfare are depicted on the opposite page. The flesh nature is totally committed to evil. It is the nature of the beast to perform acts of evil. It is what it was created to do by its evil creator, the devil. It is a nature that can do nothing else but evil. Likewise, the spirit nature is totally committed to what it was birthed to be, for it was created by God as Eph. 4:24 states, in true righteousness and holiness. It can be nothing else. Therefore, as clearly stated in Galatians, the flesh will lust against the spirit and the spirit against the flesh for these two are contrary to one another. Only the central ingredient, namely "you", are able to decide which supernatural force is going to empower you. However, you must make a firm choice between the two. Be indecisive, double-minded, uncommitted, and you will not be able to do the things you might wish you could do. Let me share with you a tale I've told time and time again to drill home the moral to the story:

There was an old Indian Chief who was led to the Lord by a missionary. Having explained the need to warfare against the Chief's weakness toward drunkenness, the missionary went his way.

Months later he returned to the reservation to visit his new convert to see how he was doing with his battle.

The Indian Chief told the missionary,

"It's like having bad black horse tied to one hand, and good white horse tied to other hand.

Bad black horse pulls me this way, good white horse pulls me other way."

So the missionary asked the Chief, "Who is winning the war?"

The old Chief thought for a while and replied,

"Depends on which horse I feed!"

(origin of story unknown)

It is not difficult to see the point.

You are the old Indian Chief, a convert to the Lord. You have a bad black horse whose name is flesh.

You also have a good white horse whose name is spirit.

These two horses don't like each other for they are contrary to one another.

Each horse wants you to feed it so it can be big and strong. You must decide which horse you want to be big and strong. You can't feed both. You can't serve both.

You need to make up your mind which horse you like best. Choose the spirit and feed him well!

Remember, if you walk after the spirit you will not fulfill the lusts of the flesh!





**FLESH
POWER**

“...depends on which horse I feed”

**SPIRIT
POWER**



CHOOSING THE POWER OF GOD



**YOU WERE
A SLAVE OF SIN...**



**NOW BE A SLAVE OF
RIGHTEOUSNESS**

**“...DO YOU NOT KNOW THAT TO WHOM YOU PRESENT YOURSELVES SLAVES TO OBEY,
YOU ARE THAT ONE'S SLAVE WHOM YOU OBEY,
WHETHER OF SIN LEADING TO DEATH, OR OF OBEDIENCE LEADING TO RIGHTEOUSNESS?
...FOR JUST AS YOU PRESENTED YOUR MEMBERS AS SLAVES OF UNCLEANNESS,
AND OF LAWLESSNESS LEADING TO MORE LAWLESSNESS,
SO NOW PRESENT YOUR MEMBERS AS SLAVES OF RIGHTEOUSNESS FOR HOLINESS.”**

Rom. 6:16-19

We have considered Paul's words to the churches of Ephesus, Colossi, and Galatia, and now he continues his vivid contrast of the pros and cons of flesh vs. spirit. This time it is in his epistle written to the church at Rome.

Paul's emphasis here in Romans is not upon the aspect of putting off the flesh, or of putting on the spirit, but rather he now begins to focus his appeal upon the aspect of choosing to present (yield) oneself unto the power of God contained within the spirit nature. Paul often would use the confrontational phrase, "Do you not know..." when he wanted to address something that he was certain the people did not have a keen awareness or sensitivity to the topic he was addressing. Here, in Romans, he gives this all-important binding principle of choice to the people of God:

**"...DO YOU NOT KNOW
THAT TO WHOM YOU PRESENT YOURSELVES SLAVES TO OBEY, YOU ARE THAT ONE'S SLAVE WHOM YOU OBEY,
WHETHER OF SIN LEADING TO DEATH, OR OF OBEDIENCE LEADING TO RIGHTEOUSNESS?" Rom. 6:16**

Here comes that fingernails on the chalkboard sensation again. Slaves? Who wants to become a slave? Let us soften up this concept a little by noting that it is the believer who is choosing to present (yield) himself/herself to become a slave in the first place. Two types of self-imposed slavery are contrasted here by Paul, (1) to be a slave of sin leading to death, and (2) to be a slave of obedience leading to righteousness. Although it takes little persuasion to convince a Christian that it is not a good idea to become a slave of sin that leads to death, it might take a lot more convincing about becoming a slave of obedience that leads to righteousness. Most Christians have become well-versed in grasping that they were truly set free from the cost of sin which is death. However, this is not Paul's complete view is it? He goes on to elaborate the purpose God has in mind for having set the believer free from the slavery of sin:

**"BUT GOD BE THANKED THAT THOUGH YOU WERE SLAVES OF SIN,
YET YOU OBEYED FROM THE HEART THAT FORM OF DOCTRINE TO WHICH YOU WERE DELIVERED.
AND HAVING BEEN SET FREE FROM SIN, YOU BECAME SLAVES OF RIGHTEOUSNESS,
...FOR JUST AS YOU PRESENTED YOUR MEMBERS AS SLAVES OF UNCLEANNESS...
SO NOW PRESENT YOUR MEMBERS AS SLAVES OF RIGHTEOUSNESS FOR HOLINESS." Rom. 6:17-19**

Paul is merely stating that we were very proficient at being obedient slaves of sin. We gave it our all, true? Then, he reasons, now apply yourself with the same level of intensity you used in being a slave to sin to become a slave of righteousness unto our God. This is the form of slavery unto which God now calls His people! On the next two pages you will find a synopsis of God's complete battle plan given to the apostle Paul that enables God's people to defeat our common foe, the flesh nature.

PAUL'S COMPREHENSIVE BATTLE PLAN

**"THIS I SAY THEN,
AND TESTIFY IN THE LORD THAT YOU
SHOULD NO LONGER WALK AS THE REST
OF THE GENTILES WALK...
YOU HAVE NOT SO LEARNED CHRIST..
IF INDEED YOU HAVE HEARD HIM
AND HAVE BEEN TAUGHT BY HIM,
AS THE TRUTH IS IN JESUS:
THAT YOU PUT OFF,
CONCERNING YOUR FORMER CONDUCT,
THE OLD MAN WHICH GROWS CORRUPT
ACCORDING TO THE DECEITFUL LUSTS,
AND BE RENEWED IN THE SPIRIT OF
YOUR MIND, AND THAT YOU
PUT ON THE NEW MAN WHICH WAS
CREATED ACCORDING TO GOD,
IN TRUE RIGHTEOUSNESS AND HOLINESS.
THEREFORE PUTTING AWAY LYING,
EACH ONE SPEAK THE TRUTH...
FOR WE ARE MEMBERS OF
ONE ANOTHER."**

(4:17-25
excerpts)

Paul's epistle to the Ephesians

**"THEREFORE
PUT TO DEATH... FORNICATION,
UNCLEANNES, PASSION, EVIL DESIRE,
AND COVETOUSNESS, WHICH IS IDOLATRY...
PUT OFF ALL THESE: ANGER, WRATH,
MALICE, BLASPHEMY, FILTHY LANGUAGE
OUT OF YOUR MOUTH. DO NOT LIE TO
ONE ANOTHER, SINCE YOU HAVE
PUT OFF THE OLD MAN WITH HIS DEEDS,
AND HAVE PUT ON THE NEW MAN WHO IS
RENEWED IN KNOWLEDGE ACCORDING TO
THE IMAGE OF HIM WHO CREATED
HIM...PUT ON TENDER MERCIES, KINDNESS,
HUMILITY, MEEKNESS, LONGSUFFERING;
BEARING WITH ONE ANOTHER,
AND FORGIVING ONE ANOTHER,
IF ANYONE HAS A COMPLAINT AGAINST
ANOTHER; EVEN AS CHRIST FORGAVE YOU,
SO YOU ALSO MUST DO. BUT ABOVE ALL
THESE THINGS PUT ON LOVE, WHICH IS
THE BOND OF PERFECTION."**

(3:5-14
excerpts)

Paul's epistle to the Colossians

FOR DEFEATING THE FLESH NATURE

"I SAY THEN:

WALK IN THE SPIRIT, AND YOU SHALL NOT FULFILL THE LUST OF THE FLESH. FOR THE FLESH LUSTS AGAINST THE SPIRIT, AND THE SPIRIT AGAINST THE FLESH... THESE ARE CONTRARY TO ONE ANOTHER...

THE WORKS OF THE FLESH ARE...

ADULTERY, FORNICATION, UNCLEANNESS, LEWDNESS, IDOLATRY, SORCERY, HATRED, CONTENTIONS, JEALOUSIES, OUTBURSTS OF WRATH, SELFISH AMBITIONS, DISSENSIONS, HERESIES, ENVY, MURDERS, DRUNKENNESS, REVELRIES, AND THE LIKE...

BUT THE FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT IS LOVE, JOY, PEACE, LONGSUFFERING, KINDNESS, GOODNESS, FAITHFULNESS, GENTLENESS, SELF-CONTROL...

AND THOSE WHO ARE CHRIST'S HAVE CRUCIFIED THE FLESH WITH ITS PASSIONS AND DESIRES.

IF WE LIVE IN THE SPIRIT, LET US ALSO WALK IN THE SPIRIT."

Paul's epistle to the **Galatians**

(5:16-25
excerpts)

"KNOWING THIS,

THAT OUR OLD MAN WAS CRUCIFIED WITH HIM, THAT THE BODY OF SIN MIGHT BE DONE AWAY WITH THAT WE SHOULD NO LONGER BE SLAVES OF SIN...

RECKON YOURSELVES DEAD TO SIN BUT ALIVE UNTO GOD IN CHRIST JESUS OUR LORD. THEREFORE DO NOT LET SIN REIGN IN YOUR MORTAL BODY, THAT YOU SHOULD OBEY IT IN ITS LUSTS...

DO YOU NOT KNOW THAT TO WHOM YOU PRESENT YOURSELVES TO OBEY, YOU ARE THAT ONE'S SLAVES WHOM YOU OBEY, WHETHER OF SIN LEADING TO DEATH, OR OF OBEDIENCE LEADING TO RIGHTEOUSNESS? ...HAVING BEEN SET FREE

FROM SIN, YOU BECAME SLAVES OF RIGHTEOUSNESS...FOR JUST AS YOU PRESENTED YOUR MEMBERS AS SLAVES OF UNCLEANNESS...SO NOW PRESENT YOUR MEMBERS AS SLAVES OF RIGHTEOUSNESS FOR HOLINESS."

Paul's epistle to the **Romans**

(6:6-19
excerpts)

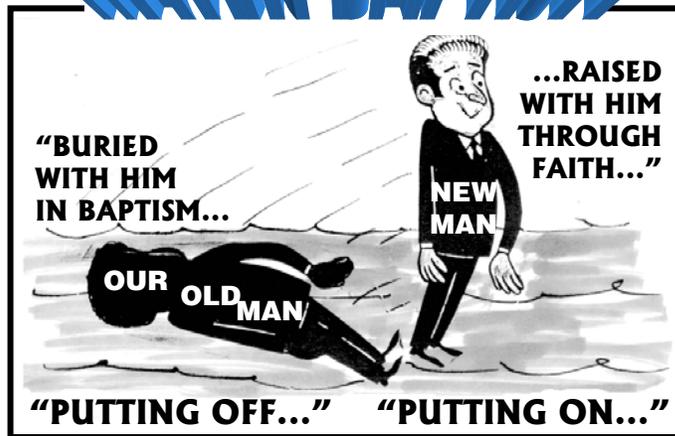
“...DO YOU NOT KNOW THAT AS MANY OF US AS WERE BAPTIZED INTO CHRIST JESUS WERE BAPTIZED INTO HIS DEATH? THEREFORE WE WERE BURIED WITH HIM THROUGH BAPTISM INTO DEATH, THAT JUST AS CHRIST WAS RAISED FROM THE DEAD... EVEN SO WE ALSO SHOULD WALK IN NEWNESS OF LIFE. FOR IF WE HAVE BEEN UNITED TOGETHER IN THE LIKENESS OF HIS DEATH, CERTAINLY WE ALSO SHALL BE IN THE LIKENESS OF HIS RESURRECTION...”

Rom. 6:3-5

“IN HIM YOU WERE ALSO CIRCUMCISED... BY PUTTING OFF THE BODY OF THE SINS OF THE FLESH, BY THE CIRCUMCISION OF CHRIST, BURIED WITH HIM IN BAPTISM, IN WHICH YOU ALSO WERE RAISED WITH HIM THROUGH FAITH...”

Col. 2:11-12

THE IMPORTANCE OF THE BELIEVER'S WATER BAPTISM



“FOR YOU ARE ALL SONS OF GOD THROUGH FAITH IN JESUS CHRIST. FOR AS MANY OF YOU AS WERE BAPTIZED INTO CHRIST HAVE PUT ON CHRIST.”

Gal. 3:26-27

“KNOWING THIS, THAT OUR OLD MAN WAS CRUCIFIED WITH HIM, THAT THE BODY OF SIN MIGHT BE DONE AWAY WITH, THAT WE SHOULD NO LONGER BE SLAVES OF SIN...”

Rom. 6: 6

“LIKEWISE YOU ALSO, RECKON YOURSELVES TO BE DEAD INDEED TO SIN, BUT ALIVE TO GOD IN CHRIST JESUS OUR LORD. THEREFORE DO NOT LET SIN REIGN IN YOUR MORTAL BODY, THAT YOU SHOULD OBEY IT IN ITS LUSTS.”

Rom. 6:11-12



"...FOR THE WEAPONS OF OUR WARFARE ARE NOT CARNAL BUT MIGHTY IN GOD FOR PULLING DOWN STRONGHOLDS, CASTING DOWN ARGUMENTS AND EVERY HIGH THING THAT EXALTS ITSELF AGAINST THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOD, BRINGING EVERY THOUGHT INTO CAPTIVITY TO THE OBEDIENCE OF CHRIST..."

2 Cor. 10:4-6



The ability to fight the good fight of faith against the evil flesh nature requires that the weapons of our warfare be totally faith-based.

Look carefully at all the scriptures on the opposite page. What do they all have in common with one another? They all describe the believer's identification with various aspects of the death, burial, and resurrection of Christ. The means of achieving that identification with Christ centers upon a faith-based action in the event commonly known as water baptism. I believe much of Christianity today is guilty of watering-down the importance of water baptism. This event has become a man-made tradition of sprinkling a believer in Christ rather than by the biblical pattern of total immersion. One can hardly fulfill a minute fraction of the specified mandate to be buried with Christ by merely being sprinkled with a little water. The Greek word translated as baptize means to be immersed, and that immersion is symbolically to be buried in a watery grave. Look again at Paul's comparison of water baptism to circumcision (Col.2:11-12). Circumcision, in the Old Covenant, was the identifying mark of belonging to God. Water baptism is the New Covenant identifying mark: the circumcision of Christ. The believer is buried with Christ in baptism and raised with Him through faith in the solemn act of baptism. These are acts of faith in Jesus Christ: Christ died—we died with Him (Rom. 6:6). Christ was buried—we were buried with Him (Rom. 6:4-5). Christ was raised from the dead—we were raised with Him (Rom. 6:4-5).

We have been methodically following Paul's repeated call for the believer in Christ to **PUT OFF** and to **PUT ON**. It is not only a decision of our will that we must make between the old man and the new man, but it is also a faith-based action to put feet to our decision. Water baptism is that action of faith in the finished work of Christ. It is a specific point of reference by which the believer can **RECKON** (count on it) to indeed be dead to sin, but now alive to God (Rom. 6:11). Water baptism is the answer of a good conscience toward God (1 Pet. 3:21)

Water baptism becomes one of the believer's arsenal of weapons for warfare that are mighty in God for the pulling down of strongholds in our lives. Water baptism becomes a day of reckoning in which the believer can call upon as a specific faith-based event that dealt with putting off the old man and putting on the new man.

MAKING FIRM PROCLAMATIONS

OF FAITH IN CHRIST:

*“You therefore
must endure
hardship
as a good
soldier of
Jesus Christ...
that he
may
please Him
who has
enlisted him
as a soldier.”
2 Tim. 2:3-4*



**“I HAVE BEEN CRUCIFIED
WITH CHRIST;
IT IS NO LONGER
I WHO LIVE,
BUT CHRIST LIVES IN ME;
AND THE LIFE
WHICH I NOW LIVE
IN THE FLESH
(IN THE PHYSICAL BODY)
I LIVE BY FAITH
IN THE SON OF GOD,
WHO LOVED ME
AND GAVE HIMSELF
FOR ME.”**

Galatians 2:20

**"AND SINCE WE HAVE THE SAME SPIRIT OF FAITH,
ACCORDING TO WHAT IS WRITTEN,
'I BELIEVED AND THEREFORE I SPOKE,'
WE ALSO BELIEVE AND THEREFORE SPEAK..."**

2 Cor. 4:13-14

**"FOR WITH THE HEART
ONE BELIEVES UNTO RIGHTEOUSNESS,
AND WITH THE MOUTH CONFESSION IS MADE
UNTO SALVATION."**

Rom. 10:10-11

The dual passages from Paul above present to all followers of Christ the need to make proclamations of faith with our mouths those things that we believe in our heart to be true. On the opposite page is such a needful proclamation of a life of faith lived in total dedication to the Lord Jesus Christ. This is a verse that I have especially used over the years whenever I have baptized a follower of Christ. As part of the baptismal ceremony, I require the one being baptized to make this verbal proclamation before the assembled witnesses.

We are to speak with our mouths what we believe in our hearts. This verse from Galatians 2:20 speaks of the underlying purpose of being water baptized into identification with the death, burial and resurrection of Jesus Christ. A proclamation is made of having been crucified with Christ. A statement is made of Christ living His life through the follower of Christ. A statement of commitment is made to live a life of faith in the Son of God. However, we err if we conclude that Galatians 2:20 is an all-inclusive, one-time-only confession of faith performed just at the time of baptism. I view the act of water baptism to be a day of reckoning, a specific point in time in which the old (flesh) man was put off and the the new (spirit) man was put on. When my evil flesh nature wants to rise up and dominate me, I remind it of a day of reckoning in which, by faith, the old man was buried in a watery grave. This is exactly what Paul was referring to in stating:

**"LIKEWISE YOU ALSO,
RECKON YOURSELVES TO BE DEAD INDEED TO SIN,
BUT ALIVE TO GOD IN CHRIST JESUS OUR LORD.
THEREFORE DO NOT LET SIN REIGN IN YOUR MORTAL BODY,
THAT YOU SHOULD OBEY IT IN ITS LUSTS."**

Rom. 6:11-12



How often must I use this day of reckoning against the old (flesh) man as a weapon of my warfare that is mighty in God to the pulling down of strongholds? The answer is, as often as needed. May I suggest that you commit to memory Galatians 2:20 so that it is always on the tip of your tongue when needed?

MAKING FIRM PROCLAMATIONS

OF FAITH IN CHRIST:

*“You therefore
must endure
hardship
as a good
soldier of
Jesus Christ...
that he
may
please Him
who has
enlisted him
as a soldier.”*

2 Tim. 2:3-4



**“THEREFORE,
SINCE CHRIST SUFFERED FOR US...
ARM YOURSELVES ALSO
WITH THE SAME MIND,
FOR HE WHO HAS SUFFERED IN
THE FLESH HAS CEASED FROM SIN,
THAT HE NO LONGER SHOULD
LIVE THE REST OF HIS TIME IN THE
FLESH FOR THE LUSTS OF MEN,
BUT FOR THE WILL OF GOD.
FOR WE HAVE SPENT ENOUGH OF
OUR PAST LIFETIME IN DOING
THE WILL OF THE GENTILES...**

**THEREFORE
LET THOSE WHO SUFFER
ACCORDING TO THE WILL OF GOD
COMMIT THEIR SOULS
TO HIM IN DOING
GOOD...”**

1 Pet. 4:1-3, 19

The apostle Peter sets Jesus Christ before the believer as an example to follow. We are told to arm ourselves with the same mind (mental outlook) that Jesus demonstrated in His sufferings while on earth. The scriptures reveal that He was tempted in all points just as we are, yet He did so without yielding to sin (Heb.4:15). Hebrews also records that in suffering such temptation Jesus is able to aid us who are being tempted (Heb. 2:18). Later on, in this same epistle to the Hebrews, Paul exhorts us as believers:

**“...LET US LAY ASIDE EVERY WEIGHT, AND THE SIN WHICH SO EASILY ENSNARES US, AND LET US RUN WITH ENDURANCE THE RACE THAT IS SET BEFORE US, LOOKING UNTO JESUS, THE AUTHOR AND FINISHER OF OUR FAITH, WHO FOR THE JOY THAT WAS SET BEFORE HIM ENDURED THE CROSS, DESPISING THE SHAME...
CONSIDER HIM WHO ENDURED SUCH HOSTILITY FROM SINNERS AGAINST HIMSELF,
LEST YOU BECOME WEARY AND DISCOURAGED IN YOUR SOULS.
YOU HAVE NOT YET RESISTED TO BLOODSHED, STRIVING AGAINST SIN...”** Heb. 12:1-5

**“...AND BEING IN AGONY, HE PRAYED MORE EARNESTLY.
THEN HIS SWEAT BECAME LIKE GREAT DROPS OF BLOOD FALLING DOWN TO THE GROUND.”** Luke 22:44

The visionary passage on the opposite page exhorts us that if we embrace the necessary cross mentality toward sin in our lives that we can cease from sin! However, it will take a willingness to, like Jesus did in His hour of temptation, “sweat blood” in striving against sin. Again, we quote from Hebrews:

“WHO IN THE DAYS OF HIS FLESH, WHEN HE HAD OFFERED UP PRAYERS AND SUPPLICATIONS, WITH VEHEMENT CRIES AND TEARS TO HIM WHO WAS ABLE TO SAVE HIM FROM DEATH, AND WAS HEARD BECAUSE OF HIS GODLY FEAR, THOUGH HE WAS A SON, YET HE LEARNED OBEDIENCE BY THE THINGS WHICH HE SUFFERED. AND HAVING BEEN PERFECTED, HE BECAME THE AUTHOR OF ETERNAL SALVATION TO ALL WHO OBEY HIM...” Heb. 5:7-9

Now Peter, in our passage on the opposite page, makes a very firm statement of fact in saying that we have spent enough of our past lifetime in doing the will of the Gentiles (who do not know God.) Hear this battle-cry: live the rest of your time on earth in doing the will of God and no longer live in the flesh for the lusts of men!

I was thirty-six when I accepted Christ. I am presently seventy-four (at the writing of this book-2014). I am thankful to now have served Christ two years longer than the thirty-six years in which I served Satan, self and sin. This proclamation of Peter is also one I recommend committing to memory that it too may be on the tip of your tongue when needed to make a firm stand of faith against the enemy which lives in us, the flesh nature.

MAKING FIRM PROCLAMATIONS OF FAITH IN CHRIST:

*“You therefore
must endure
hardship
as a good
soldier of
Jesus Christ...
that he
may
please Him
who has
enlisted him
as a soldier.”
2 Tim. 2:3-4*



**“AND DO THIS,
KNOWING THE TIME,
THAT NOW IT IS HIGH TIME
TO AWAKE OUT OF SLEEP,
FOR NOW OUR SALVATION IS NEARER
THEN WHEN WE FIRST BELIEVED.
THE NIGHT IS FAR SPENT,
THE DAY IS AT HAND.**

**THEREFORE
LET US CAST OFF THE WORKS OF DARKNESS,
AND LET US PUT ON THE ARMOR OF LIGHT.
LET US WALK PROPERLY, AS IN THE DAY,
NOT IN REVELRY AND DRUNKENNESS,
NOR IN LICENTIOUSNESS AND LEWDNESS,
NOT IN STRIFE AND ENVY.**

**BUT PUT ON
THE LORD JESUS CHRIST,
AND MAKE NO PROVISION
FOR THE FLESH
TO FULFILL ITS LUSTS.”**

Romans 13:11-14

Sin can be
a lack of
faith:
→

**“FOR WHATEVER
IS NOT FROM
FAITH IS SIN.”**

Rom 14:23

**“...TO HIM WHO KNOWS
TO DO GOOD AND DOES NOT
DO IT, TO HIM IT IS SIN.”**

Jas. 4:17

←
Sin can be
a lack of
action:

We can know what is right and still not do what is right. Paul, in this proclamation on the opposite page, is attempting to perform a wakeup call on the saints in his day. He is telling them that it is later than they think! The day of salvation is nearer than when they first believed. Paul warns that the night is far spent and the day is at hand. What would Paul say to today's saints? Are we not all the more guilty of the sin of procrastination than they? What will it take to awaken God's people in this closing hour of the dispensation of the Church age? How much more time do we think we have to get it together? Paul's message to us today would be the same:

“AND DO THIS, KNOWING THE TIME, THAT NOW IT IS HIGH TIME TO AWAKE OUT OF SLEEP...” Rom. 13:11

If you just back up one chapter, Paul stated this admonition to the saints:

“DO NOT BE OVERCOME BY EVIL, BUT OVERCOME EVIL WITH GOOD” Rom. 12:21

Now look at the second half of our proclamation on the opposite page. It states a plan of action to be followed. We are to:

**CAST OFF
THE WORKS OF DARKNESS**

and to

**PUT ON
THE ARMOR OF LIGHT**

The works of darkness are things like revelry, drunkenness, licentiousness, lewdness, strife and envy. Sounds like the works of the flesh listed in Galatians Chapter 5, doesn't it? We have yet to consider the armor of light. Notice the great mandate is to make no provision for the flesh to fulfill its lusts. You are not to “pack a lunch” for the lusts of your flesh in case it gets hungry. I remind you of Paul's dual warning in Galatians:

**“...I TELL YOU BEFOREHAND, JUST AS I TOLD YOU IN TIME PAST,
THOSE WHO PRACTICE SUCH THINGS
WILL NOT INHERIT THE KINGDOM OF GOD.”**

Gal. 5:21

**“...THOSE WHO ARE CHRIST'S
HAVE CRUCIFIED THE FLESH
WITH ITS PASSIONS AND DESIRES.”**

Gal. 5:24

“...I testify to you this day that I am innocent of the blood of all men. For I have not shunned to declare to you the whole counsel of God.”

Acts 20:26-27



**“DO NOT
BE DECEIVED,
GOD IS
NOT MOCKED;
FOR WHATEVER
A MAN SOWS,
THAT HE WILL ALSO REAP.
FOR HE WHO**

**SOWS TO HIS FLESH
WILL OF THE FLESH
REAP
CORRUPTION...”**

Galatians 6:7-8

Paul was a faithful steward of God's Word. Perhaps this is why God allowed him to write two thirds of the epistles to the churches. Paul always declared the whole counsel of God on any given subject.

As a pre-cursor, Paul gives two sober warnings in Chapter 5 of Galatians:

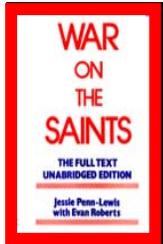
"...I TELL YOU BEFOREHAND, JUST AS I TOLD YOU IN TIME PAST, THOSE WHO PRACTICE SUCH THINGS WILL NOT INHERIT THE KINGDOM OF GOD." Gal. 5:21

"...THOSE WHO ARE CHRIST'S HAVE CRUCIFIED THE FLESH WITH ITS PASSIONS AND DESIRES." Gal. 5:24

On the heels of that double warning Paul issues, in the very next chapter, an even greater warning to God's people:

"DO NOT BE DECEIVED, GOD IS NOT MOCKED; FOR WHATEVER A MAN SOWS, THAT HE WILL ALSO REAP. FOR HE WHO SOWS TO HIS FLESH WILL OF THE FLESH REAP CORRUPTION..." Gal. 6:7-8

The consequences of willfully continuing to sow to the flesh nature is going to cause one to reap corruption. What does that mean? To this teacher of God's Word, I believe that such action, on the part of a believer, opens him/her unto demon possession.



The foundational premise of this classic work was that demons could possess a believer if a door of opportunity was given through passivity, or the willful practice of sinful behavior. Thus the warning of Paul that God is not to be mocked. If a believer continues to willfully sow to his/her sinful flesh, place is given to demon spirits to enter into the believer. It is quite ironic that the abridged version has deleted all references for a believer to be possessed by demons. If you want to read this work as it was originally written, be sure to get an unabridged version, or you will just be wasting your time following the traditions of men taught as doctrines (even "doctrines demons teach" 1 Tim. 4:1).

After spending 35 years among God's people, I have come to believe that a Christian can indeed become demon possessed by means of continuing to feed his/her corrupt flesh nature. Remember, this flesh nature was inherited from Satan. The hordes of demon spirits also belong to Satan. They are in Satan's structure of evil forces, "the rulers of the darkness of this world" (Eph. 6:12). Demons seek a flesh-driven human vessel through which they can practice their evil. The undisciplined flesh in a carnal believer becomes a strong magnetic force to attract demons.

DEMONIC MAGNETISM

DEMON SPIRITS ATTRACTED TO CARNAL FLESHLY BEHAVIOR

**SPIRIT OF
JEALOUSY**

Num. 5:14

**SPIRIT OF
ILL WILL**

Jude 9:23

**LYING
SPIRIT**

1 Kings 22:22

**PERVERSE
SPIRIT**

Isa. 19:14

**SPIRIT OF
HARLOTRY**

Hos. 4:12

**SPIRIT OF
HEAVINESS**

Isa. 61:3

**DEAF AND
DUMB SPIRIT**

Mark 9:25

**LEGION:
"WE ARE MANY"**

Mark 5:9

**SPIRIT OF
DIVINATION**

Acts 16:16

**DISTRESSING
SPIRIT**

1 Sam. 16:15

**FAMILIAR
SPIRIT**

Lev. 19:31

**SPIRIT OF
INFIRMITY**

Luke 13:11

**SPIRIT OF
STUPOR**

Rom. 11:8

**SPIRIT OF
FEAR**

2 Tim. 1:7

**DECEIVING
SPIRIT**

1 Tim. 4:1



Demonology is no light subject in the Word of God:

There are 49 references to demons in scripture. There are 19 references to unclean spirits and 6 references to evil spirits. There are 15 individual types of demon spirits recorded in scripture.

They are listed with references on the opposite page. Those accounts are worth your time to read them.

In the gospel of Mark, Jesus spent one-third of His recorded deeds dealing with casting out demon spirits. Among the things Jesus gave to His disciples was delegated authority to use His Name specifically to cast out demon spirits (Mark 16:17). The casting out of demons was a supernatural sign that the Kingdom of God was at work on the earth (Luke 11:20). Jesus cast out seven demons from Mary Magdalene (Mark 16:9). Jesus cast out a legion (about 2,000) of demons out of a tormented madman living in the tombs who could not be bound even with strong chains. Night and day he cut himself with stones due to the demons raising havoc within him (Mark 5:1-11-read this story).

The seven sons of the High Priest Sceva attempted to cast out demons by using the Name of Jesus which they heard the apostle Paul use. The demons said, "...'Jesus I know, and Paul I know, but who are you?' Then the man, in whom the evil spirit was, leaped on them, overpowered them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded." (Acts 19:16-17). Seven against one was no match for the power of a demon-possessed person. What is the point? Demons have great power and strength against mere humans devoid of God's power.

Where did demon spirits originate? Where do they get such power to torment defenseless man? It is the conviction of this teacher of God's Word that demons became the by-product from God's judgment of wickedness on earth in the days of Noah:

"NOW IT CAME TO PASS, WHEN MEN BEGAN TO MULTIPLY ON THE FACE OF THE EARTH, AND DAUGHTERS WERE BORN TO THEM, THAT THE SONS OF GOD SAW THE DAUGHTERS OF MEN, THAT THEY WERE BEAUTIFUL; AND THEY TOOK WIVES FOR THEMSELVES OF ALL WHOM THEY CHOSE. AND THE LORD SAID, 'MY SPIRIT SHALL NOT STRIVE WITH MAN FOREVER, FOR HE IS INDEED FLESH; YET HIS DAYS SHALL BE ONE HUNDRED AND TWENTY YEARS.' THERE WERE GIANTS ON THE EARTH IN THOSE DAYS, AND ALSO AFTERWARD, WHEN THE SONS OF GOD CAME IN TO THE DAUGHTERS OF MEN AND THEY BORE CHILDREN TO THEM. THOSE WERE THE MIGHTY MEN WHO WERE OF OLD, MEN OF RENOWN. THEN THE LORD SAW THAT THE WICKEDNESS OF MAN WAS GREAT IN THE EARTH, AND THAT EVERY INTENT OF THE THOUGHTS OF HIS HEART WAS ONLY EVIL CONTINUALLY..."

Gen. 6:1-5

**“NOW IT CAME TO PASS,
WHEN MEN BEGAN TO MULTIPLY ON
THE FACE OF THE EARTH,
AND DAUGHTERS WERE BORN TO THEM,
THAT THE SONS OF GOD
(FALLEN ANGELIC BEINGS)
SAW THE DAUGHTERS OF MEN,
THAT THEY WERE BEAUTIFUL;
AND**

**THEY TOOK WIVES
FOR THEMSELVES
OF ALL WHOM THEY CHOSE...
WHEN THE SONS OF GOD
(FALLEN ANGELIC BEINGS)**

**CAME IN TO
THE DAUGHTERS OF MEN
AND THEY BORE
CHILDREN TO THEM.
THOSE WERE
THE MIGHTY MEN
WHO WERE OF OLD,
MEN OF RENOWN.**

**THEN THE LORD SAW THAT
THE WICKEDNESS OF MAN
WAS GREAT IN THE EARTH,
AND THAT EVERY INTENT
OF THE THOUGHTS OF HIS HEART
WAS ONLY EVIL CONTINUALLY...”**

Gen. 6:1-5



**“AND AS IT WAS
IN THE DAYS OF NOAH,
SO IT WILL BE ALSO IN THE DAYS
OF THE SON OF MAN:**

**THEY ATE,
THEY DRANK,
THEY MARRIED WIVES,
THEY WERE
GIVEN IN MARRIAGE,
UNTIL THE DAY
THAT NOAH
ENTERED THE ARK,
AND THE FLOOD CAME
AND DESTROYED THEM ALL.**

— LIKEWISE —

**AS IT WAS ALSO IN
THE DAYS OF LOT:
THEY ATE, THEY DRANK,
THEY BOUGHT, THEY SOLD,
THEY PLANTED, THEY BUILT;
BUT ON THE DAY THAT LOT WENT
OUT OF SODOM IT RAINED FIRE
AND BRIMSTONE FROM HEAVEN
AND DESTROYED THEM ALL.
EVEN SO WILL IT BE
IN THE DAY WHEN
THE SON OF MAN IS REVEALED.”**

Luke 17:26-30

Genesis Chapter Six details the cause of the Flood in Noah's day. As stated on the opposite page, "...the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was on evil continually." Bad as that was, there was something even worse taking place. Fallen angels ("the Sons of God") began to select the daughters of men for their own wives and those wives bore children to them. These supernatural children were a mix between angelic beings and human beings. So supernaturally strong were these creatures that they developed the reputation of being the mighty men of old, men of renown. They were part angel, but had physical (human-like) bodies.

It was this perverse offspring of fallen angelic and fallen human beings that brought on the flood to destroy every living creature on earth (except Noah and his family and the selected pairs of animals God spared.) The human race was badly contaminated through the forbidden sexual encounters between fallen angels and wicked humans. Both had to be destroyed or this perverted off-shoot of humanity would continue to multiply. After the flood, God locked up this group of fallen angels in a special place in the lower parts of the earth until the day of judgment (Jude 5-6). However, although the bulk of the human race died physically in the Flood, the off-spring of fallen angels became disembodied spirits. Wicked offspring of fallen angels no longer had human-like bodies in which they could continue to practice their wicked ways. Demon (disembodied) spirits were created. Their sole desire now becomes to find on earth, a new batch of flesh-driven, wicked human beings (like those in Genesis 6) in which this horde of demonically-perverse offspring of fallen angels could inhabit once again human physical bodies in order to resume practicing their evil purposes.

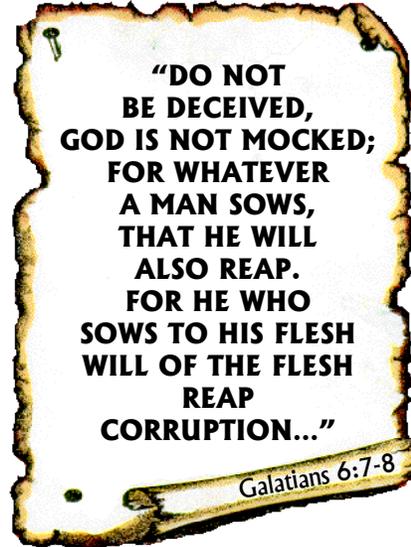
On the opposite page also is a prophetic depiction of a repeat of the days of Noah just prior to the return of Jesus Christ. It just may indicate that what happened in Genesis Chapter 6 is going to take place once again. The only way that being "given in marriage" can be considered an evil thing is by making the connection (as Jesus does) back to the perverse days of Noah in which angelic beings married human beings and produced a new strain of man, half angel-half human.

Think about this: perhaps the current rage in this country based on the rights of the people to legally justify "men marrying men" and "women marrying women", is a pre-cursor sign of what lies ahead for our present world as the prophetic re-occurrence of demonically perverted marriages draws near once more.

"FOR THE WRATH OF GOD IS REVEALED FROM HEAVEN AGAINST ALL UNGODLINESS AND UNRIGHTEOUSNESS OF MEN, WHO SUPPRESS THE TRUTH IN UNRIGHTEOUSNESS...

THEREFORE GOD ALSO GAVE THEM UP TO UNCLEANNES, IN THE LUSTS OF THEIR HEARTS, TO DISHONOR THEIR BODIES AMONG THEMSELVES...FOR THIS REASON GOD GAVE THEM UP TO VILE PASSIONS. FOR EVEN THEIR WOMEN EXCHANGED THE NATURAL USE FOR WHAT IS AGAINST NATURE. LIKEWISE ALSO THE MEN, LEAVING THE NATURAL USE OF THE WOMAN, BURNED IN THEIR LUST FOR ONE ANOTHER, MEN WITH MEN COMMITTING WHAT IS SHAMEFUL, AND RECEIVING IN THEMSELVES THE PENALTY OF THEIR ERROR WHICH WAS DUE. AND EVEN AS THEY DID NOT LIKE TO RETAIN GOD IN THEIR KNOWLEDGE, GOD GAVE THEM OVER TO A DEBASED MIND, TO DO THOSE THINGS WHICH ARE NOT FITTING. BEING FILLED WITH ALL UNRIGHTEOUSNESS, SEXUAL IMMORALITY, WICKEDNESS, COVETOUSNESS, MALICIOUSNESS; FULL OF ENVY, MURDER, STRIFE,

DECEIT, EVIL-MINDEDNESS; THEY ARE WHISPERERS, BACKBITERS, HATERS OF GOD, VIOLENT, PROUD, BOASTERS, INVENTORS OF EVIL THINGS, DISOBEDIENT TO PARENTS, UNDISCERNING, UNTRUSTWORTHY, UNLOVING, UNFORGIVING, UNMERCIFUL;



WHO, KNOWING THE RIGHTEOUS JUDGMENT OF GOD, THAT THOSE WHO PRACTICE SUCH THINGS ARE DESERVING OF DEATH, NOT ONLY DO THE SAME BUT ALSO APPROVE OF THOSE WHO PRACTICE THEM."

Rom. 1:18-32 excerpts

"THEREFORE YOU ARE INEXCUSABLE, O MAN, WHOEVER YOU ARE WHO JUDGE, FOR IN WHATEVER YOU JUDGE ANOTHER YOU CONDEMN YOURSELF; FOR YOU WHO JUDGE PRACTICE THE SAME THINGS. BUT WE KNOW THAT THE JUDGMENT OF GOD IS ACCORDING TO TRUTH AGAINST THOSE WHO PRACTICE SUCH THINGS. AND DO YOU THINK THIS, O MAN, YOU WHO JUDGE THOSE PRACTICING SUCH THINGS, AND DOING THE SAME, THAT YOU WILL ESCAPE THE JUDGMENT OF GOD? OR DO YOU DESPISE THE RICHES OF HIS GOODNESS, FORBEARANCE, AND LONGSUFFERING, NOT KNOWING THAT THE GOODNESS OF GOD LEADS YOU TO REPENTANCE? BUT IN ACCORDANCE WITH YOUR HARDNESS AND YOUR IMPENITENT HEART YOU ARE TREASURING UP FOR YOURSELF WRATH IN THE DAY OF WRATH AND REVELATION OF THE RIGHTEOUS JUDGMENT OF GOD..."

Rom. 2:1-6

Read carefully on the opposite page the account of the judgment of God spelled out in the first two chapters of Romans. They portray the righteous judgment of God coming upon those who practice wickedness. One is stated as a past-tense account of the wrath of God (Rom. 1), and the other is a warning of the wrath of God yet to come on those who repeat such wickedness as recorded in Chapter 1.

Repeatedly, Chapter 1 stresses that God **GAVE THEM UP** to the lusts of their hearts to dishonor their bodies, that He **GAVE THEM UP** to vile passions to commit what is shameful (like men with men and women with women), and that God **GAVE THEM OVER** to a debased mind to do those things that are unfitting. A list of 21 examples follows of things that God considers unfitting behavior that is worthy of the wrath of God.

In “giving them up” and “giving them over”, we are introduced to a judgmental curse placed upon them by God. My suspicion is that they were turned over by God to possession by demon spirits for their wickedness. We have a precedent given to us for such action by God in the story of King Saul:

“BUT THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD DEPARTED FROM SAUL, AND A DISTRESSING SPIRIT FROM THE LORD TROUBLED HIM. AND SAUL'S SERVANTS SAID TO HIM, "SURELY, A DISTRESSING SPIRIT FROM GOD IS TROUBLING YOU. LET OUR MASTER NOW COMMAND YOUR SERVANTS, WHO ARE BEFORE YOU, TO SEEK OUT A MAN WHO IS A SKILLFUL PLAYER ON THE HARP. AND IT SHALL BE THAT HE WILL PLAY IT WITH HIS HAND WHEN THE DISTRESSING SPIRIT FROM GOD IS UPON YOU, AND YOU SHALL BE WELL.” 1 Sam. 16:14-16

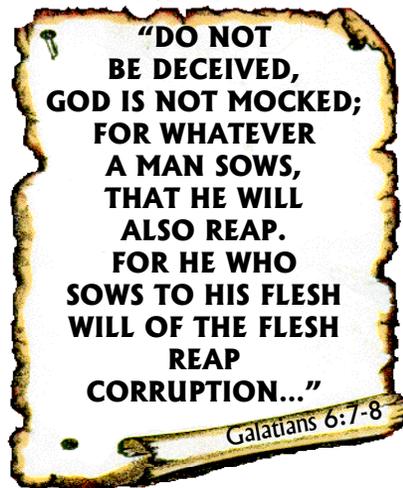
If you take the time to read the whole story in 1 Samuel, you will find that King Saul harbored ongoing envy and suspicion of David. It led to deep seeds of hatred and even attempted murder of David. King Saul's often manifestations of the works of his flesh opened the door for a somber judgment of God to come upon the King of Israel: God removed the Spirit of the Lord from Saul and replaced it with a distressing evil spirit from the Lord. All the people knew this was an evil spirit sent from the Lord! I doubt many of God's people today would believe such a thing to be possible. Today's soft theology focuses on the goodness of God, but not equally His severity (Rom. 11: 22).

Look again at the opposite page detailing the contents of Romans Chapters 1 and 2. I have placed center-stage the sober warning of the apostle Paul from Galatians 6 written to New Testament, blood-washed believers in Christ: “Do not be deceived, God is not mocked.” King Saul mocked His God by his actions, and God judged him with a severe judgment. He took away the Spirit of the Lord and replaced it with a distressing spirit from the Lord.

"IT IS ACTUALLY REPORTED THAT THERE IS SEXUAL IMMORALITY AMONG YOU, AND SUCH SEXUAL IMMORALITY AS IS NOT EVEN NAMED AMONG THE GENTILES THAT A MAN HAS HIS FATHER'S WIFE! AND YOU ARE PUFFED UP, AND HAVE NOT RATHER MOURNED, THAT HE WHO HAS DONE THIS DEED MIGHT BE TAKEN AWAY FROM AMONG YOU. FOR I INDEED, AS ABSENT IN BODY BUT PRESENT IN SPIRIT, HAVE ALREADY JUDGED (AS THOUGH I WERE PRESENT) HIM WHO HAS SO DONE THIS DEED. IN THE NAME OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST, WHEN YOU ARE GATHERED TOGETHER, ALONG WITH MY SPIRIT, WITH THE POWER OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST, **DELIVER SUCH A ONE TO SATAN FOR THE DESTRUCTION OF THE FLESH,** THAT HIS SPIRIT MAY BE SAVED IN THE DAY OF THE LORD JESUS." 1 Cor. 5:1-5

"BUT THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD DEPARTED FROM SAUL, AND A DISTRESSING SPIRIT FROM THE LORD TROUBLED HIM..."

1 Sam 16:14



"THEREFORE HEAR THE WORD OF THE LORD: I SAW THE LORD SITTING ON HIS THRONE... AND THE LORD SAID, 'WHO WILL PERSUADE AHAB TO GO UP, THAT HE MAY FALL AT RAMOTH GILEAD?'... THEN A SPIRIT CAME FORWARD AND STOOD BEFORE THE LORD, AND SAID... 'I WILL GO OUT AND **BE A LYING SPIRIT IN THE MOUTH OF ALL HIS PROPHETS.'** AND THE LORD SAID, 'YOU SHALL PERSUADE HIM, AND ALSO PREVAIL. GO OUT AND DO SO.' 1 Kings 22:19-23

"...HIS FELLOW SERVANT FELL DOWN AT HIS FEET AND BEGGED HIM, SAYING, 'HAVE PATIENCE WITH ME, AND I WILL PAY YOU ALL.' AND HE WOULD NOT, BUT WENT AND THREW HIM INTO PRISON TILL HE SHOULD PAY THE DEBT. SO WHEN HIS FELLOW SERVANTS SAW WHAT HAD BEEN DONE, THEY WERE VERY GRIEVED, AND CAME AND TOLD THEIR MASTER ALL THAT HAD BEEN DONE. THEN HIS MASTER, AFTER HE HAD CALLED HIM, SAID TO HIM, 'YOU WICKED SERVANT! I FORGAVE YOU ALL THAT DEBT BECAUSE YOU BEGGED ME SHOULD YOU NOT ALSO HAVE HAD COMPASSION ON YOUR FELLOW SERVANT, JUST AS I HAD PITY ON YOU?' **AND HIS MASTER WAS ANGRY, AND DELIVERED HIM TO THE TORTURERS UNTIL HE SHOULD PAY ALL THAT WAS DUE TO HIM. 'SO MY HEAVENLY FATHER ALSO WILL DO TO YOU IF EACH OF YOU, FROM HIS HEART, DOES NOT FORGIVE HIS BROTHER HIS TRESPASSES."** Matt. 18:28-35

THE MORAL TO THE STORY

**“FOR THE TIME HAS COME FOR JUDGMENT TO BEGIN AT THE HOUSE OF GOD;
AND IF IT BEGINS WITH US FIRST,
WHAT WILL BE THE END OF THOSE WHO DO NOT OBEY THE GOSPEL OF GOD?
NOW ‘IF THE RIGHTEOUS ONE IS SCARCELY SAVED, WHERE WILL THE UNGODLY AND THE SINNER APPEAR?’”**

1 Peter 4:17-18

At times, God’s judgment falls upon His own people as well as the wicked. King Saul was one example of the power of a flesh-filled life that resulted in the righteous judgment of God being applied to the King of Israel. God took away from King Saul His Holy Spirit and replaced it with an unholy one. Likewise, it happened to King Ahab, the King of Israel. God determined that Ahab must be brought down due to his wickedness. God used a lying spirit to accomplish the downfall of His wayward king.

Then Jesus tells a long parable to Peter who was having trouble forgiving one of his brethren. How did this story end? The unforgiving servant, in this parable, who was forgiven much himself is turned over to the torturers (demons) until he forgives.

Then we have the story of a Christian whose life-style was worse than the pagan unbelievers. He was having a sexual relationship with his father’s wife. The church knew about it, but did nothing about it. What did Paul do? He turned him over to Satan (demons) for the destruction of his flesh. Let us not forget what we saw in Romans 1 and 2. Paul’s warning to believers is severe:

“THEREFORE YOU ARE INEXCUSABLE, O MAN, WHOEVER YOU ARE WHO JUDGE, FOR IN WHATEVER YOU JUDGE ANOTHER YOU CONDEMN YOURSELF; FOR YOU WHO JUDGE PRACTICE THE SAME THINGS. BUT WE KNOW THAT THE JUDGMENT OF GOD IS ACCORDING TO TRUTH AGAINST THOSE WHO PRACTICE SUCH THINGS. AND DO YOU THINK THIS, O MAN, YOU WHO JUDGE THOSE PRACTICING SUCH THINGS, AND DOING THE SAME, THAT YOU WILL ESCAPE THE JUDGMENT OF GOD?... BUT IN ACCORDANCE WITH YOUR HARDNESS AND YOUR IMPENITENT HEART YOU ARE TREASURING UP FOR YOURSELF WRATH IN THE DAY OF WRATH AND REVELATION OF THE RIGHTEOUS JUDGMENT OF GOD...” Rom. 2:1-6

These too, are vivid examples of those whom God testified that He “gave them up” or “gave them over” to demon spirits because they would not deal with unbridled fleshly lusts. Truly, God is not one to be mocked and especially by His own people. Judgment begins at the House of God as these vivid examples testify.

My appeal is a simple one. Better it is to fight the good fight of faith against your evil flesh nature. If you do not, it can get worse for you through the attracting of demon spirits to your flesh. They are not easy to get rid of. Jesus warned:

"WHEN AN UNCLEAN SPIRIT GOES OUT OF A MAN, HE GOES THROUGH DRY PLACES, SEEKING REST, AND FINDS NONE. THEN HE SAYS, 'I WILL RETURN TO MY HOUSE FROM WHICH I CAME.' AND WHEN HE COMES, HE FINDS IT EMPTY, SWEEPED, AND PUT IN ORDER. THEN HE GOES AND TAKES WITH HIM SEVEN OTHER SPIRITS MORE WICKED THAN HIMSELF, AND THEY ENTER AND DWELL THERE; AND THE LAST STATE OF THAT MAN IS WORSE THAN THE FIRST. SO SHALL IT ALSO BE WITH THIS WICKED GENERATION."

Matt. 12:43-45

Yes, in the Name of Jesus, demons can be cast out. However, if the house (your body) is not fortified by a firm commitment to God, then that cast-out demon will attempt to return with seven of his friends who are stronger than he was. Note the last state of that individual will be worse than at the first. The apostle Peter also gives a similar warning, to God's people, about the latter end becoming worse than the beginning:

"...FOR BY WHOM A PERSON IS OVERCOME, BY HIM ALSO HE IS BROUGHT INTO BONDAGE. FOR IF, AFTER THEY HAVE ESCAPED THE POLLUTIONS OF THE WORLD THROUGH THE KNOWLEDGE OF THE LORD AND SAVIOR JESUS CHRIST, THEY ARE AGAIN ENTANGLED IN THEM AND OVERCOME, THE LATTER END IS WORSE FOR THEM THAN THE BEGINNING. FOR IT WOULD HAVE BEEN BETTER FOR THEM NOT TO HAVE KNOWN THE WAY OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, THAN HAVING KNOWN IT, TO TURN FROM THE HOLY COMMANDMENT DELIVERED TO THEM. BUT IT HAS HAPPENED TO THEM ACCORDING TO THE TRUE PROVERB: 'A DOG RETURNS TO HIS OWN VOMIT,' AND, 'A SOW, HAVING WASHED, TO HER WALLOWING IN THE MIRE.'"

2 Peter 2:19-22

And finally, consider once more this admonition to God's people:

"...LET US CAST OFF THE WORKS OF DARKNESS, AND LET US PUT ON THE ARMOR OF LIGHT. LET US WALK PROPERLY, AS IN THE DAY, NOT IN REVELRY AND DRUNKENNESS, NOR IN LICENTIOUSNESS AND LEWDNESS, NOT IN STRIFE AND ENVY. BUT PUT ON THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, AND MAKE NO PROVISION FOR THE FLESH TO FULFILL ITS LUSTS."

Romans 13:12-14

In our final chapter, we will examine the armor of light, which is also called the armor of God.

**“LET US CAST OFF
THE WORKS OF DARKNESS,**

CHAPTER SEVEN

“THE ARMOR OF LIGHT”

**AND LET US PUT ON
THE ARMOR OF LIGHT.”** Romans 13:12



**“FINALLY,
MY BRETHREN,
BE STRONG IN THE LORD
AND IN THE POWER OF HIS MIGHT.
PUT ON THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD,
THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO STAND
AGAINST THE WILES OF THE DEVIL...
THEREFORE TAKE UP THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD,
THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO WITHSTAND IN THE EVIL DAY,
AND HAVING DONE ALL, TO STAND.”**

Eph. 6:10-13

**TRUTH
RIGHTEOUSNESS
PEACE
FAITH
SALVATION
THE WORD
PRAYER**



Paul sums up with one word our warfare: **STAND.**

Four times repeated in this exhortation from Paul is the call to stand. The ability to do so requires all soldiers of Jesus Christ to take up the whole armor of God. It is the only thing that can withstand the onslaught of the enemies we face in this evil day. It is the armor of God that Paul states will enable the believer to be strong in the Lord and in the power of His might. We have no might or power, of our own making, that is capable of withstanding the forces of darkness arrayed against us. Our enemy is supernatural, so must be the armor we use against our foes:

**“STAND THEREFORE,
HAVING GIRDED YOUR WAIST WITH TRUTH, HAVING PUT ON THE BREASTPLATE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS,
AND HAVING SHOD YOUR FEET WITH THE PREPARATION OF THE GOSPEL OF PEACE;
ABOVE ALL,
TAKING THE SHIELD OF FAITH WITH WHICH YOU WILL BE ABLE TO QUENCH ALL THE FIERY DARTS OF THE WICKED ONE.
AND TAKE THE HELMET OF SALVATION, AND THE SWORD OF THE SPIRIT, WHICH IS THE WORD OF GOD;
PRAYING ALWAYS WITH ALL PRAYER AND SUPPLICATION IN THE SPIRIT,
BEING WATCHFUL TO THIS END WITH ALL PERSEVERANCE AND SUPPLICATION FOR ALL THE SAINTS.”**

Eph. 6:14-18

"FINALLY,
MY BRETHREN,
BE STRONG
IN THE LORD
AND IN THE POWER
OF HIS MIGHT.
PUT ON THE
WHOLE ARMOR
OF GOD,
THAT YOU
MAY BE ABLE TO STAND
AGAINST THE WILES
OF THE DEVIL...
THEREFORE
TAKE UP
THE WHOLE
ARMOR OF GOD,
THAT YOU
MAY BE ABLE
TO WITHSTAND
IN THE EVIL DAY,
AND HAVING
DONE ALL,
TO STAND.

THE ARMOR OF GOD



STAND
THEREFORE,
HAVING GIRDED YOUR
WAIST WITH TRUTH,
HAVING PUT ON THE
BREASTPLATE OF
RIGHTEOUSNESS,
AND HAVING SHOD YOUR
FEET WITH THE
PREPARATION OF THE
GOSPEL OF PEACE;
ABOVE ALL,
TAKING THE SHIELD OF
FAITH WITH WHICH YOU
WILL BE ABLE TO QUENCH
ALL THE FIERY DARTS OF
THE WICKED ONE.
AND TAKE THE HELMET
OF SALVATION,
AND THE SWORD OF
THE SPIRIT, WHICH IS
THE WORD OF GOD;
PRAYING ALWAYS WITH
ALL PRAYER AND
SUPPLICATION
IN THE SPIRIT,
BEING WATCHFUL TO THIS
END WITH ALL
PERSEVERANCE AND
SUPPLICATION FOR ALL
THE SAINTS."

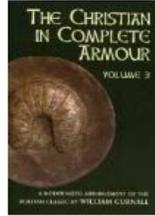
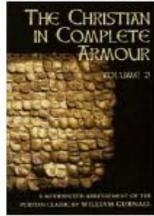
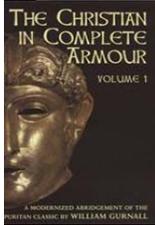
Eph. 6:10-18

THE ARMOR OF GOD

TRUTH
RIGHTEOUSNESS
PEACE
FAITH
SALVATION
WORD OF GOD
PRAYER

THE ARMOR OF LIGHT

<http://www.amazon.com/Christian-Complete-Armour-Modernized-Abridgement>



An in-depth work on the armor of God is this Puritan classic by William Gurnall first written in 1665. I do not recommend the original version because it was written in archaic, Elizabethan English. You may not survive it's difficulty. I did not. However, there is a modern-day English version that captures the content without the difficult language. No small work was Gurnall's exposition of the armor of God (1200 pages). The new version is in three volumes!

If you take my recommendation to read this classic work, I will point out a slight difference in point of view in that Gurnall perceived the armor of God as containing six pieces of armor with prayer being an overall guide to the six. However, I believe it is seven individual pieces that constitute the full armor of God as presented in Ephesians 6. Seven is one of God's numbers portraying divine perfection or completion while the number six is always attributed to being the number of man. Regardless of that slight distinction, there are few in-depth works written on the armor of God, and none like William Gurnall's 1200 page work. I recommend it!

Displayed on the opposite page are the seven pieces of divine armor which Paul lists in Ephesians 6. These seven pieces of armor represent the power of God's might, and is quite sufficient to enable the believer to become strong in the Lord (Eph. 6:10). None of these pieces of armor are man-made, but are spiritual in content. The seven together represent what is needed to make us able to stand complete and perfect against all foes.

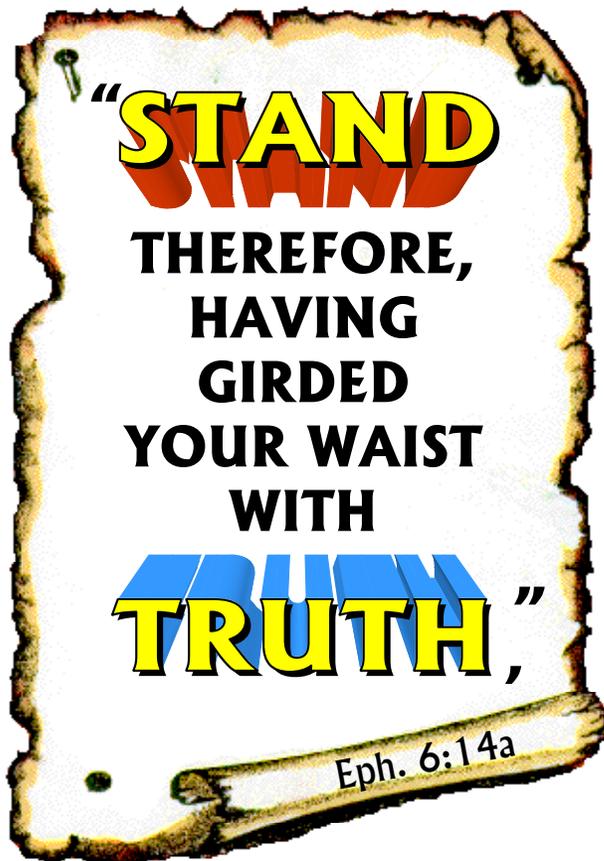
I stated this point in the beginning of this book that putting on the armor of God is not some mystical dress rehearsal in which the Christian goes through the motions of applying these seven things to their person by faith. Rather, these are seven practical areas that depict what should be readily evidenced as the normal Christian life. It is living a life of truth, a life of practicing righteousness, a life centered upon ministering the gospel of peace to those alienated from God by sin, a life lived by faith in God. It is a life evidencing the full plan of salvation God brings first to the spirit, then to the soul and finally, at the resurrection, salvation (eternal life) comes to the body. It is a life guided by the contents of the Word of God, a life dominated by all manner of persevering prayer not just for self, but for all the saints in need. This is the complete armor of God, the weapons of our warfare that are mighty in God for the pulling down of satanic strongholds arrayed against us (2 Cor. 10:4-5).

"FINALLY,
MY BRETHREN,
BE STRONG
IN THE LORD
AND IN THE POWER
OF HIS MIGHT.
PUT ON THE
WHOLE ARMOR
OF GOD,
THAT YOU
MAY BE ABLE TO STAND
AGAINST THE WILES
OF THE DEVIL...
THEREFORE
TAKE UP
THE WHOLE
ARMOR OF GOD,
THAT YOU
MAY BE ABLE
TO WITHSTAND
IN THE EVIL DAY,
AND HAVING
DONE ALL,
TO STAND.

THE ARMOR OF GOD



STAND
THEREFORE,
HAVING GIRDED YOUR
WAIST WITH TRUTH,
HAVING PUT ON THE
BREASTPLATE OF
RIGHTEOUSNESS,
AND HAVING SHOD YOUR
FEET WITH THE
PREPARATION OF THE
GOSPEL OF PEACE;
ABOVE ALL,
TAKING THE SHIELD OF
FAITH WITH WHICH YOU
WILL BE ABLE TO QUENCH
ALL THE FIERY DARTS OF
THE WICKED ONE.
AND TAKE THE HELMET
OF SALVATION,
AND THE SWORD OF
THE SPIRIT, WHICH IS
THE WORD OF GOD;
PRAYING ALWAYS WITH
ALL PRAYER AND
SUPPLICATION
IN THE SPIRIT,
BEING WATCHFUL TO THIS
END WITH ALL
PERSEVERANCE AND
SUPPLICATION FOR ALL
THE SAINTS."
Eph. 6:10-18



**“THE DEVIL..DOES NOT STAND IN THE TRUTH, BECAUSE THERE IS NO TRUTH IN HIM.
WHEN HE SPEAKS A LIE, HE SPEAKS FROM HIS OWN RESOURCES, FOR HE IS A LIAR AND THE FATHER OF IT.”**
John 8:43-45

The first piece of God's armor that we must take up is **TRUTH**. It is God's defense against Satan's **LIES**. Contrasted to Satan promoting lies, Jesus Christ is called the Truth (Jn.14:6), the Holy Spirit is called the Spirit of truth (Jn.15:26), the Word of God is called truth (Jn. 17:17), and God's people on earth, the church of the living God, are identified by Paul as the pillar and ground of the truth (1 Tim. 3:15). It is plain to see why we are in a warfare with Satan! All that he is, we are not. All that we are, he is not. Wearing the armor of truth identifies who is a believer in God, while lying reveals who is part of the opposing forces of darkness. Scripture depicts the last days will herald in Antichrist, the man of sin, who is enabled by Satan to work lying wonders and unrighteous deception among people who would not receive the love of the truth. Therefore they will believe a lie because they refused to believe the truth. Paul reveals this unfolding yet to come:

“THE COMING OF THE LAWLESS ONE IS ACCORDING TO THE WORKING OF SATAN, WITH ALL POWER, SIGNS, AND LYING WONDERS, AND WITH ALL UNRIGHTEOUS DECEPTION AMONG THOSE WHO PERISH, BECAUSE THEY DID NOT RECEIVE THE LOVE OF THE TRUTH, THAT THEY MIGHT BE SAVED. AND FOR THIS REASON GOD WILL SEND THEM STRONG DELUSION, THAT THEY SHOULD BELIEVE THE LIE, THAT THEY ALL MAY BE CONDEMNED WHO DID NOT BELIEVE THE TRUTH BUT HAD PLEASURE IN UNRIGHTEOUSNESS.

BUT WE ARE BOUND TO GIVE THANKS TO GOD ALWAYS FOR YOU, BRETHREN BELOVED BY THE LORD, BECAUSE GOD FROM THE BEGINNING CHOSE YOU FOR SALVATION THROUGH SANCTIFICATION BY THE SPIRIT AND BELIEF IN THE TRUTH”

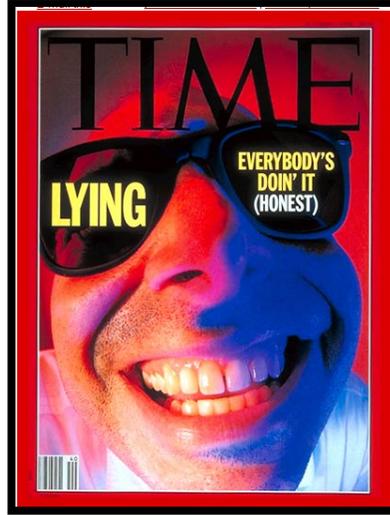
2 Thess. 2:9-14

God has judged mankind before for its love of all that is the lie and the rejection of all that is the truth:

“FOR THE WRATH OF GOD IS REVEALED FROM HEAVEN AGAINST ALL UNGODLINESS AND UNRIGHTEOUSNESS OF MEN, WHO SUPPRESS THE TRUTH IN UNRIGHTEOUSNESS... WHO EXCHANGED THE TRUTH OF GOD FOR THE LIE, AND WORSHIPED AND SERVED THE CREATURE RATHER THAN THE CREATOR...”

Rom. 1:24-25

1994 Cover of Time



**“...SPEAKING OPPRESSION
AND REVOLT,
CONCEIVING AND
UTTERING FROM THE HEART
WORDS OF FALSEHOOD.
JUSTICE IS TURNED BACK,
AND RIGHTEOUSNESS
STANDS AFAR OFF;
FOR
TRUTH IS FALLEN
IN THE STREET,
AND EQUITY
CANNOT ENTER.
SO TRUTH FAILS,
AND HE
WHO DEPARTS
FROM EVIL
MAKES HIMSELF
A PREY.”**

Isa. 59:13-15

**“THESE ARE THE THINGS YOU SHALL DO:
SPEAK EACH MAN THE TRUTH TO HIS NEIGHBOR;
GIVE JUDGMENT IN YOUR GATES FOR TRUTH, JUSTICE, AND PEACE;
LET NONE OF YOU THINK EVIL IN YOUR HEART AGAINST YOUR NEIGHBOR;
AND DO NOT LOVE A FALSE OATH.
FOR ALL THESE ARE THINGS THAT I HATE, 'SAYS THE LORD.' ”**

Zech. 8:16-17

**“THEREFORE, PUTTING AWAY LYING,
'LET EACH ONE OF YOU SPEAK TRUTH WITH HIS NEIGHBOR,'
FOR WE ARE MEMBERS OF ONE ANOTHER...NOR GIVE PLACE TO THE DEVIL.”**

Eph. 4:25-27

**“...THIS IS A NATION THAT
DOES NOT OBEY THE VOICE
OF THE LORD THEIR GOD
NOR RECEIVE CORRECTION.
TRUTH HAS PERISHED
AND HAS BEEN CUT OFF
FROM THEIR MOUTH.”**

Jer. 7:28

**“...THEY ARE NOT VALIANT
FOR THE TRUTH
ON THE EARTH.
FOR THEY PROCEED FROM
EVIL TO EVIL...
EVERYONE WILL
DECEIVE HIS NEIGHBOR,
AND WILL NOT
SPEAK THE TRUTH;
THEY HAVE
TAUGHT THEIR
TONGUE TO
SPEAK LIES...”**

Jer. 9:3-5

Are you valiant for the truth? The best way to find out is to look up some of the 228 references to truth you will find in a concordance. Ponder the various references in which the apostle Paul singles out what it means to be identified as a people marked by truth. Truth abiding in God's people is necessary for the days that "lie" ahead.

Consider Paul's own recorded testimony that he faithfully practiced self-governing of his own actions:

**" I TELL THE TRUTH IN CHRIST,
I AM NOT LYING,
MY CONSCIENCE ALSO BEARING ME
WITNESS IN THE HOLY SPIRIT..."**

Rom. 9:1-2



**"I MYSELF
ALWAYS STRIVE
TO HAVE A CONSCIENCE
WITHOUT OFFENSE TOWARD GOD AND MEN."**

Acts 24:16

Paul's awareness of his own conscience and his sensitivity to the quickening conviction of the Holy Spirit were his safeguards against self-deception and rationalization.

Having one's loins girded up with truth (Eph. 6:14) is not based solely upon the truth of God's Word being hidden in us, but also truthfulness abiding within the deepest parts of man's heart and mind. Paul has grasped this distinction. David also, a man of whom God testified, "I have found David...a man after My own heart, who will do all My will" (Acts 13:22), understood, like Paul, what God desired to be hidden deep within man:

"BEHOLD, YOU DESIRE TRUTH IN THE INWARD PARTS..."

Ps. 51:6

Truth, as part of the armor of God, is not just that we possess the truth, but that the truth possesses us. When truth possesses us we can be nothing other than valiant for the truth.

**"...I WRITE SO THAT YOU MAY KNOW HOW
YOU OUGHT TO CONDUCT YOURSELF
IN THE HOUSE OF GOD,
WHICH IS THE CHURCH OF THE LIVING GOD,
THE PILLAR AND GROUND OF THE TRUTH."**

1 Tim. 3:15-16

**"THEREFORE, PUTTING AWAY LYING,
'LET EACH ONE OF YOU
SPEAK TRUTH WITH HIS NEIGHBOR,'
FOR WE ARE MEMBERS OF ONE ANOTHER...
NOR GIVE PLACE TO THE DEVIL."**

Eph. 4:25-27

"FINALLY,
MY BRETHREN,
BE STRONG
IN THE LORD
AND IN THE POWER
OF HIS MIGHT.
PUT ON THE
WHOLE ARMOR
OF GOD,
THAT YOU
MAY BE ABLE TO STAND
AGAINST THE WILES
OF THE DEVIL...
THEREFORE
TAKE UP
THE WHOLE
ARMOR OF GOD,
THAT YOU
MAY BE ABLE
TO WITHSTAND
IN THE EVIL DAY,
AND HAVING
DONE ALL,
TO STAND.

THE ARMOR OF GOD



STAND
THEREFORE,
HAVING GIRDED YOUR
WAIST WITH TRUTH,
HAVING PUT ON THE
BREASTPLATE OF
RIGHTEOUSNESS,
AND HAVING SHOD YOUR
FEET WITH THE
PREPARATION OF THE
GOSPEL OF PEACE;
ABOVE ALL,
TAKING THE SHIELD OF
FAITH WITH WHICH YOU
WILL BE ABLE TO QUENCH
ALL THE FIERY DARTS OF
THE WICKED ONE.
AND TAKE THE HELMET
OF SALVATION,
AND THE SWORD OF
THE SPIRIT, WHICH IS
THE WORD OF GOD;
PRAYING ALWAYS WITH
ALL PRAYER AND
SUPPLICATION
IN THE SPIRIT,
BEING WATCHFUL TO THIS
END WITH ALL
PERSEVERANCE AND
SUPPLICATION FOR ALL
THE SAINTS."
Eph. 6:10-18

**"STAND
THEREFORE,
...HAVING
PUT ON
THE
BREASTPLATE OF
RIGHTEOUSNESS**

Eph. 6:14b

The second piece of the armor of God is **RIGHTEOUSNESS**. This is God's defense against **LAWLESSNESS**.

God's Kingdom is marked with righteousness:

God's people are to be marked with righteousness:

**"A SCEPTER OF RIGHTEOUSNESS
IS THE SCEPTER OF YOUR KINGDOM.
YOU HAVE LOVED RIGHTEOUSNESS
AND HATED LAWLESSNESS..."**

Heb. 1:8-9

**"DO NOT BE UNEQUALLY YOKED
TOGETHER WITH UNBELIEVERS.
FOR WHAT FELLOWSHIP HAS
RIGHTEOUSNESS WITH LAWLESSNESS?"**

2 Cor. 6:14

Jesus is called Christ the **RIGHTEOUS** (1 Jn. 2:1), but the AntiChrist will be known as the **LAWLESS** one (2 Thess. 2:9).

Just as in our first contrast of the truth against the lie, we now have another vivid contrast of light vs. darkness as God's righteousness is pitted against Satan's lawlessness. To establish the fact that we are headed for days in which lawlessness will abound, you only need to listen to the prophetic warning of Jesus as He speaks of what is on the horizon:

**"AND THEN MANY WILL BE OFFENDED, WILL BETRAY ONE ANOTHER,
AND WILL HATE ONE ANOTHER...
AND BECAUSE LAWLESSNESS WILL ABOUND
THE LOVE ("AGAPE") OF MANY WILL GROW COLD."**

Matt. 24:10-11

The increase of lawlessness will lead to an increase of lovelessness.

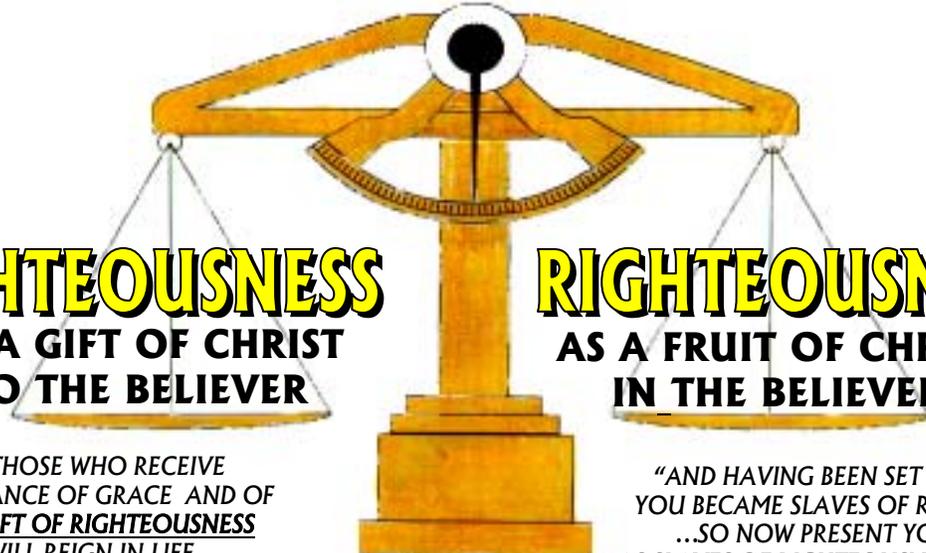
The word translated as love above is "agape" which is a unique expression for the love of God.

Not that God's personal love will grow cold, but rather the love of God's people will grow cold.

What makes them loveless? It is lawlessness. God's antidote against lawlessness is righteousness, one of the twin foundations upon which God's Throne rests:

"RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUSTICE ARE THE FOUNDATION OF YOUR THRONE..." Ps. 89:14

In these perilous times, God's people are exhorted to take to themselves the breastplate of righteousness in order to protect their very own heart from the lawlessness and lovelessness which shall abound!



RIGHTEOUSNESS
AS A GIFT OF CHRIST
TO THE BELIEVER

*“...THOSE WHO RECEIVE
ABUNDANCE OF GRACE AND OF
THE GIFT OF RIGHTEOUSNESS
WILL REIGN IN LIFE
THROUGH THE ONE, JESUS CHRIST.)...
THROUGH ONE MAN’S RIGHTEOUS ACT
THE FREE GIFT CAME TO ALL MEN,
RESULTING IN JUSTIFICATION OF LIFE. ...
BY ONE MAN’S OBEDIENCE
MANY WILL BE MADE RIGHTEOUS....
EVEN SO,
GRACE MIGHT REIGN
THROUGH RIGHTEOUSNESS
TO ETERNAL LIFE THROUGH
JESUS CHRIST OUR LORD.”*
Rom. 5:17-21 excerpts

RIGHTEOUSNESS
AS A FRUIT OF CHRIST
IN THE BELIEVER

*“AND HAVING BEEN SET FREE FROM SIN,
YOU BECAME SLAVES OF RIGHTEOUSNESS...
...SO NOW PRESENT YOUR MEMBERS
AS SLAVES OF RIGHTEOUSNESS FOR HOLINESS.
...BUT NOW HAVING BEEN SET FREE FROM SIN,
AND HAVING BECOME SLAVES OF GOD,
YOU HAVE YOUR FRUIT TO HOLINESS...”*
Rom. 6:18-23 excerpts

*“...THAT YOU MAY APPROVE THE THINGS
THAT ARE EXCELLENT...
...BEING FILLED WITH
THE FRUITS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS
WHICH ARE BY JESUS CHRIST,
TO THE GLORY AND PRAISE OF GOD.”*
Phil. 1:10-11

Righteousness, as part of the armor of God, comes as a gift of Christ's finished work of the cross (Rom. 5:17).

However, righteousness also comes as an ongoing fruit of Christ working in the life of the believer to produce a people that are in the process of being filled with fruits of righteousness (Phil.1:11).

Both aspects of righteousness constitute the essence of the armor of God. However, I believe that only one aspect is well-taught, the free gift of righteousness purchased by the cross. Lacking, among God's people, is the active pursuit of the fruit of righteousness, to live soberly, righteously and godly in this present age:

“FOR THE GRACE OF GOD THAT BRINGS SALVATION HAS APPEARED TO ALL MEN, TEACHING US THAT, DENYING UNGODLINESS AND WORLDLY LUSTS, WE SHOULD LIVE SOBERLY, RIGHTEOUSLY, AND GODLY IN THE PRESENT AGE, LOOKING FOR THE BLESSED HOPE AND GLORIOUS APPEARING OF OUR GREAT GOD AND SAVIOR JESUS CHRIST, WHO GAVE HIMSELF FOR US, THAT HE MIGHT REDEEM US FROM EVERY LAWLESS DEED AND PURIFY FOR HIMSELF HIS OWN SPECIAL PEOPLE, ZEALOUS FOR GOOD WORKS.” Titus 2:11-14

Take note that the above verse is one continuous sentence in which Paul describes what the grace of God (Jesus Christ) intended to achieve by bringing salvation to all men. Not only just to redeem us from every lawless deed, (righteousness as a gift of Christ to the believer) but also to purify for Himself His own special people who would be zealous for good works (righteousness as a fruit of Christ in the believer.)

RIGHTEOUSNESS AS A GIFT OF CHRIST TO THE BELIEVER:

**“I WILL GREATLY REJOICE IN THE LORD,
MY SOUL SHALL BE JOYFUL IN MY GOD;
FOR HE HAS CLOTHED ME WITH
THE GARMENTS OF SALVATION,
HE HAS COVERED ME WITH
THE ROBE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS...”**

Isa. 61:10



RIGHTEOUSNESS AS A FRUIT OF CHRIST IN THE BELIEVER:

**“...THE MARRIAGE OF THE LAMB HAS COME;
AND HIS WIFE HAS MADE HERSELF READY.
AND TO HER IT WAS GRANTED TO BE
ARRAYED IN FINE LINEN, CLEAN AND
BRIGHT, FOR THE FINE LINEN IS
THE RIGHTEOUS ACTS OF THE SAINTS.”**

Rev. 19:7-8

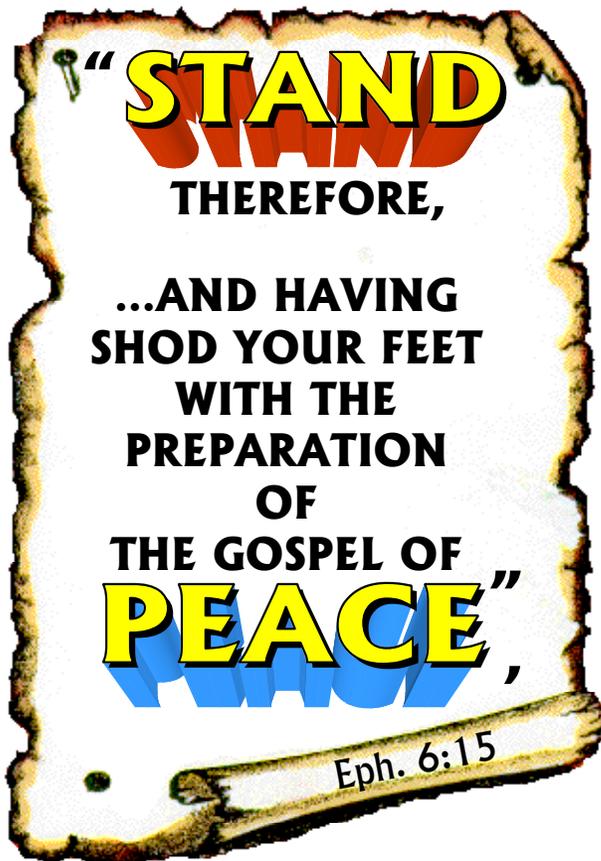
In eternity, God will reward in a very special way those who are found preparing a wedding garment that consists of living a life filled with the righteous acts of the saints (Rev. 19:8). However, you must dress in the armor of God now if you intend to be dressed in the fine linen of the Bride of Christ in eternity!

"FINALLY,
MY BRETHREN,
BE STRONG
IN THE LORD
AND IN THE POWER
OF HIS MIGHT.
PUT ON THE
WHOLE ARMOR
OF GOD,
THAT YOU
MAY BE ABLE TO STAND
AGAINST THE WILES
OF THE DEVIL...
THEREFORE
TAKE UP
THE WHOLE
ARMOR OF GOD,
THAT YOU
MAY BE ABLE
TO WITHSTAND
IN THE EVIL DAY,
AND HAVING
DONE ALL,
TO STAND.

THE ARMOR OF GOD



STAND
THEREFORE,
HAVING GIRDED YOUR
WAIST WITH TRUTH,
HAVING PUT ON THE
BREASTPLATE OF
RIGHTEOUSNESS,
AND HAVING SHOD YOUR
FEET WITH THE
PREPARATION OF THE
GOSPEL OF PEACE;
ABOVE ALL,
TAKING THE SHIELD OF
FAITH WITH WHICH YOU
WILL BE ABLE TO QUENCH
ALL THE FIERY DARTS OF
THE WICKED ONE.
AND TAKE THE HELMET
OF SALVATION,
AND THE SWORD OF
THE SPIRIT, WHICH IS
THE WORD OF GOD;
PRAYING ALWAYS WITH
ALL PRAYER AND
SUPPLICATION
IN THE SPIRIT,
BEING WATCHFUL TO THIS
END WITH ALL
PERSEVERANCE AND
SUPPLICATION FOR ALL
THE SAINTS."
Eph. 6:10-18



**“MY SOUL HAS DWELT TOO LONG WITH ONE WHO HATES PEACE.
I AM FOR PEACE; BUT WHEN I SPEAK, THEY ARE FOR WAR.”**

Ps. 120:6-7

The above verse can certainly be applicable to the ongoing Middle East conflict between Israel and Hamas, the Muslim terrorist regime governing the Palestinians in Gaza. The Muslims espouse that their religion is a religion of peace. They don't know the meaning of the word. Israel is for peace, but Hamas is for war (against Israel's very existence). By “peace” the Muslims mean all must submit to them. They vow to destroy by Jihad (war) all who do not submit to their so-called religion of peace.

We are told to pray for the peace of Jerusalem (Ps. 122:6). Israel has known little or no peace since her rebirth, but rather war after war initiated by her Arab and Muslim neighbors bent on her destruction. How then do we pray for the peace of Jerusalem? The prophet Jeremiah gives us the answer:

“...‘I HAVE TAKEN AWAY MY PEACE FROM THIS PEOPLE,’ SAYS THE LORD, ‘LOVINGKINDNESS AND MERCIES.’ ” Jer. 16:5

God's definition of peace is when His lovingkindness and mercies rest upon His people. This is how to pray for the peace of Jerusalem: that God will not remove His lovingkindness and His mercies from His people. It matters little what is happening in the world around them. Jesus promised just such a peace to His people:

“PEACE I LEAVE WITH YOU, MY PEACE I GIVE TO YOU; NOT AS THE WORLD GIVES DO I GIVE TO YOU.” Jn. 14:27

“THESE THINGS I HAVE SPOKEN TO YOU, THAT IN ME YOU MAY HAVE PEACE.

IN THE WORLD YOU WILL HAVE TRIBULATION...” Jn. 16:33

Now Paul speaks of peace being part of the armor of God. Specifically, it is called “the preparation of the gospel of peace”. Let us focus on the initial statement of this mandate: preparation. The Girl Scouts promote the motto, “Be Prepared”. What God has in mind is that His people would walk through life in such a state of readiness and preparation to share with others the wonderful truths of salvation available through Christ:

**“BUT SANCTIFY THE LORD GOD IN YOUR HEARTS,
AND ALWAYS BE READY TO GIVE A DEFENSE TO
EVERYONE WHO ASKS YOU A REASON FOR
THE HOPE THAT IS IN YOU,
WITH MEEKNESS AND FEAR...”**

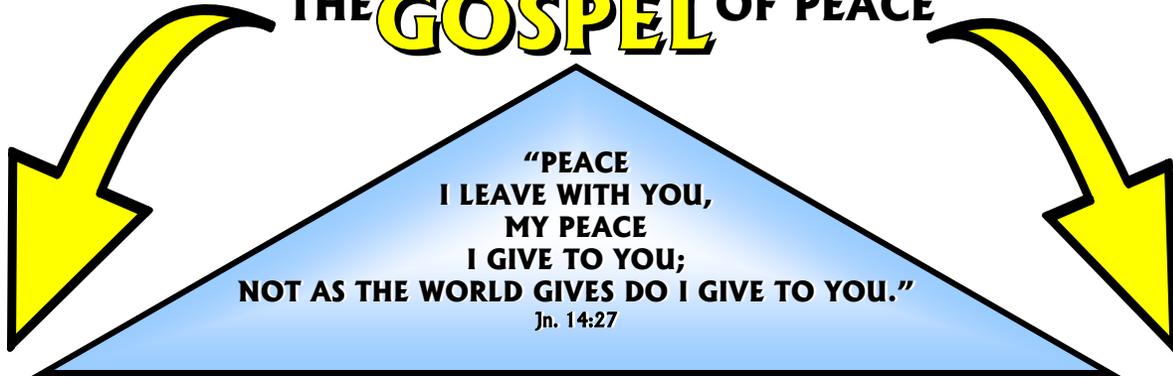
1 Peter 3:15-16

**“WALK IN WISDOM TOWARD THOSE
WHO ARE OUTSIDE, REDEEMING THE TIME.
LET YOUR SPEECH ALWAYS BE WITH GRACE,
SEASONED WITH SALT, THAT YOU MAY KNOW
HOW YOU OUGHT TO ANSWER EACH ONE.”**

Col. 4:5-6

**"...TAKE UP THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD...
HAVING SHOD YOUR FEET WITH THE PREPARATION OF THE GOSPEL OF PEACE..."** Eph. 6:13-16
**"HOW BEAUTIFUL UPON THE MOUNTAINS ARE THE FEET OF HIM WHO BRINGS GOOD NEWS,
WHO PROCLAIMS PEACE,
WHO BRINGS GLAD TIDINGS OF GOOD THINGS, WHO PROCLAIMS SALVATION..."** Isa. 52:7

THE GOSPEL OF PEACE



PEACE WITH GOD

**"HAVING BEEN JUSTIFIED BY FAITH,
WE HAVE PEACE WITH GOD
THROUGH OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST,
THROUGH WHOM ALSO WE HAVE ACCESS BY FAITH
INTO THIS GRACE IN WHICH WE STAND..."**
Rom. 5:1-2

THE PEACE OF GOD

**"BE ANXIOUS FOR NOTHING,
BUT BY PRAYER AND SUPPLICATION, WITH THANKSGIVING,
LET YOUR REQUESTS BE MADE KNOWN TO GOD;
AND THE PEACE OF GOD, WHICH SURPASSES ALL UNDERSTANDING,
WILL GUARD YOUR HEARTS AND MINDS THROUGH CHRIST JESUS...
THESE DO, AND THE GOD OF PEACE WILL BE WITH YOU."**
Phil. 4:6-9

The second key word that Paul uses in his description of the armor of God is the word **GOSPEL**. The word gospel means good news. What is the good news we are to proclaim? The good news gospel we are to proclaim is found in the third word Paul uses: **PEACE**. The good news is the gospel of peace.

“Smile, God loves you” is not the way to introduce the gospel of peace. To proclaim a gospel of peace, it must first be accepted that those to whom it is proclaimed lack peace with God. Rather, they are presently in a state of being alienated from God by their sinful state, and therefore have no present status of being at peace with God:

**“FOR IT PLEASSED THE FATHER THAT...
BY HIM TO RECONCILE ALL THINGS TO HIMSELF...
HAVING MADE PEACE THROUGH THE BLOOD OF
HIS CROSS. AND YOU, WHO ONCE WERE ALIENATED
AND ENEMIES IN YOUR MIND BY WICKED WORKS,
YET NOW HE HAS RECONCILED IN
THE BODY OF HIS FLESH THROUGH DEATH,
TO PRESENT YOU HOLY, AND BLAMELESS,
AND ABOVE REPROACH IN HIS SIGHT...”**

Col. 1:19-22

**“...YOU WERE WITHOUT CHRIST,
BEING ALIENS FROM THE COMMONWEALTH
OF ISRAEL AND STRANGERS FROM THE
COVENANTS OF PROMISE,
HAVING NO HOPE AND WITHOUT GOD
IN THE WORLD. BUT NOW IN CHRIST JESUS
YOU WHO ONCE WERE FAR OFF HAVE BEEN
BROUGHT NEAR BY THE BLOOD OF CHRIST.
FOR HE HIMSELF IS OUR PEACE...”**

Eph. 2:11-14

So then, we receive peace with God by Jesus Christ dying for us on the cross. We were enemies due to sin and rebellion, but Jesus reconciles us to God by shedding His own blood. We now can have peace with God where there was no peace. This is the gospel (good news) of peace. Having peace with God, we are now given God's plan to always be able to find the peace of God in times of difficulty. It comes, as stated on the opposite page, by learning to avoid the pitfalls of anxiety by casting all our cares upon Jesus Christ who makes intercession for us to God the Father. Do your part and the God of peace will be with you! (Phil. 4:6-9)

The last thing about peace that I want to mention to you is that, in addition to obtaining peace with God and learning how to tap the peace of God, He also wants His people to be in a state of peace with his fellow-man. Three examples to ponder are: If it is possible, as much as depends upon you, we are to live peaceably with all men (Rom. 12:18). We are called to endeavor to keep the unity of the spirit in the bond of peace (Eph. 4:3). We are to pursue peace with all men (Heb. 12:14). This aspect of peaceful relationships should also be viewed as part of the armor of God. Fracturing relationships is the specific aim of Satan among God's people.

"FINALLY,
MY BRETHREN,
BE STRONG
IN THE LORD
AND IN THE POWER
OF HIS MIGHT.
PUT ON THE
WHOLE ARMOR
OF GOD,
THAT YOU
MAY BE ABLE TO STAND
AGAINST THE WILES
OF THE DEVIL...
THEREFORE
TAKE UP
THE WHOLE
ARMOR OF GOD,
THAT YOU
MAY BE ABLE
TO WITHSTAND
IN THE EVIL DAY,
AND HAVING
DONE ALL,
TO STAND.

THE ARMOR OF GOD



STAND
THEREFORE,
HAVING GIRDED YOUR
WAIST WITH TRUTH,
HAVING PUT ON THE
BREASTPLATE OF
RIGHTEOUSNESS,
AND HAVING SHOD YOUR
FEET WITH THE
PREPARATION OF THE
GOSPEL OF PEACE;
ABOVE ALL,
TAKING THE SHIELD OF
FAITH WITH WHICH YOU
WILL BE ABLE TO QUENCH
ALL THE FIERY DARTS OF
THE WICKED ONE.
AND TAKE THE HELMET
OF SALVATION,
AND THE SWORD OF
THE SPIRIT, WHICH IS
THE WORD OF GOD;
PRAYING ALWAYS WITH
ALL PRAYER AND
SUPPLICATION
IN THE SPIRIT,
BEING WATCHFUL TO THIS
END WITH ALL
PERSEVERANCE AND
SUPPLICATION FOR ALL
THE SAINTS."
Eph. 6:10-18

" ABOVE ALL,
TAKING
THE SHIELD OF
FAITH
WITH WHICH
YOU WILL BE ABLE
TO QUENCH ALL
THE FIERY DARTS
OF
THE WICKED ONE."

Eph. 6:16

This is the fourth piece of the armor of God that Paul lists in Ephesians 6. It is the shield of faith. A shield is a defensive weapon. As such, Paul states that it will quench all the fiery darts that Satan shoots against you.

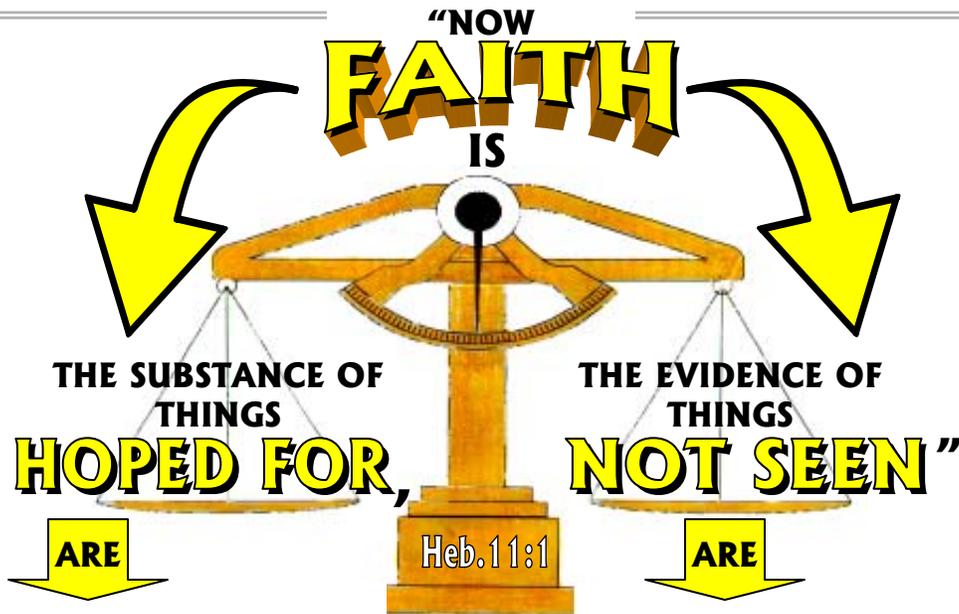
As we found in the three previous pieces of the armor of God: (1) truth is our defense against the lies of Satan, (2) righteousness defends us against the lawlessness to come, (3) peace within defends us against war without, and now, (4) faith is to be our sole defense against this satanically inspired direct force of opposition; unbelief. We can state that emphatically, un-belief is “un-faith”. Unbelief is the direct opposite of faith. Unbelief is the fiery dart Satan uses to attack the believer’s faith in God. God gives His people strong warning against developing an evil heart of unbelief:

“BEWARE, BRETHREN, LEST THERE BE IN ANY OF YOU AN EVIL HEART OF UNBELIEF IN DEPARTING FROM THE LIVING GOD; BUT EXHORT ONE ANOTHER DAILY, WHILE IT IS CALLED ‘TODAY,’ LEST ANY OF YOU BE HARDENED THROUGH THE DECEITFULNESS OF SIN. FOR WE HAVE BECOME PARTAKERS OF CHRIST IF WE HOLD THE BEGINNING OF OUR CONFIDENCE STEADFAST TO THE END...FOR WHO, HAVING HEARD, REBELLED? INDEED, WAS IT NOT ALL WHO CAME OUT OF EGYPT, LED BY MOSES? NOW WITH WHOM WAS HE ANGRY FORTY YEARS? WAS IT NOT WITH THOSE WHO SINNED, WHOSE CORPSES FELL IN THE WILDERNESS? AND TO WHOM DID HE SWEAR THAT THEY WOULD NOT ENTER HIS REST, BUT TO THOSE WHO DID NOT OBEY? SO WE SEE THAT THEY COULD NOT ENTER IN BECAUSE OF UNBELIEF.”

Heb. 3:12-19

Back in the early Nineties, the erroneous emphasis of the distorted Faith for Prosperity movement was upon changing the biblical statement of have faith in God (Mk. 11:22) into a subtle substitute of having God’s kind of faith. We are not called to mimic or imitate the kind of faith God demonstrates, but rather to have our faith totally centered upon God Himself. Otherwise, we can end up having more faith in our faith, than having faith in our God. Don’t make a god out of faith. Let God be the object of your faith. Faith is merely a vehicle to connect us with God.

Hear it well: Faith will quench all the fiery darts of unbelief Satan launches against you. Therefore, above all, you must take up the shield of faith. The fiery dart of unbelief was used in the Garden in Genesis against Eve by Satan in challenging what God had said (Gen.3:1). Faith answers unbelief with a solid foundation of what the scriptures say (Rom. 4:3). Jesus used the Word against Satan time and time again stating it is written! (Matt. 4:4).



PROMISES FROM GOD:

“...AS HIS DIVINE POWER HAS GIVEN TO US ALL THINGS THAT PERTAIN TO LIFE AND GODLINESS, THROUGH THE KNOWLEDGE OF HIM WHO CALLED US BY GLORY AND VIRTUE, BY WHICH HAVE BEEN GIVEN TO US EXCEEDINGLY GREAT AND PRECIOUS PROMISES, THAT THROUGH THESE YOU MAY BE PARTAKERS OF THE DIVINE NATURE, HAVING ESCAPED THE CORRUPTION THAT IS IN THE WORLD THROUGH LUST.” 2 Peter 1:3-4

PROPHECY FROM GOD:

“AND SO WE HAVE THE PROPHETIC WORD CONFIRMED, WHICH YOU DO WELL TO HEED AS A LIGHT THAT SHINES IN A DARK PLACE, UNTIL THE DAY DAWNS AND THE MORNING STAR RISES IN YOUR HEARTS; KNOWING THIS FIRST, THAT... PROPHECY NEVER CAME BY THE WILL OF MAN, BUT HOLY MEN OF GOD SPOKE AS THEY WERE MOVED BY THE HOLY SPIRIT.”

2 Peter 1:19-21

Hebrews 11:1 gives a twofold definition of faith: (1) things hoped for (2) things not seen. I have come to see a correlation between this twofold definition of faith and the two key ingredients the apostle Peter singles out as essential for every believer, the **PROMISES** of God and **PROPHECY** of God.

To focus our faith upon the things we are to hope for, we must look to the promises in God's Word. To focus our faith upon the things we do not see, we must look to the contents of prophecy that is recorded in God's Word.

Look at the scriptures on the opposite page. The promises of God contain everything the believer needs for life and godliness. They are stated to provide the means to escape the corruption that is in the world through lust. Likewise, Peter states the value of prophecy, as being a light that shines in a dark place, that we will do well to give heed to what it says. I have come to see the distinction between promises and prophecy as this: God's promises reveal to us what is the **WILL** of God. However, prophecy looks into the future and foretells what **WILL** take place. It is God's will that none perish but come to repentance (2 Pet. 3:9). Prophecy states that two-thirds of the Jews will perish and one-third will be saved (Zech.13:8-9). From this example, we can see that things that are God's expressed will for man, may not be what is going to actually happen to man. This is important: God's promises have conditions. Fail to meet the conditions and you will fail to inherit the promise. Prophecy often foretells the failure of man to meet the conditions.

For instance, we have beautiful promises stating that God's people are not appointed to the wrath of God, but rather to obtain salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ (1 Thess. 5:9). However, Jesus Himself prophetically warned that only half of God's people will be found worthy to escape when He comes. The foolish virgins are prophetically stated to be left behind (Matt. 25:1-13). Focus upon God's promises to know His will for your life. They are designed to create motivation (things hoped for). Consider the importance promises are given in scripture:

"AND WE DESIRE THAT EACH ONE OF YOU SHOW THE SAME DILIGENCE TO THE FULL ASSURANCE OF HOPE UNTIL THE END, THAT YOU DO NOT BECOME SLUGGISH, BUT IMITATE THOSE WHO THROUGH FAITH AND PATIENCE INHERIT THE PROMISES."

Heb. 6:11-12

"FOR ALL THE PROMISES OF GOD IN HIM ARE YES, AND IN HIM AMEN, TO THE GLORY OF GOD THROUGH US."

2 Cor. 1:20-21

"...BY WHICH HAVE BEEN GIVEN TO US EXCEEDINGLY GREAT AND PRECIOUS PROMISES, THAT THROUGH THESE YOU MAY BE PARTAKERS OF THE DIVINE NATURE, HAVING ESCAPED THE CORRUPTION THAT IS IN THE WORLD THROUGH LUST."

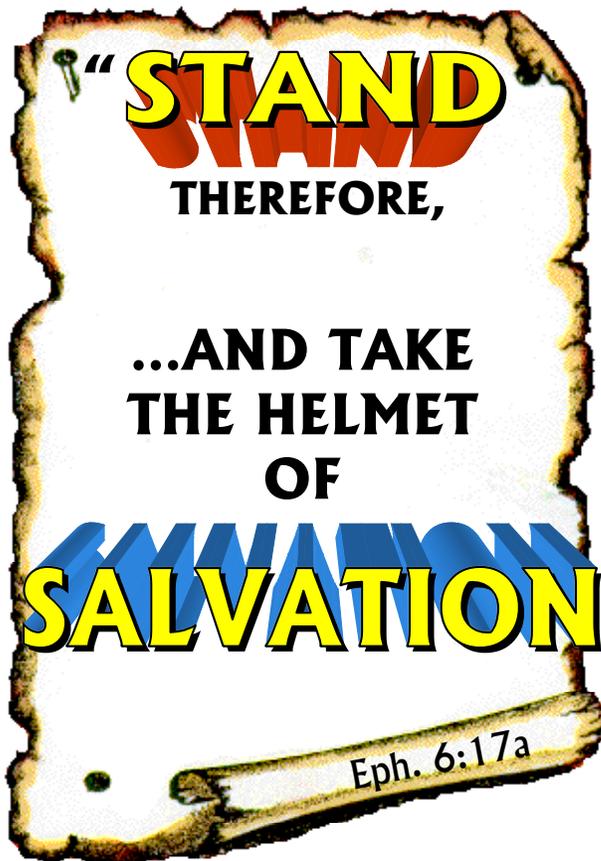
2 Peter 1:4

"FINALLY,
MY BRETHREN,
BE STRONG
IN THE LORD
AND IN THE POWER
OF HIS MIGHT.
PUT ON THE
WHOLE ARMOR
OF GOD,
THAT YOU
MAY BE ABLE TO STAND
AGAINST THE WILES
OF THE DEVIL...
THEREFORE
TAKE UP
THE WHOLE
ARMOR OF GOD,
THAT YOU
MAY BE ABLE
TO WITHSTAND
IN THE EVIL DAY,
AND HAVING
DONE ALL,
TO STAND.

THE ARMOR OF GOD



STAND
THEREFORE,
HAVING GIRDED YOUR
WAIST WITH TRUTH,
HAVING PUT ON THE
BREASTPLATE OF
RIGHTEOUSNESS,
AND HAVING SHOD YOUR
FEET WITH THE
PREPARATION OF THE
GOSPEL OF PEACE;
ABOVE ALL,
TAKING THE SHIELD OF
FAITH WITH WHICH YOU
WILL BE ABLE TO QUENCH
ALL THE FIERY DARTS OF
THE WICKED ONE.
AND TAKE THE HELMET
OF SALVATION,
AND THE SWORD OF
THE SPIRIT, WHICH IS
THE WORD OF GOD;
PRAYING ALWAYS WITH
ALL PRAYER AND
SUPPLICATION
IN THE SPIRIT,
BEING WATCHFUL TO THIS
END WITH ALL
PERSEVERANCE AND
SUPPLICATION FOR ALL
THE SAINTS."
Eph. 6:10-18



The fifth piece of the armor of God is listed as the helmet of salvation. Obviously, this is God's protection for the soldier's mind against the assault of the evil one. Head wounds tend to be fatal. A strong spiritual helmet is able to ward off Satan's assault on the mind.

Ask a large segment of Christianity what they think the helmet of salvation represents, and I believe the answer would be given as one of these two popular clichés, "once saved, always saved" or "unconditional eternal security". I am not an advocate of such a total past-tense presentation of salvation as it is not in harmony with all that the scriptures have to say about the subject.

As an example, look carefully at these passages from the New King James and the Amplified Bible. Consider also the scan taken from the Greek Interlinear Bible that confirms the correctness of these two translations. It is The Old King James Version that incorrectly translate this word as a past- tense verb, but this is not correct, as the Greek Interlinear Bible shows. Thus "saved" becomes more properly translated as "being saved" and "perish" is more correctly translated as "are perishing" or "being lost."

"FOR THE MESSAGE OF THE CROSS IS FOOLISHNESS TO THOSE WHO ARE PERISHING, BUT TO US WHO ARE BEING SAVED IT IS THE POWER OF GOD." 1 Cor. 1:18 NKJV

"FOR THE STORY AND MESSAGE OF THE CROSS IS SHEER ABSURDITY AND FOLLY TO THOSE WHO ARE PERISHING AND ON THEIR WAY TO PERDITION, BUT TO US WHO ARE BEING SAVED IT IS THE MANIFESTATION OF THE POWER OF GOD."

1 Cor. 1:18 Amplified Bible

For the word of the	the word	For	of the	cross to those truly	perishing		
cross is truly foolishness to	3472	2076	4982	2254	1411	2316	2076
those being lost; but to us	μωρία ἐστὶ, τοῖς δὲ σωζομένοις ἡμῖν δύναμις Θεοῦ ἐστὶ.						
being saved, it is the power	foolishness is; and being saved to us (the) power of God is.						
of God. 19For it has been	1125	1063	622	4678	4680		

"The Interlinear Greek-English New Testament Vol. IV page 451 Hendrickson Publishers

It is erroneous to speak of unbelievers in the past tense by saying, "They are lost." They are not-yet lost, but rather they are in the process of being lost. When will they be totally and permanently lost? When they die and enter the gates of Hell. For the present, they are in the process of being lost. Conversely, it is incorrect to speak of believers in the same past tense by saying, "They are saved." They are not-yet saved, but rather they are in the process of being saved. When will they be totally and permanently saved? When they die and enter the gates of Heaven. For the present, they are progressively being saved.

SALVATION

IS A PROGRESSIVE ACTION

**BEGINS
IN
THE SPIRIT**

WHAT IS THE
PAST
EMPHASIS OF
SALVATION:

“...UNLESS ONE IS BORN OF WATER AND THE SPIRIT, HE CANNOT ENTER THE KINGDOM OF GOD. THAT WHICH IS BORN OF THE FLESH IS FLESH, AND THAT WHICH IS BORN OF THE SPIRIT IS SPIRIT.
DO NOT MARVEL THAT I SAID TO YOU ‘YOU MUST BE BORN AGAIN.’ ”
John 3:5-7

**WORKED
OUT IN
THE SOUL**

WHAT IS THE
PRESENT
EMPHASIS OF
SALVATION:

“...RECEIVING THE END OF YOUR FAITH -- THE SALVATION OF YOUR SOULS.”
1 Pet. 1:9

“...WORK OUT YOUR OWN SALVATION WITH FEAR AND TREMBLING; FOR IT IS GOD WHO WORKS IN YOU ...”
Phil. 2:12-13

“...WE ARE NOT OF THOSE WHO DRAW BACK TO PERDITION, BUT OF THOSE WHO BELIEVE TO THE SAVING OF THE SOUL.”
Heb. 10:39

**FINALIZED
IN
THE BODY**

WHAT IS THE
FUTURE
EMPHASIS OF
SALVATION:

“...WE OURSELVES GROAN WITHIN OURSELVES, EAGERLY WAITING FOR THE ADOPTION, THE REDEMPTION OF OUR BODY...”
Rom. 8:23-24

“...WHEN THIS CORRUPTIBLE HAS PUT ON INCORRUPTION, AND THIS MORTAL HAS PUT ON IMMORTALITY, THEN SHALL BE BROUGHT TO PASS THE SAYING...
“DEATH IS SWALLOWED UP IN VICTORY.”
1 Cor. 15:54

If the salvation of the believer was indeed a past-tense, done deal as popularly presented, you would not need a helmet pertaining to salvation at all. If truly we are presently in God's sight, "once saved, always saved" or "unconditionally eternally secure", then there is no need for a helmet to protect what is already stated to be safe and secure-guaranteed. However, if salvation is truly as presented on the opposite page, then there are still unfinished aspects to salvation. It is to these unfinished aspects that we need the helmet of salvation as armor against the evil one. What is past tense is the salvation of man's spirit. What is presently being saved is man's soul (mind, will and emotions). What is yet future is salvation of the physical body, either by the rapture of the living, or the resurrection of the dead in Christ.

Look carefully at this passage: **"...WE ARE NOT OF THOSE WHO DRAW BACK TO PERDITION ("ETERNAL MISERY") BUT OF THOSE WHO BELIEVE TO THE SAVING OF THE SOUL."** Heb. 10:39

Is the apostle Paul in error in speaking to believers in this manner? Can a believer draw back to perdition? Believe to the saving of the soul? Isn't the soul of a believer already saved? Paul doesn't think so, does he?

To draw back to perdition (eternal misery) speaks of a people who have, by means of the new birth, escaped the danger of perdition. The unsaved are pressing toward perdition. They cannot draw back for they have never escaped the danger. Only a believer qualifies as one who can draw back. Think about it: if it were impossible to draw back to perdition, Paul would be in great doctrinal error to speak to believers in such a manner. The doctrinal error is rather the un-biblical guarantee of "once saved, always saved", of being guaranteed a position of "unconditional eternal security." Can a believer draw back to perdition having once escaped the danger by the new birth? Paul's answer would be yes! It should concern us that Paul tells believers in his day just the opposite of what is being told believers today! Has not the truth Paul presents been exchanged for a lie?

In Genesis, God creates man as a three-part being (Gen. 2:7). God formed man's body out of dust. He breathed the Spirit of God into his nostrils, and man became a living soul. Salvation is a complete plan for the complete man; spirit, soul and body. God wants us to know that He intends to complete the good work He has begun in us (Phil.1:6). It will be a work completed as we look to Jesus, the author and the finisher of our faith (Heb.12:2). Therefore, a helmet of complete salvation for the complete man is necessary. We have been born of the spirit, God is presently working out salvation in our soul, and He will finish what He started by bringing immortality (eternal life) to man's corruptible body. Put these truths as an ongoing protective covering upon your mind!

WHY THE BELIEVER NEEDS A HELMET OF SALVATION:

**SALVATION
HAS COME
TO MY SPIRIT...**

John 3:5-7

**SALVATION
IS BEING
WORKED OUT
IN MY SOUL...**

Phil. 2:12-13 1 Pet. 1:9

**SALVATION
WILL BE
FINALIZED
IN MY BODY...**

1 Cor. 15:54 Rom. 8:23-24



TOTAL SALVATION IS GOD'S

PROMISE

TO THE BELIEVER,

RATHER THAN A COMPLETED

POSSESSION

OF THE BELIEVER,

***"BUT YOU O MAN OF GOD...
FIGHT THE GOOD FIGHT OF FAITH,
LAY HOLD ON ETERNAL LIFE,
TO WHICH YOU WERE ALSO CALLED..."***

1 Tim. 6:11-12

***"...ACCORDING TO THE FAITH OF GOD'S ELECT...
IN HOPE OF ETERNAL LIFE
WHICH GOD, WHO CANNOT LIE,
PROMISED BEFORE TIME BEGAN."***

Titus 1:1-2

THE WORD OF GOD IS BEING PERVERTED IN SUCH A MANNER THAT EVERYTHING IS AUTOMATICALLY AND IRREVERSIBLY PLACED IN THE BELIEVER'S SPIRITUAL WIN COLUMN RIGHT FROM THE NEW BIRTH. THEREFORE, SALVATION IS VIEWED STRICTLY FROM A PAST TENSE PERSPECTIVE, FROM A POSSESSIVE POSITION IN WHICH NOTHING OF VALUE LIES IN FRONT OF THE BELIEVER.

What is stated on the opposite page is what the scriptures present as the basis of salvation. Rather than the popular notion that salvation is a present possession of the believer, it is in reality a promise of God to the believer to be laid hold of by faith. For instance, look on the opposite page at how Paul spoke to his son in the faith, Timothy, who was pastor of the largest church under Paul's care. Obviously, Timothy is born-again, so why then does Paul exhort his son in the faith to "lay hold on eternal life to which he was called"? Because eternal life is not a present possession, but a promise from God for the life to come. Paul knows this, but many of God's people do not. Consider how Jude viewed eternal life:

"BUT YOU, BELOVED, BUILDING YOURSELVES UP ON YOUR MOST HOLY FAITH, PRAYING IN THE SPIRIT, KEEP YOURSELVES IN THE LOVE OF GOD, LOOKING FOR THE MERCY OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST UNTO ETERNAL LIFE."

The apostle John:

Jude 20-21

"AND THIS IS THE PROMISE THAT HE HAS PROMISED US -- ETERNAL LIFE. THESE THINGS I HAVE WRITTEN TO YOU CONCERNING THOSE WHO TRY TO DECEIVE YOU." 1 Jn. 2:25-26

Even Jesus Himself:

"ASSUREDLY, I SAY UNTO YOU, THERE IS NO ONE WHO HAS LEFT HOUSE OR BROTHERS OR SISTERS OR FATHER OR MOTHER OR WIFE OR CHILDREN OR LANDS, FOR MY SAKE AND THE GOSPEL'S, WHO SHALL NOT RECEIVE A HUNDREDFOLD NOW IN THIS TIME --HOUSES AND BROTHERS AND SISTERS AND MOTHERS AND CHILDREN AND LANDS, WITH PERSECUTIONS - AND IN THE AGE TO COME, ETERNAL LIFE." Mark 10:29-30

Paul to the Romans:

"BUT NOW HAVING BEEN SET FREE FROM SIN, AND HAVING BECOME SLAVES OF GOD, YOU HAVE YOUR FRUIT TO HOLINESS, AND THE END, EVERLASTING LIFE. FOR THE WAGES OF SIN IS DEATH, BUT THE GIFT OF GOD IS ETERNAL LIFE IN CHRIST JESUS OUR LORD." Rom. 6:22-23

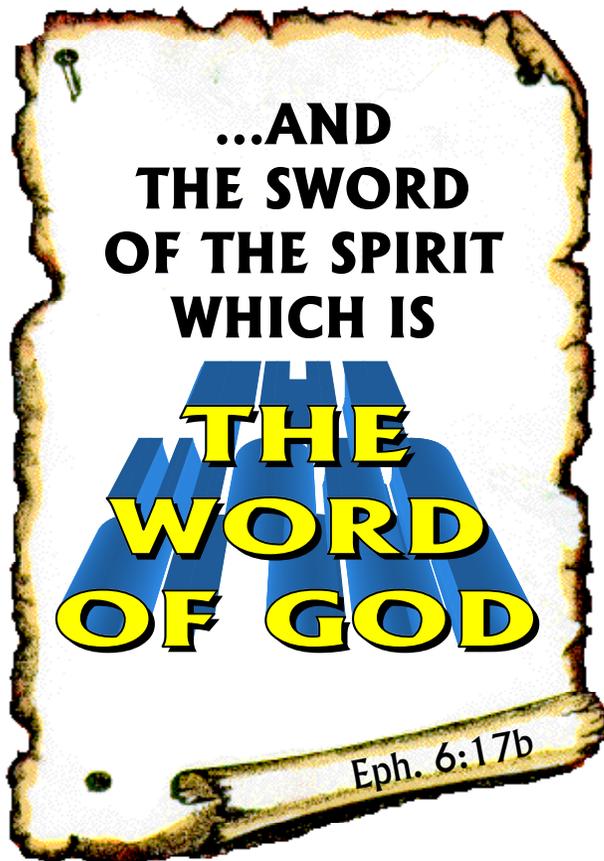
We only hear quoted the last half of that verse, don't we? Yes, eternal life is a gift. When will it be received? Everlasting life comes at the end of the Christian life, not the beginning! It is a **PROMISE** given to the believer, not a present possession! Put God's true promises pertaining to salvation under your helmet of salvation!

"FINALLY,
MY BRETHREN,
BE STRONG
IN THE LORD
AND IN THE POWER
OF HIS MIGHT.
PUT ON THE
WHOLE ARMOR
OF GOD,
THAT YOU
MAY BE ABLE TO STAND
AGAINST THE WILES
OF THE DEVIL...
THEREFORE
TAKE UP
THE WHOLE
ARMOR OF GOD,
THAT YOU
MAY BE ABLE
TO WITHSTAND
IN THE EVIL DAY,
AND HAVING
DONE ALL,
TO STAND.

THE ARMOR OF GOD



STAND
THEREFORE,
HAVING GIRDED YOUR
WAIST WITH TRUTH,
HAVING PUT ON THE
BREASTPLATE OF
RIGHTEOUSNESS,
AND HAVING SHOD YOUR
FEET WITH THE
PREPARATION OF THE
GOSPEL OF PEACE;
ABOVE ALL,
TAKING THE SHIELD OF
FAITH WITH WHICH YOU
WILL BE ABLE TO QUENCH
ALL THE FIERY DARTS OF
THE WICKED ONE.
AND TAKE THE HELMET
OF SALVATION,
AND THE SWORD OF
THE SPIRIT, WHICH IS
THE WORD OF GOD;
PRAYING ALWAYS WITH
ALL PRAYER AND
SUPPLICATION
IN THE SPIRIT,
BEING WATCHFUL TO THIS
END WITH ALL
PERSEVERANCE AND
SUPPLICATION FOR ALL
THE SAINTS."
Eph. 6:10-18



“AND TAKE...THE SWORD OF THE SPIRIT, WHICH IS THE WORD OF GOD...” Eph. 6:17

(I find it quite stunning that the English word, “**S**word” even contains the word, “**W**ord”.)



This is the sixth piece of the armor of God spoken of in Ephesians 6. Note how Paul ties the Word of God to also being the sword of the Spirit of God. Although Jesus Christ **IS** the Word of God (Jn. 1:1, Rev. 19:13), it was the Holy Spirit who authored and inspired the writing of the Word of God (2 Pet. 1:19, 2 Tim. 3:16-17). Consider what the Word of God records as its very purpose in the life of the believer:

“EVERY SCRIPTURE IS GOD-BREATHED – GIVEN BY HIS INSPIRATION – AND PROFITABLE FOR INSTRUCTION, FOR REPROOF AND CONVICTION OF SIN, FOR CORRECTION OF ERROR AND DISCIPLINE IN OBEDIENCE, AND FOR TRAINING IN RIGHTEOUSNESS (THAT IS, IN HOLY LIVING, IN CONFORMITY TO GOD’S WILL IN THOUGHT, PURPOSE AND ACTION) SO THAT THE MAN OF GOD MAY BE COMPLETE AND PROFICIENT, WELL-FITTED AND THOROUGHLY EQUIPPED FOR EVERY GOOD WORK.” 2 Tim. 3:16 Amplified Bible

“FOR THE WORD THAT GOD SPEAKS IS ALIVE AND FULL OF POWER – MAKING IT ACTIVE, OPERATIVE, ENERGIZING AND EFFECTIVE; IT IS SHARPER THAN ANY TWO-EDGED SWORD, PENETRATING TO THE DIVIDING LINE OF THE BREATH OF LIFE (SOUL) AND SPIRIT, AND OF THE JOINTS AND MARROW (THAT IS, OF THE DEEPEST PARTS OF OUR NATURE) EXPOSING AND SIFTING AND ANALYZING AND JUDGING THE VERY THOUGHTS AND PURPOSES OF THE HEART.” Heb. 4:12 Amplified Bible

All the verses below are from the same Psalm (Ps.119). Psalm 119 is permeated throughout with the significance that the Word is to play in the life of a believer. Consider twelve of those statements. Do they describe your attitude toward the Word of God?



“HOW CAN A YOUNG MAN CLEANSE HIS WAY? BY TAKING HEED ACCORDING TO YOUR WORD.” (Ps. 119:9)

“YOUR WORD I HAVE HIDDEN IN MY HEART, THAT I MIGHT NOT SIN AGAINST YOU.” (Ps. 119:11)

“...YOUR WORD HAS GIVEN ME LIFE.” (Ps. 119:50)

“FOREVER, O LORD, YOUR WORD IS SETTLED IN HEAVEN.” (Ps. 119:89)

“YOUR WORD IS A LAMP TO MY FEET AND A LIGHT TO MY PATH.” (Ps. 119:105)

“THE ENTRANCE OF YOUR WORD GIVES LIGHT; IT GIVES UNDERSTANDING TO THE SIMPLE.” (Ps. 119:130)

“DIRECT MY STEPS BY YOUR WORD...” (Ps. 119:133)

“YOUR WORD IS VERY PURE; THEREFORE YOUR SERVANT LOVES IT.” (Ps. 119:140)

“THE ENTIRETY OF YOUR WORD IS TRUTH.” (Ps. 119:160)

“...MY HEART STANDS IN AWE OF YOUR WORD...” (Ps. 119:161)

“I REJOICE AT YOUR WORD AS ONE WHO FINDS GREAT TREASURE.” (Ps. 119:162)

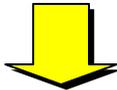
“MY TONGUE SHALL SPEAK OF YOUR WORD.” (Ps. 119:172)

DECEPTION

"CHEATING, HOODWINKING, MISLEADING OR DELUDING, TO BE FOOLED, TRICKED OR SUFFER FRAUD BY MEANS OF BOGUS FACTS, FIGURES AND STATISTICS. TO TAKE UNAWARE, BE ENSNARED BY CUNNING MISREPRESENTATION..." Webster

"LET NO ONE DECEIVE YOU."

1 John 3:7



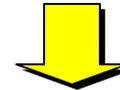
STUDY
GOD'S WORD:

"APPLICATION OF THE MIND TO THE ACQUIREMENT OF KNOWLEDGE.. A STATE OF ABSORBED CONCENTRATION...GIVEN TO STUDY, SCRUTINIZE, ANALYZE... DETAILED STUDY OF A SUBJECT WITH THE INTENT TO MASTER, ABLE TO ARTICULATE, MASTERFUL, SKILLFUL" Webster

"BE DILIGENT TO PRESENT YOURSELF APPROVED TO GOD, RIGHTLY DIVIDING

"LET NO ONE DECEIVE HIMSELF."

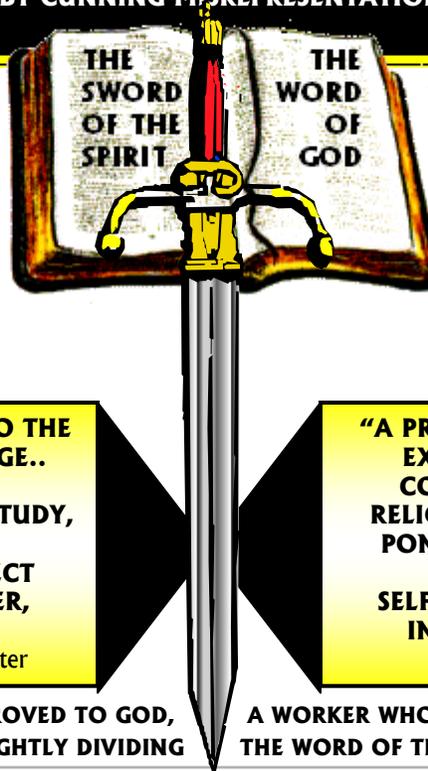
1 Cor. 3:18



MEDITATE
IN GOD'S WORD:

"A PRIVATE DEVOTION OF SPIRITUAL EXERCISE CONSISTING IN DEEP CONTINUED REFLECTION ON A RELIGIOUS THEME...TO MUSE OVER, PONDER, CONTEMPLATE, REFLECT UPON...INTROSPECTION, SELF-EXAMINATION OF ONE'S LIFE IN LIGHT OF THE PATTERN OF THE SCRIPTURES..." Webster

A WORKER WHO DOES NOT NEED TO BE ASHAMED, THE WORD OF TRUTH." 2 Tim. 2:15



There are two kinds of deception; (1) we can be deceived by others, and (2) we can deceive ourselves. I need not to elaborate the fact that the latter scenario is to be deemed much worse than the first. I would like to suggest that one way in which we can utilize the sword of the Spirit is by seeing each edge as designed to prevent these two kinds of deception: First we must **STUDY** God's Word.

The truth is that we all diligently apply ourselves to whatever is important to us. We navigate the internet with acquired skill, but get easily lost in the scriptures. We master the immense technological lingo of cell phones, I-pod's and computers and at the same time complain about the complexity of the Bible as being too difficult, too hard, and too deep. Listen to Charles Finney:



"...MY BROTHER, SISTER FRIEND- READ, STUDY, THINK; TO DEVELOP YOUR POWERS BY STUDY. GOD DESIGNED THAT RELIGION SHOULD REQUIRE THOUGHT, INTENSE THOUGHT, AND SHOULD THOROUGHLY DEVELOP OUR POWERS OF THOUGHT. THE BIBLE ITSELF IS WRITTEN IN A STYLE SO CONDENSED AS TO REQUIRE MUCH INTENSE STUDY. MANY KNOW NOTHING OF THE BIBLE OR OF RELIGION, BECAUSE THEY WILL NOT THINK AND STUDY. I DO NOT PRETEND TO SO EXPLAIN THEOLOGY AS TO DISPENSE WITH THE LABOR OF THINKING."
(SYSTEMATIC THEOLOGY- PREFACE, PAGE 9- CHARLES FINNEY)

If you name the name of Christ, you are a prime target of the deceivers (2 Tim. 4:1-4). There is only one way to avoid the cunning craftiness by which they lie in wait to deceive (Eph. 4:14). There is only one way for you not to be exploited by their covetous, deceptive words (2 Pet. 2:1-3). You are going to have to diligently apply yourself to become a believer skilled in the Word of God in order that no one deceives you! (2 Tim.2:15, Acts 17:11).

Secondly, I must also **MEDITATE** in the Word in order that I do not deceive myself. Meditation is for introspection of self. The process of meditation makes this edge of God's two-edged sword to be like a skilled surgeon's knife which often must wound in order to bring forth healing. Paul instructs the believer to be very introspective:

"EXAMINE AND TEST AND EVALUATE YOUR OWN SELVES, TO SEE WHETHER YOU ARE HOLDING TO YOUR FAITH AND SHOWING THE PROPER FRUITS OF IT. TEST AND PROVE YOURSELVES." 2 Cor. 13:5 Amp.

We all use mirrors every day to examine our physical appearance. God's Word is a mirror that examines our spiritual appearance. First, we meditate on the glorious image of Jesus (2 Cor. 3:18). Then, we must look at our own image (Jas.1:22-25). Careful, comparative meditation between the image of Jesus and that of our own selves, as followers of Christ, is the key to narrowing the obvious gap that exists between the two. Every believer is called to become conformed into the image of Jesus Christ (Rom. 8:29). Without meditative introspection, this cannot happen.

"FINALLY,
MY BRETHREN,
BE STRONG
IN THE LORD
AND IN THE POWER
OF HIS MIGHT.
PUT ON THE
WHOLE ARMOR
OF GOD,
THAT YOU
MAY BE ABLE TO STAND
AGAINST THE WILES
OF THE DEVIL...
THEREFORE
TAKE UP
THE WHOLE
ARMOR OF GOD,
THAT YOU
MAY BE ABLE
TO WITHSTAND
IN THE EVIL DAY,
AND HAVING
DONE ALL,
TO STAND.

THE ARMOR OF GOD



STAND
THEREFORE,
HAVING GIRDED YOUR
WAIST WITH TRUTH,
HAVING PUT ON THE
BREASTPLATE OF
RIGHTEOUSNESS,
AND HAVING SHOD YOUR
FEET WITH THE
PREPARATION OF THE
GOSPEL OF PEACE;
ABOVE ALL,
TAKING THE SHIELD OF
FAITH WITH WHICH YOU
WILL BE ABLE TO QUENCH
ALL THE FIERY DARTS OF
THE WICKED ONE.
AND TAKE THE HELMET
OF SALVATION,
AND THE SWORD OF
THE SPIRIT, WHICH IS
THE WORD OF GOD;
PRAYING ALWAYS WITH
ALL PRAYER AND
SUPPLICATION
IN THE SPIRIT,
BEING WATCHFUL TO THIS
END WITH ALL
PERSEVERANCE AND
SUPPLICATION FOR ALL
THE SAINTS."
Eph. 6:10-18

"...AND
PRAYING ALWAYS
WITH ALL
PRAYER
IN THE SPIRIT...
WITH ALL
PERSEVERANCE AND
SUPPLICATION
FOR ALL
THE SAINTS."

Eph. 6:18

Look carefully at this final piece of the armor of God on the opposite page. Notice the repetitious emphasis Paul uses of the word “**ALL**” in this verse: We are to pray with **ALL** prayer, with **ALL** perseverance, for **ALL** the saints.

So far in our brief look at the armor of God, we have seen a repetitious pattern taking place. Each piece of the armor of God is designed to counter a specific type of attack from the wicked one. We saw that Satan, in promoting **THE LIE**, requires the armor of **THE TRUTH** to counteract it. We saw that the last days will be marked by an increase in **LAWLESSNESS** which is to be counteracted by the armor of **RIGHTEOUSNESS**. We pondered the aspect of God’s armor of **PEACE** to sustain us in the midst of Satan’s relentless acts of **WAR** and turmoil. We learned that the shield of **FAITH** was God’s answer for an evil heart of **UNBELIEF**. Then we considered the helmet of **SALVATION** to counteract the danger of drawing a believer back to **PERDITION** (“eternal misery”). We looked at the **WORD OF GOD** to counteract the satanic barrage of **DECEPTION** that will mark the last days.

With this repetitious pattern , we can expect Satan to throw at us a multitude of hindrances to keep us from using the armor of **PRAYER**. Using a little humor to emphasize a serious subject, here it is:

Satan will throw anything and everything against us (including the kitchen sink) in order to keep us from effectively using the armor of **PRAYER**!

Instead of a single area of focus to stop God’s people from prayer, Satan will use a multi-faceted array of **HINDRANCES** against God’s people to stop them from effectively praying.



Under this last piece of the armor of God listed as **PRAYER**, we shall place, opposite to it, this wide-spread opposing category of Satan’s **MULTI-FACETED HINDRANCES** to prayer.

MULTI-FACETED HINDRANCES TO THE ARMOR OF PRAYER:



INEFFECTIVENESS

James 5:16

DISOBEDIENCE

1 John 3:22

DOUBLE-MINDEDNESS

James 1:8

LACKING IN FAITH

James 5:15

ASKING AMISS

James 4:3

DISHONORING

1 Peter 3:7

"THE EARNEST
(HEARTFELT,
CONTINUED)
PRAYER
OF A
RIGHTEOUS
MAN
MAKES
TREMENDOUS
POWER
AVAILABLE"
J.s. 5:16
Amp.



On the opposite page is an array of hindrances Satan seeks to invoke upon every believer of Christ in order to muddy the waters of their prayers. Prayer is powerful, and that is a serious problem for Satan. Listed are six ways in which Satan seeks to disqualify the prayers of the saints. We can only briefly consider them:

1. INEFFECTIVE PRAYER- “THE EFFECTIVE, FERVENT PRAYER OF A RIGHTEOUS MAN AVAILS MUCH.” Jas. 5:16-17

If effective prayer avails much, then ineffective prayer avails very little. Prayer is effective when it invokes the Name of Jesus by people authorized to use it (Phil. 2:10). It did nothing for the seven sons of Sceva (Acts 19:13-16). Prayer is effective only if its petitions are in alignment with God’s will (1 Jn. 5:14-15).

2. DISOBEDIENCE- “WHATEVER WE ASK WE RECEIVE FROM HIM BECAUSE WE KEEP HIS COMMANDMENTS AND DO THOSE THINGS THAT ARE PLEASING IN HIS SIGHT” 1 Jn. 3:22

Prayer answers to the tune of “trust and obey, there’s no other way.” Great prayers of faith are not enough. We must couple great faith with great obedience to move the heart of God. God warns, “Even though you make many prayers, I will not hear-your hands are full of blood” (Isa 1:15).

3. DOUBLE-MINDEDNESS- “LET NOT THAT MAN SUPPOSE THAT HE WILL RECEIVE ANYTHING FROM THE LORD; HE IS DOUBLE-MINDED MAN, UNSTABLE IN ALL HIS WAYS” (Jas. 1:8)

The apostle James states, “let your ‘Yes’ be ‘Yes,’ and your ‘No,’ ‘No,’ “ (Jas. 5:12). Paul exhorts, “Let each one be fully convinced in his own mind” (Rom. 14:5). You cannot express faith unless you are convinced what you are asking of God is right in His sight. The decisiveness of the Word of God cures double-mindedness.

4. LACKING IN FAITH - “AND THE PRAYER OF FAITH WILL SAVE THE SICK...” (Jas. 5:15)

Our prayers must be prayers of faith in God: “But without faith it is impossible to please Him, for he who comes to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of those who diligently seek Him” (Heb. 11:6).

5. ASKING AMISS- “YOU ASK AND DO NOT RECEIVE, BECAUSE YOU ASK AMISS...” (Jas. 4:3)

“Asking amiss” is like shooting an arrow at a target and missing the mark altogether. We must know where is the bull’s-eye of prayer. The bull’s-eye is praying always with all prayer, with all perseverance and supplication for all the saints (Eph. 6:18). It is about zeroing in on the need of others even above our own.

6. DISHONORING- “...GIVING HONOR TO THE WIFE...THAT YOUR PRAYERS MAY NOT BE HINDERED” (1 Pet. 3:7)

How effective do you think this tactic of Satan has been against God’s people? Men, we are soberly warned to take heed to our spirit, and let none deal treacherously with the wife of his youth (Mal. 2:14-15).

“A SERVANT OF THE LORD HAS WELL SAID: ‘PRAYER IS THE RAIL FOR GOD’S WORK. INDEED, PRAYER IS TO GOD’S WILL AS RAILS ARE TO A TRAIN. THE LOCOMOTIVE IS FULL OF POWER: IT IS CAPABLE OF RUNNING A THOUSAND MILES A DAY. BUT IF THERE ARE NO RAILS, IT CANNOT MOVE FORWARD A SINGLE INCH. IF IT DARES TO MOVE WITHOUT THEM, IT WILL SOON SINK INTO THE EARTH. IT MAY BE ABLE TO TRAVEL OVER GREAT DISTANCES, YET IT CANNOT GO TO ANY PLACE WHERE NO RAILS HAVE BEEN LAID. AND SUCH IS THE RELATION BETWEEN PRAYER AND GOD’S WORK. I DO NOT BELIEVE IT NECESSARY TO EXPLAIN IN DETAIL, FOR I TRUST EVERYONE CAN RECOGNIZE THE MEANING OF THIS PARABLE. WITHOUT ANY DOUBT GOD IS ALMIGHTY AND HE WORKS MIGHTILY, BUT HE WILL NOT AND CANNOT WORK IF YOU AND I DO NOT LABOR TOGETHER WITH HIM IN PRAYER...HIS CHILDREN HAVE NOT PRAYED SO AS TO PREPARE WAYS FOR HIM... DO EXAMINE YOURSELVES AS SEE IF IN THIS RESPECT YOU HAVE LIMITED HIM DAY AFTER DAY.”

from *Let Us Pray* by Watchman Nee

THE LORD'S PRAYER



Like 11:2-4

OUR FATHER
IN HEAVEN,

HALLOWED BE
YOUR NAME.

YOUR KINGDOM
COME

YOUR WILL
BE DONE ON EARTH
AS IT IS IN HEAVEN.

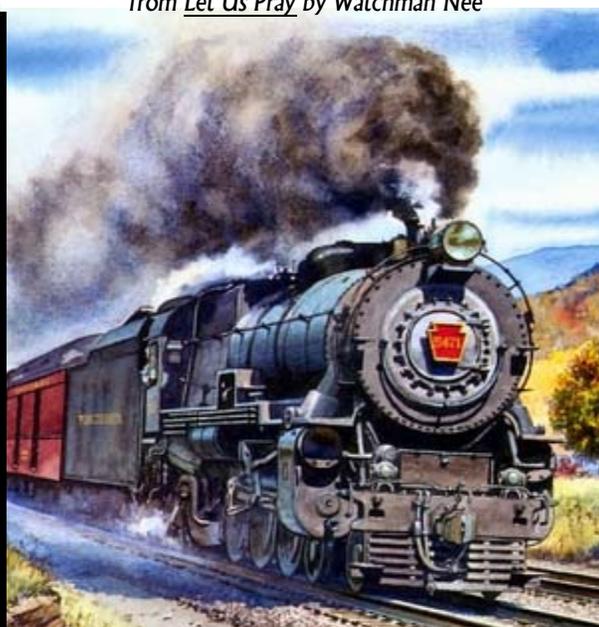
GIVE US
DAY BY DAY
OUR DAILY BREAD.

FORGIVE US
OUR SINS, FOR WE FORGIVE
EVERYONE WHO IS INDEBTED TO US.

LEAD US
NOT INTO TEMPTATION,

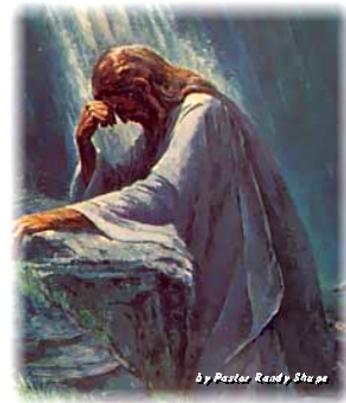
DELIVER US
FROM THE EVIL ONE.”

by Pastor Randy Shupe



John Chapter 17

“THE OTHER LORD'S PRAYER”



by Pastor Randy Shupe

We have barely scratched the surface of the subject of prayer. Understand this: Satan will be gleeful if we do not pray at all. Prayer is dependence upon God. Prayerlessness is independence from God. We can be so self-centered and self-sufficient that we see no need to pray at all. Pride causes us to reject any idea of being insufficient to handle whatever comes our way. In my youth, as a believer in Christ, I too felt "I can do all things!" Being quite gifted in many areas only increased my independence from calling upon God's help. However, failure became my best friend.

Today's brand of Christianity places more credence upon the **PROTEST** rally than the **PRAYER** rally. I once got into a radio debate with such an individual. When I diminished the value of having a protest rally before unbelievers and suggested praying as a better solution, he retorted, "Is that all we can do?" It is all God wants us to do. Remember when Peter was put in jail and was to be executed the next day? What delivered him from the sword, protest or prayer? :

"PETER WAS KEPT IN PRISON, BUT CONSTANT PRAYER WAS OFFERED TO GOD FOR HIM BY THE CHURCH." Acts 12:5-6

Perhaps you are not convinced of the power of prayer? Then ponder Watchman Nee's allegory of a train and it's need for rails to carry it, and you will come to see why God calls His people to pray. I will tell you that this very illustration transformed how I came to see the importance of prayer. Almighty God will not move without His people first praying. Prayer lays the rails upon which this all-powerful engine travels. I have displayed on the opposite page two in-depth series of DVD teachings I did on the subject of prayer. I highly recommend them to you. They can be purchased from my website (["PastorRandyShupe.com"](http://PastorRandyShupe.com)) In the first series, Jesus teaches His disciples the very mechanics of prayer. The Lord's prayer is not a prayer just to be memorized or to pray verbatim in times of trouble, but rather it contains a pattern given to God's people of how to pray effectively, how to make your blows count! Paul reminds us:

"THEREFORE I RUN THUS: NOT WITH UNCERTAINTY. THUS I FIGHT: NOT AS ONE WHO BEATS THE AIR." 1 Cor. 9:26

The second series I taught about prayer was, "The Other Lord's Prayer" (John 17). This teaching looked at how Jesus Himself prayed to His Father in heaven. It is a prayer that Jesus prayed for every one of His followers including you and me:

"I DO NOT PRAY FOR THESE ALONE, BUT ALSO FOR THOSE WHO WILL BELIEVE IN ME THROUGH THEIR WORD." Jn. 17:20

“PUT ON THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD...



TRUTH

RIGHTEOUSNESS

PEACE

FAITH

SALVATION

THE WORD

PRAYER

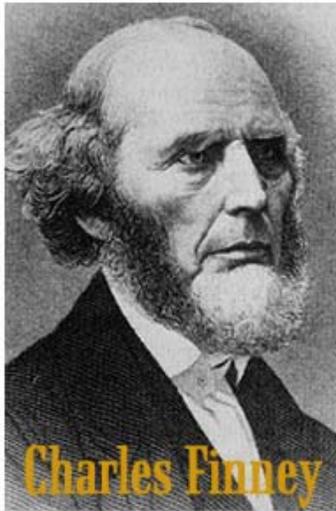
...AGAINST THE WILES OF THE DEVIL.” Eph. 6:11

**LYING
LAWLESSNESS
WAR
UNBELIEF
PERDITION
DECEPTION
HINDERANCES**



As I bring to a conclusion this chapter on the armor of God, I reflect on how William Gurnall's old classic work on this subject which I mentioned earlier ended up covering 1,200 pages. At times, I felt great difficulty to restrain myself to remain brief in covering the different aspects of the armor of God. My purpose has been more focused on stimulating your interest in this vast subject than spelling out all of its working mechanics. Leonard Ravenhill once told me not to spoon-feed God's people, not to cut up their spiritual meat into tiny little pieces so they could easily digest it, but rather to leave that task for the readers to accomplish for themselves.

Therefore I will close this chapter with Charles Finney's timeless exhortation to God's people:



**“LET NO ONE DESPAIR IN COMMENCING THIS BOOK,
NOR STUMBLE AT THE DEFINITIONS, THINKING HE CAN
NEVER UNDERSTAND SO ABSTRUSE A SUBJECT.
MY BROTHER, SISTER FRIEND-
READ, STUDY, THINK;
TO DEVELOP YOUR POWERS BY STUDY.
GOD DESIGNED THAT RELIGION SHOULD REQUIRE
THOUGHT, INTENSE THOUGHT,
AND SHOULD THOROUGHLY DEVELOP
OUR POWERS OF THOUGHT.
THE BIBLE ITSELF IS WRITTEN IN A STYLE SO CONDENSED
AS TO REQUIRE MUCH INTENSE STUDY.
MANY KNOW NOTHING OF THE BIBLE OR OF RELIGION,
BECAUSE THEY WILL NOT THINK AND STUDY.
I DO NOT PRETEND TO SO EXPLAIN THEOLOGY
AS TO DISPENSE WITH THE LABOR OF THINKING.”**

(SYSTEMATIC THEOLOGY- PREFACE, PAGE 9- CHARLES FINNEY)

CONCLUSION

**“AND I APPEAL TO YOU, BRETHREN, BEAR WITH THE WORD OF EXHORTATION,
FOR I HAVE WRITTEN TO YOU IN FEW WORDS.”**

Heb. 13:22

My closing words to you are taken directly from among my opening words in this book:

“The wrestling of the church with principalities, powers, rulers of the darkness of this age, and spiritual hosts of wickedness in heavenly places is not a battle for wresting the domination of the earth or earthly kingdoms from the control of Satan. It is rather a defensive battle in which the Christian resists being conformed into the image of all that is under the domination of Satan’s kingdom. The Christian is to know that what we now see is temporal. Therefore, he fights to hold dear to what is clearly set before him as God’s eternal purposes.

**“FOR BEHOLD, I CREATE NEW HEAVENS AND A NEW EARTH;
AND THE FORMER SHALL NOT BE REMEMBERED OR COME TO MIND.
BUT BE GLAD AND REJOICE FOREVER IN WHAT I CREATE...”**

Isa. 65:17-18

We talk about a place called Heaven as if it is to be our home for eternity. However wonderful Heaven might be in its present manifestation, it is not our eternal place. It, too, is a temporal place that will be replaced by the second creation of a new heaven and a new earth in which righteousness is going to dwell (2 Pet. 3:13). This is a place containing the things which God has prepared for those who love Him. It is a place eye has not seen, nor ear heard, nor have entered the heart of man (1 Cor. 2:9). It is my great suspicion that the new earth of God’s second creation will be the center of the new universe God is going to create.

This new earth will be the eternal dwelling place of God’s New Jerusalem and the habitation of The Bride of Christ, the Lamb’s Wife (Rev. 21:9-10). This is God’s ultimate reward for faithful service rendered in this present, nasty here and now. Thus the call to warfare is set before every believer. Christian: know that Satan is well aware of God’s plan to produce a Bride for His Son (Matt. 22:2). Therefore, know that his ultimate goal is to hinder as many as he can from becoming part of that glorious Bride” (2 Cor. 11:2-4). (end quote)



**“...TO THE INTENT THAT NOW THE MANIFOLD WISDOM OF GOD
MIGHT BE MADE KNOWN BY THE CHURCH
TO THE PRINCIPALITIES AND POWERS IN THE HEAVENLY PLACES,
ACCORDING TO THE ETERNAL PURPOSE
WHICH HE ACCOMPLISHED
IN CHRIST JESUS OUR LORD.”**

Eph. 3:10-11



**“...MY BRETHREN, BE STRONG IN THE LORD
AND IN THE POWER OF HIS MIGHT.
PUT ON THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD,
THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO STAND
AGAINST ALL THE WILES OF THE DEVIL.
FOR WE DO NOT WRESTLE
AGAINST FLESH AND BLOOD,
BUT AGAINST PRINCIPALITIES, AGAINST POWERS,
AGAINST THE RULERS OF THE DARKNESS OF THIS AGE,
AGAINST SPIRITUAL HOSTS OF WICKEDNESS
IN THE HEAVENLY PLACES.
THEREFORE TAKE UP THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD,
THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE
TO WITHSTAND IN THE EVIL DAY,
AND HAVING DONE ALL, TO STAND.”**

Eph. 6:10-13



ABOUT THE AUTHOR



Pastor Randy Lucette

Deeply impressed by the illustrated teachings of the late Clarence Larkin, and convinced that “a picture is worth a thousand words”, Pastor Shupe has combined his artistic talents with his God-given gift of revelational teaching.

The illustrations in his books represent some of the visual aids he prepares for the feeding of his flock.



“THE WAY, THE TRUTH AND THE LIFE TABERNALE” was founded in Pastor Shupe’s home in 1980 after serving as a lay-teacher in the Assemblies of God church for several years.

The church now resides in this building at
5690 Yukon Street,
in “Olde Town Arvada”, Colorado, 80002.

You may reach him by phone at 303-423-1325, or write to the address above.
His E-mail address is RandyShupe@Comcast.net
and his website location is www.PastorRandyShupe.com

**"PUT ON
THE
WHOLE ARMOR
OF GOD,
THAT YOU
MAY BE ABLE**

"WAR AGAINST THE SAINTS"

**TO STAND
AGAINST
THE WILES
OF THE
DEVIL..."**
Eph. 6:11

**"DO NOT LOVE
THE WORLD,
OR THE THINGS
IN THE WORLD...
FOR THE WORLD
IS PASSING AWAY..."**
1 Jn. 2:15



**"BELOVED,
I BEG YOU...
ABSTAIN FROM
FLESHLY LUSTS
WHICH WAR
AGAINST THE SOUL..."**
1 Pet. 2:11

War against the saints. A call from God to take a firm defensive stand against the total forces of darkness arrayed against the Christian. An all out assault by Satan against the believer on three levels of warfare: The world, the flesh and the devil. The enemy we face is the world ("present evil age") that Satan has created by his perversity, the flesh sin nature we received from him as our "father" through fallen Adam, and Satan himself, with a host of wicked fallen angels as principalities, powers, rulers of the darkness of this present age.

the **WAY, the TRUTH, the LIFE**
TABERNACLE



5690 YUKON ST. ARVADA CO. 80002

www.PastorRandyShupe.com